200 321 293 55

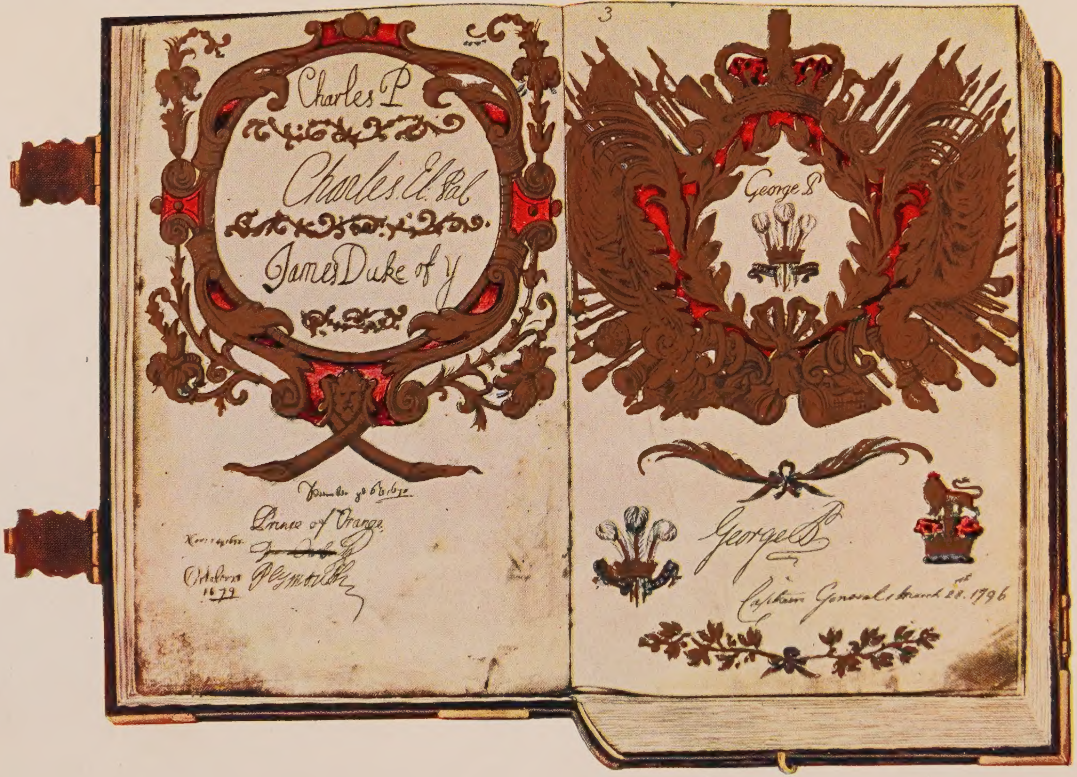
Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/honourableartill0000ggoo_a0g5

THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY

1537-1926

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY



Charles P

Charles El. Pal

James Duke of Y

Prince of Orange

October 1679 Plymouth

3

George P

George P

Captain General March 28th 1796

ROYAL SIGNATURES IN THE COMPANY'S OLD VELLUM BOOK

Charles, Prince of Wales (afterwards Charles II.); Charles, Elector of Palatine (grandson of James I.); James, Duke of York (afterwards James II.); The Prince of Orange (afterwards William III.); Charles FitzCharles, Earl of Plymouth (natural son of Charles II.); George, Prince of Wales (afterwards George II.); and George, Prince of Wales (afterwards George IV.).

THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY

1537-1926

by

G. GOOLD WALKER, D.S.O., M.C.
(MAJOR, RESERVE OF OFFICERS) SECRETARY OF THE COMPANY

With a Foreword by
THE EARL OF DENBIGH AND DESMOND, C.V.O., T.D.
(COLONEL-COMMANDANT, H.A.C.)

WITH FOUR ILLUSTRATIONS IN COLOUR AND
SEVENTY-FOUR IN BLACK AND WHITE

LONDON
JOHN LANE THE BODLEY HEAD LIMITED

~~CLASS No. 355.0942~~
~~CHARGE No. 41825~~

First Published in 1926

~~G 223~~

940.41242
M5231

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

Made and Printed in Great Britain by R. Clay & Sons, Ltd., Bungay, Suffolk.

FOREWORD

THE history of the Honourable Artillery Company is so bound up with the history of England in many of its most important periods that it makes very interesting reading. Since its reorganisation in 1889, when it was brought under War Office discipline, and since it became an integral portion of the Territorial Force, when this was evolved from the old Volunteers in 1907, the H.A.C. has made steady and continuous progress, and I hope I may be pardoned for being proud of my position as its commanding officer during the last thirty-three years. It received its baptism of fire in modern war through the artillery and infantry detachments which formed a part of the famous C.I.V. of the South African War. This gave a great impetus to the general zeal for military efficiency, and no commanding officer was ever better supported by his officers, N.C.O.'s and men than I have been.

In 1914, though some 400 below full strength, the regiment generally, both as regards the artillery and the infantry, was thoroughly efficient, and the esprit de corps of all ranks was, and always has been, remarkable. We had, of course, two great advantages over the ordinary territorial regiments. We are the fortunate possessors of a quite unique headquarters, which provide exceptional facilities both for military training and various sports, which constitute a great attraction. Then we have the great advantage of having all our commissioned officers obliged to pass through the ranks, and no N.C.O. is ever recommended for a commission until he thoroughly knows his work and has proved himself desirable as an officer in every way. What makes me so proud of the H.A.C. is the fact that they never "let you down," and one can always depend on them.

During the period of my command up to 1914 the Regiment was indeed well served by a succession of most capable adjutants, whose zeal, tact and professional knowledge were of the utmost value. We shall always remember with gratitude the work done by Capt. (now Brig.-Gen.) J. C. Wray, Capt. C. E. Budworth (Major-General at the close of the war and since deceased in India, to the sorrow of all), Capt. the Hon. George Stanley (now Col. and M.P.), and Capt. J. N. Sinclair, killed in France, 1918—all of the R.H.A. The efficiency of the Regiment in 1914 was greatly due to them.

On the outbreak of war old members rushed up in their hundreds to rejoin; others kept rolling in for months from distant parts of the world, where they had been employed in every sort of occupation and profession. I have often been told by regular officers that if, during the war, any man was required to carry out some particular or unusual duty for which special knowledge was required, such a one was generally procurable from the H.A.C. if a unit of the Regiment was in the vicinity. Fourteen thousand men went through our ranks in the war; over 4,000 members obtained commissions in other units, and now, wherever I go, I seem to be running up against H.A.C. members in every sort of unexpected locality and, on hearing my name, they come and make themselves known. It is like a widely dispersed family, all keenly imbued with family pride and family traditions. To my mind, the Corps ought to be taken out of the fighting organisation of the Territorial Army and made into an O.T.C., and I believe it is only financial considerations that prevent the authorities adopting this course. Many a man who would have made a splendid officer was killed or disabled in the early days of the war when serving in the ranks. At the same time such experience gained in the ranks is of inestimable value afterwards to an officer.

The Colonel commanding an Infantry Regiment in the same Brigade as the 1st Battalion H.A.C. told me one day how, in the heavy early fighting in France, he had lost nearly all his officers. He sent across to the O.C., H.A.C., and asked for fourteen officers, and forthwith that number was selected from the ranks of the H.A.C. and sent along. Next day, I was told, they were leading their platoons as if they had been commissioned for months.

It is of interest to note that, with a few exceptions, H.A.C. units, of which, after 1916, there were seven in the field, five batteries and two infantry battalions, were officered and commanded throughout the war by our own members. The exceptions were mainly the posting of the brave and popular young officer, Col. R. N. O'Connor of the Scottish Rifles, to the command of our 2nd Battalion in 1917, when Col. Lambert Ward was disabled by his fourth wound; the command of the Siege Battery given to a regular in 1918, when Major Edmondson and Major Knox had been successively disabled; and similar appointments later in the war in the case of two of the Horse Artillery Batteries.

Meanwhile we are exerting ourselves to maintain at full strength the two Horse Artillery Batteries and the Infantry. We are doing all we can to attract the best type of public schoolboy who may be coming into business in the City. Our headquarters are a comfortable club, and many City workers foregather there daily for lunch.

It is mainly for the members and their friends that Major Goold Walker, our most efficient and industrious secretary, with a special gift for antiquarian and historical research, has written this interesting history, which has involved several years of labour on his part. There is need for such a book, and I hope this one will have a large sale and cover an extensive field.

I cannot conclude these few lines without reference to that most interesting and remarkable visit which we paid to our "only child" in Boston, Mass., when I went there in command of a mixed detachment of 160 officers and other ranks. It was a return visit; the outcome of the great reception given to the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts—the "Boston Ancients"—founded by one of our members in 1637—when they visited London in 1896. Fifteen thousand of the State militia lined the streets and our five and a half miles progress from the docks to our hotels resembled a London Jubilee procession. Never shall I forget the wonderful enthusiasm of the crowds that cheered us.

I believe it was the first time since the American Revolution that a British force with its arms and colours had marched through an American city. I feel certain that our visit did much good, and it is my belief that, if England and America will pull together for the peace of the world, our fears for the future would be greatly alleviated.

DENBIGH.

INTRODUCTION

THIS is the story of a corps of citizen soldiers, the oldest regiment in England, probably the oldest in the world. Certainly no other active military unit in this country can boast a pedigree dating dack to the days when bows and bills still took pride of place as the standard weapons of English soldiers, and the primitive hand-gun was regarded with insular suspicion as a foreign innovation.

Famous for over a century before the formation of the senior regiments of our regular forces, the Honourable Artillery Company forms the only connecting link between the army of to-day and the civilian levies of mediæval England, whose prowess with their national weapon made them such formidable adversaries. Indeed, it is interesting to note the analogy between the old-time archer, with his peace-time training in the art of marksmanship, and the Territorial soldier of to-day. The ideal aimed at in both cases remains the same, the cultivation of a nation of marksmen as a defensive force.

The complete record of a regiment four centuries old cannot be set forth within the limits of one small volume, nor is it here attempted. But a need has undoubtedly arisen for a history of the Company in concise and readable form, and these requirements the author has endeavoured to meet in this outline of the principal events in a long and honourable story.

The author feels bound to acknowledge the invaluable assistance he has derived from the laborious researches of Colonel G. A. Raikes, who published his monumental history of the Company in 1879. To a narrative based on the above work a certain amount of illustrative detail has been added. Much of this has been extracted from the archives of the regiment, but some interesting facts and descriptive notes have been obtained from outside sources, evidently unknown to former regimental historians. In this connection mention should be made of an extremely interesting and valuable collection of press cuttings, extending over the past two hundred years, presented to the Company by Mr. Oscar Berry, C.C., the Honorary Auditor of the regiment.

G. G. W.

CONTENTS

CHAP. PAGE

I. The Origin of the Company 1

II. 1537 to 1601 12

III. 1602 to 1641 23

IV. 1642 to 1659 50

V. 1660 to 1701 76

VI. 1702 to 1726 108

VII. 1727 to 1759 137

VIII. 1760 to 1779 157

IX. 1780 to 1799 175

X. 1800 to 1836 204

XI. 1837 to 1880 223

XII. 1880 to 1926 249

Appendix A: Roll of Honour of the Honourable Artillery Company, 1914–1919 275

Appendix B: Roll of the Victoria Cross . . 293

Index 295

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

COLOUR

PAGE
Royal Signatures in the Vellum Book . . . *Frontispiece*
Review of the Company in 1803 . . . . . *facing* 1
H.A.C. Infantry, 1803 . . . . . . „ 200
H.A.C. Artillery, 1804 . . . . . . „ 222

BLACK AND WHITE

The Charter of 1537 3
Finsbury Fields in 1560–70 9
Archery Marks in Finsbury Fields, 1590 . . . *facing* 10
Wood Carving, St. George and the Dragon . . . „ 14
The Old Artillery Ground, 1560–70 16
Monument to Captain Martin Bond 19
Poem on the Foundation of the Armoury in 1622 . . 30, 31
Company of Pikemen (Drawn up in Files) 37
Half-moon of Pikemen Attacked by a Column 38
Archery in Finsbury Fields 40
Uniforms of the Company, *circa* 1635 . . . . *facing* 42
William Barriffe 46
Enrolment of Royal Princes in the Vellum Book . . *facing* 48
Major-General Phillip Skippon . . . . . „ 52
Minutes of the Court of Assistants, 1656 60
Suit of Armour, by Jacobe of Greenwich . . . *facing* 78
Grand Guard and Mezail of the Suit of Armour . . „ 80
Signatures of Prince Rupert, etc. 81
Signature of Duke of Monmouth 82
Signature of John Churchill, Duke of Marlborough . . . 82

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

PAGE

Signature of Christopher Wren 82

The Braganza Shield . . . . *facing* 84

A Finsbury Archer 87

The Artillery Ground in 1677 89

Signature of Samuel Pepys 91

Sir William Wood . . . . *facing* 92

Regimental Order of 1682 97

The Artillery Ground in 1682 . . . . . *facing* 100

Officer's Gorget of the Time of William III 103

Review by Queen Mary, 1692 . . . . . *facing* 104

A Regimental Purse, 1693 . . . . . . „ 106

Grenadier Caps, 1700 and 1714 . . . . . „ 118

Sergeant of the Artillery Company, 1726 125

Officer of the Artillery Company, 1726 129

Cricket as Played in the Artillery Ground . . . *facing* 146

A Parade of the Company, *circa* 1760 . . . . „ 154

The Victorious Return of the City Militia, etc. . . „ 162

The City Trained Bands Recruiting Sergeant, 1773 . . . 167

Recruiting for the Trained Bands, 1770 . . . . *facing* 168

Circular Soliciting Votes for Post of Armourer, 1777 . . . 173

The Riot in Broad Street, 1780 . . . . . *facing* 174

Regimental Badge, 1780 177

The Victorious Return of the City Militia (published 1779) . 187
(*Engraving after Rowlandson's original.*)

Caricature of an Officer, 1798 . . . . . *facing* 188

Major Sir Barnard Turner, M.P. . . . . . . „ 192

Balloon Ascent from the Artillery Ground, 1784 . . . „ 194

H.A.C. Infantry, 1798 . . . . „ 196

H.A.C. Artillery Belt Badge, 1799 202

H.A.C. Infantry Cross Belt Badge, 1799 202

Volunteer Corps of the City of London, 1799 . . . *facing* 202

King George III Reviewing the Volunteers, 1799 . . . „ 204

Panoramic View of the Review of 1799 . . . . „ 206

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

PAGE
Colonel Paul Le Mesurier, M.P. . . . . . *facing* 208
The H.A.C. at the Funeral of Lord Nelson, 1806 . . „ 212
Facsimile of a Target of 1824 213
Yager Company, H.A.C., at Target Practice, 1823 . . *facing* 214
Armorial Bearings of the Company (by Hollar) 216
A Regimental Shooting Medal, 1801 . . . . *facing* 216
The Duke of Sussex Reviewing the Company, 1828 . . „ 218
Ball Practice at Child's Hill, Hampstead, 1831 . . . „ 220
Caricature of an Officer of the Company, 1840 . . . 226
Yager Company, H.A.C., Firing Positions, 1843 . . . 231
Officer of the H.A.C., 1843 232
Private of the H.A.C., 1843 232
Officer and Private of the H.A.C., 1848 . . . . *facing* 232
Prince Consort Reviewing the Company, 1848 . . . „ 234
Review of the Company, 1852 . . . . . . „ 236
Uniforms of the Company, 1853–1855 . . . . . „ 238
Review of the Company, 1855 . . . . . . „ 240
H.A.C. Infantry, 1855 243
Horse Artillery, H.A.C., 1860 . . . . . *facing* 244
Review of Volunteers at Brighton, 1866 . . . . „ 246
Colonel-Commandant the Earl of Denbigh . . . „ 256
The A. & H.A.C. at Buckingham Palace, 1912 . . . „ 266

THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY

1537-1926

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

CHAPTER I

THE ORIGIN OF THE COMPANY

"THE Honourable the Artillery Company's Original is time out of mind." So wrote a worthy Clerk and Adjutant of the regiment when George I was King, and two hundred years have failed to produce evidence for any more definite statement of the origin of this ancient corps.

There is one date to which one can refer with absolute certainty. On August 25th, 1537, King Henry VIII granted a Charter of Incorporation to the Guild or Fraternity of Saint George, a Guild of Archers and Handgunmen which eventually became known as the Artillery Company. It is owing to the somewhat ambiguous wording of this Charter that we are left in doubt as to whether this Guild of Saint George had, or had not, an existence prior to the above date. In the preamble, the "trusty and welbiloved Servants and Subgiettes" to whom the warrant is addressed are referred to as Overseers of the Fraternity or Guild of Saint George, as if such a Guild was already in existence and was now receiving the honour of royal support. Further on in the document the same gentlemen are made Masters and Rulers of the said "Felliship of Artillary," and they, or their successors, are authorised to "begin, found and establish a certayne perpetuall Fraternitie of Saint George."

Obviously this latter clause may be read in two ways. Either the four Rulers are authorised to found an entirely new institution, in which case their titles of Overseers in the preamble are premature and confusing, or, on the other hand, it may have been intended that these four Overseers of an existing Guild of Saint George were to convert a hitherto unrecognised and unofficial body of archers into a *Perpetual*

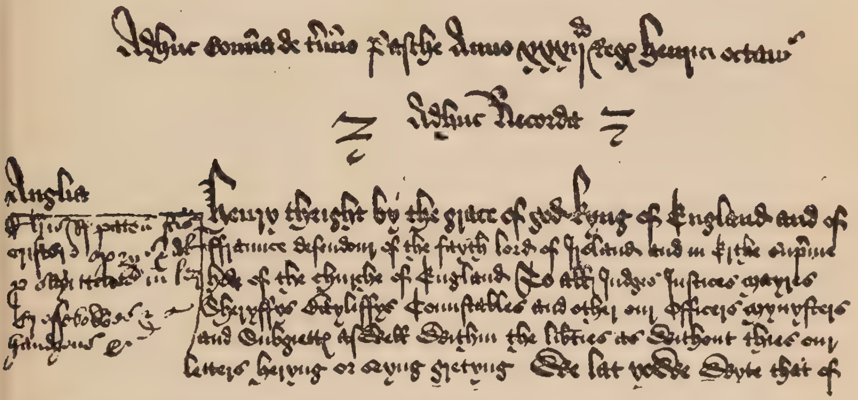
Fraternity, which was to be given official sanction, endowed with many privileges, and encouraged to admit members and to exercise in arms.

One shred of evidence on this important point is available. The King's Roll of Payments contains several entries between 1509 and 1515 of sums of 13*s.* 4*d.* "paid to the Fraternity of Saint George's Guild." Now Guilds of that name were not uncommon in England at that period, but, having regard to King Henry's well known love for archery, of which he was a first-class exponent, these records may well be taken to indicate royal support of a Guild of Archers and an interest which culminated later in the Grant of a Charter.

We must leave our readers to draw their own conclusions on this debatable point with the help of the copy of the Charter which is here appended:—

A Grant to the ffraternity or Guild of Artillery.

Henry th'Eight &c To all Judges Justics Maires Sheriffs Bailiffs Constables and other o^{r} Officers Ministres and Subgietts aswell w^{t} in the liberties as w^{t}out thies our Lres heryng or seyng Gretyng We late you witt that of o^{r} grace especiall certein science and mere mocion we Have graunted and licenced And by theis Pnts Doo graunte and licence for us & o^{r} heyres asmoche as in us is unto our trusty and welbiloved S^{r}vnnts & Subgietts S^{r} Cristofer Morres Knight Maister of o^{r} Ordenncs Anthony Knevett and Peter Mewtes Gentlemen of o^{r} Preve Chambre Overseers of the Fraternitie or Guylde of Saint George And that they and every of them shalbe Ov^{r}seers of the Science of Artillary that is to witt for Longe Bowes Crosbowes and Handgonnes &c whiche S^{r} Christofer Morres Cornelis Jhonson Anthony Antony and Henry Johnson that they and ev^{r}y of them shalbe Maisters and Rulers of the saide Science of Artillary as afore is rehersed for Longbowes Crosbowes and Handgonnes which S^{r} Christofer Cornelis Anthony and Henry We by thies Pnts Doo ordeigne make and conferme Foure Maisters and Rulers of the said Fellship of Artillary for and during their lyves and that the said Maisters and Rulers and their successo^{r}s Maisters and Rulers alwaies beinge foure of o^{r} S^{r}vnnts Englisshemen or Denisens maye begyn founde edifie make ordeigne gadre knytte and establisshe a certeyne Ppetuall Fraternitie of Saint George and that they maye have full pouer and auctoritie to chose accepte take and admitte into their said Fraternitie or Guylde all man^r honeste psons what so ev^r they be aswell being o^r S^rvnnts and Subgietts as Strangiers Denisens or not Denisens at their liberties And that the said Maisters and Rulers and suche brethern as they shall electe admitte take and accepte to them shall in thing and name be Oon Bodye and Cominaltie Corporate having succession Ppetually by the name of Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie of the Fraternitie or Guylde of Artillary of Longbowes Crosbowes and Handegonnes And



Henry theight by the grace of god kyng of England and of
Fraunce defendor of the feyth lord of Irland and in erthe supreme
hede of the churche of England To all Juges Justices mayres
Sheryffes baylyffes connstables and other our officers mynysters
and Subgiettes aswell within the libties as without theis our
letters heryng or seyng gretyng We lat yowe wyte that of

FACSIMILE (SLIGHTLY REDUCED) OF THE BEGINNING OF THE CHARTER OF 1537.

the same Four Maisters Rulers and Brethern and their successo^rs we incorporate and make Oon Bodye by theis Pnts and that the saide Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie and theyr successo^rs shall implede and be impleded by the name of Maisters and Rulers of the saide Bretherhed or Guylde And also shall have power and auctoritie to chose and electe among themselfs w^t their assistence Foure undre Maisters and Rulers of the same Fraternitie or Guylde to ov^rsee and governe the same Fraternitie from tyme to tyme and to have the gov^rnaunce and custodie of suche Lands Tents Rents Possessions Goodds and Catalls as hereaftre shall happen to be purchased bequethed given graunted or assigned by any man^r Pson or Psons to saide Fraternitie or Guylde and they ev^ry yere as it shall best pleas them shall mowe ordeigne and chose successively foure undre

Maisters and Rulers Englisshmen Strangiers Denisyns or not Denisens of good name and fame And they or any of them if nede require to amove put out and discharge and an other in his or their name and place as ofte as shall please them to name put in electe and auctorise by the Counsaill of the Foure Maisters and Rulers and their saide Assistence And furthermore that the same Maisters and Rulers maye have & use a Comon Seale for all things and necessaries belonging to the saide Fraternitie or Guylde And that they maye be of habilitie or capacitie in the Lawe to implede or be impleded aunswer and be aunswered before any Judge or Justice Spuall or temporall what so evʳ they be in any Coʳte or Courtes of this oʳ Realme And in all and singler Accions Demaunds Quarells Plees Sutes reall or Psonall like as all other oʳ Liegemen have habilitie and capacitie And furthermore the said Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie of the saide Fraternitie or Guylde amongs them selfs shall or maye have full auctoritie and power to make ordeigne and establisshe Lawes Ordynncs and Statutes for the good State Rule and Govʳnaunce of the saide Fraternitie or Guilde for thencrease and good cotinuance of the same and such Lawes Statuts and Ordynncs so made from tyme to tyme as ofte as by them shalbe thought necessary & convenient to chaunge and to transpose or kepe at their Pleas And to putt in use & execucon wᵗout hurte chalenge greve or Pturbaunce of us oʳ heyres or successoʳs Officers Ministres or subgietts or their heyres or successoʳs what so evʳ they be And furthermore that the said Maister and Rulers and their successoʳs for the tyme beinge have full power and auctoritie to purchase Lands and Tents and other hereditaments what so evʳ they be whiche be not holden of us in Capite To have and to holde to the saide Maisters Rulers and Cominaltie and their successoʳs the Statute of Mortemayne or other Statute or Statuts any other thinge passed to the cotrary notwᵗstanding And furthermore of oʳ habundaunt grace We have graunted given and licenced and by theis Pn̄ts Doo give graunte and licence unto oʳ forsaid welbiloved Sʳvnnts and to evʳy of them and to all and evʳy their successoʳs Maisters Rulers Cominaltie and Brethern of the saide Fraternitie or Guylde that for the tyme shalbe aswell being oʳ Sʳvnnts and Subgietts as also Strangiers being Denisens or not Denisens being of and in the saide Fraternitie or Guylde for the better encrease of the defence of this o^{r} Realme and Maynetennce of the Science & Feate of Shoting in Longbowes Crosbowes and Handgonnes that they and ev^{r}y of their successo^{r}s honest Psons of the saide Fraternitie or Guylde for their disporte and pastyme from tyme to tyme for ev^{r} hereaftre and Ppetually may use and exercise the shoting in their Longbowes Crosbowes and Handgonnes at all man^{r} Marks and Butts and at the Game of the Popinjaye and other Game or Games as at Fowle and Fowles as well in o^{r} Citie of London the suburbes of the same as in all other places whersoev^{r} it be wthin this o^{r} Realme of England Ireland Calice and o^{r} M^{r}ches of Walys and elleswher w^{t}in any of o^{r} Dominions Our Forrests Chaces and Pks w^{t}out o^{r} spiall warraunte and the Game of the Heyron and Fesaunt w^{t}in two miles of any of o^{r} Mano^{r}s Castelles or other places where we shall fortune to be or lye for the tyme only excepted and res^{r}ved And also that the saide Maisters and Rulers and Brethern and their successo^{r}s and ev^{r}y Pticuler Pson of them maye reteigne and kepe their saide Longbowes Crosbowes and Handgonnes in their Houses Chambers and other places and their S^{r}vnnts to bere the same Crosbowes and Handegonnes when and as often as it shall like them at their libertie for ev^{r} w^{t}out any damage daungier penaltie losse or forfaicture to ensue unto them or any of them for the same But nevertheles the saide S^{r}vnnts that so shall cary their Maisters Crosbowes or Handgonnes shall not by vertue of this o^{r} Licence shote in the saide Crosbowes and Handgonnes at no man^{r} of Fowle And in case be that any suche S^{r}vannt be taken shoting at any Fowle w^{t} any Crosbowe or Handgonne the said Offender so taken to forfaicte the penaltie acco^{r}dinge to the Acte (this Fraternitie or Licence notw^{t}stondinge) And also that non other then the Fraternitie or Guylde aforesaide shall w^{t}in any Pte of this o^{r} Realme or Dominion kepe any other Bretherhed or Guylde onles it be by licence of the forsaide Maisters and Rulers of the said Fraternitie or Guyld AND FURTHERMORE of o^{r} more ample grace by thies Pnts we doo licence the foresaid Maisters and Rulers & Cominaltie of the saide Fraternitie or Guilde or any pticuler Pson or Psons & ev^{r}y of them to use and weare any man^{r} Imbrowdery or any Cognisaunce of Sylv^{r} at his o^{r} their libertie in their Gownes Jacketts Coots and Dubletts and any man^{r} of Sylks as Velvet Satten and Damaske the coloʳs of Purple and Scarlett only excepted in their Gownes and Jacketts and all and singler Furres in their Gownes or elsewhere not above Furred of Martirnes[1] wᵗoute ronnying into any Manʳ daungier forfaycture losse or penaltie (any Acte of Apparell or any other Acte Pclamacon thing or matier in any wise hadd made or given or to be hadd made or given to the cotrary notwᵗstanding) And furthermore of oʳ further grace especiall we have licenced And by theis Pnts doo licence the forsaid Maisters and Rulers and their saide successoʳs for the tyme being that they nor any of them shall from hensforthe be empanelled or copelled to be upon any manʳ of Queste or Jury upon what matier soevʳ it be wᵗin oʳ Citie of London or other place wᵗin this oʳ Realme And ovʳ this we woll and Graunte for us oʳ heyres and succesoʳs to the saide Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie by theis Pnts that when and as often as the said Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie and their successors or any of them shall use pnounce and openly speke this usuall worde comenly used to be spoken before he or they shote, that is to say this worde Faste and aftre this worde spoken if it shall happen any Pson or Prsons by the Ovʳsight of any Pson or Psons ronnying passing or goyng bitwen any suche Shoter and the Marke or Place wherto any suche Maisters and Rulers and Cominaltie or any of them shall hereaftre shote to be kylled or otherwise hurte So the same be a usuall and a knowne Marke sett in a open place accustomed to be shote at that then any suche Maister Ruler and Brother what so evʳ shall happen not by that occasion be attached arrested imprisoned sued vexed troubled or otherwise inquieted nor shall not be impeched nor otherwise molested or troubled for the same nor shall not suffre deathe nor lose any membre or forfeicte any manʳ goods lands tents or hereditaments or any Goodds Cattells or other Proffitts for the same Any Acte Statute Proclamacion Pvision or any other Matier or thing in any wise hadd made given proclamed or provided or hereaftre to be hadd given made Pclamed or provided at any tyme to the cotrary notwᵗstonding. And furthermore we woll and Graunte that thies oʳ Lres Pattents shall passe undre oʳ Great Seale wᵗout fyne or fee greate or small in oʳ Chauncery to oʳ use oʳ to thuse of oʳ heyres or in the Hanaper of oʳ said Chauncery to be cotented or paide for the same. That expresse mention &c In Witnes &c Witness ourself at Westm^r the XXVth daye of August.

---

[1] Martens.

Per Bre de Privato Sígillo &c.

Though of actual evidence of the Company's existence prior to 1537 there is practically none, a strong presumption of this being the case may be admitted, especially having regard to the known existence in London of bands of archers and other military bodies of similar organisation for centuries before the date of our incorporation. It is noteworthy that Blackwell, writing in 1726, claims that the Artillery Company had "long before the use of Fire-arms been a Society," though he produces no evidence for his statement beyond a suggestion of records and books referring to ancient usage. Highmore, who wrote in 1804, makes no definite assertion, but offers an interesting conjecture as to our origin. After recording that the London Auxiliaries, "from whom in subsequent periods the Artillery Company took their rise," marched with King Alfred in the year 883 to dislodge the Danes from the town of Hertford, he adds: "In the time of William II London was infested with robbers of every description, who came forth in the evenings in gangs, and committed violent depredations; to protect both life and property against these ruffians, many of the better sort of citizens voluntarily associated themselves for the preservation of peace and good order, and the support of the civil power. The great similarity between that Association and the Company is too obvious to require the assertion of its remote antiquity."

If, then, we are to assume an earlier history, of which the authentic details have been lost in the mists of the Middle Ages, it may be of interest to glance at the scanty records of such assemblages of armed citizens as may well have included the forerunners of the Guild of Saint George.

As far back as the reign of the second Henry it was the custom of the younger citizens of London to meet together for the practice of arms, notably on Fridays in Lent, when tournaments on horseback and sham fights on the river took place.

This emulation of the sports of the ruling classes appears to have provoked the derision of the nobility, for we read that, in 1253, "certain of the Court, coming with a humour of contempt and scorn to behold their exercises and giving reproachful words to those Londoners, did suffer for their derision such stripes, and wounds, that the King (Henry III) caused the citizens to pay 1,000 marks for the healing,"—an early example of official discouragement applied to voluntary military training. Such arbitrary treatment could hardly have increased the King's popularity in the City, and eleven years later we find thousands of London men, headed by their own natural leaders, marching with Simon de Montfort to the battlefield of Lewes, where they were ridden down and cut to pieces by Prince Edward's mailed cavalry.

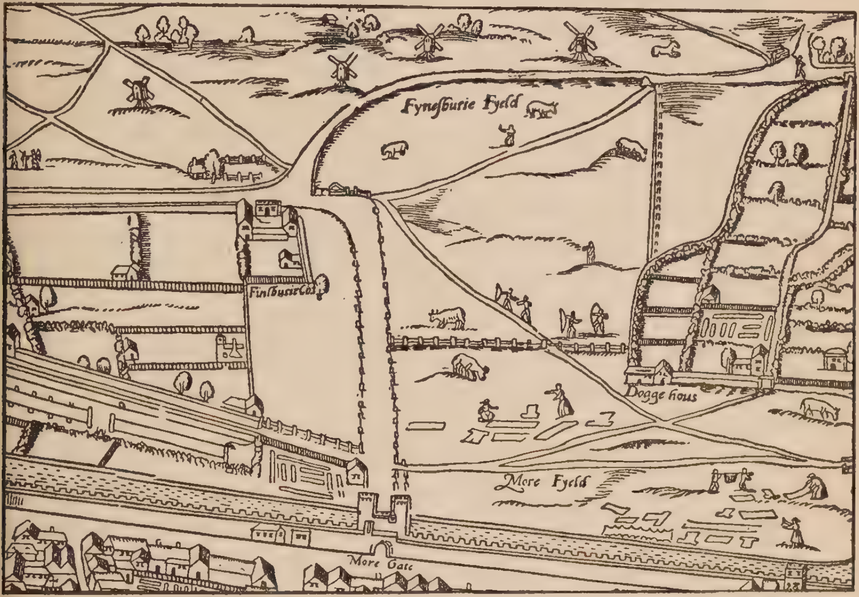
The same troubled reign saw the initiation of the famous "Marching Watch" in the City, a practice which was not finally discontinued until the time of Edward VI. The Watch consisted in its later days of a force of 2,000 well-armed men, clothed in white fustian, with the arms of the City on back and breast, which paraded the City streets on the vigils of St. John the Baptist and St. Peter,[1] bearing torches and enlivened by martial music. In 1510 Henry VIII paid a special visit to the City to see this "pompous march of the City Watch." On that occasion the Lord Mayor was attended by a Giant and two Pages on horseback, and the procession consisted of archers (honest persons with bows and arrows cleanly harnessed and arrayed in jackets of white with the arms of this City), pikemen, billmen, and halberdiers, with a body of Demi-Lances in bright armour. The pageant was lighted by no less than 940 cressets borne aloft on poles. Eventually the Watch was discontinued on the ground of expense.

In consideration of the gallant conduct of London auxiliaries at the siege of the Castle of Leeds, in Kent, Edward II granted a special Charter exempting the City troops from service outside the City boundaries, but his successors did not always respect the terms of this arrangement. It could hardly be expected that they should.

---

[1] The survival of the ancient pagan feast of Midsummer Eve.

A year before the Battle of Poictiers the City presented King Edward III with the princely gift of 25 men-at-arms and 500 archers, all habited in the same uniform. This century had seen the rise to fame of the English longbow as a military weapon, and, as open spaces were required for the training of town dwellers, Finsbury and Moorfields had become the chief resort of London archers. Edward I, by the Statute of Winchester, had made it compulsory for every male between the ages of fifteen and sixty to provide himself with arms according to his quality, and the bow became the standard weapon of Englishmen. The result of early and continuous training of the youth of the country in this weapon showed itself



Finsbury Fields, *circa* 1560–70.

From the map of Ralph Agas.

Showing the site of the present Artillery Ground

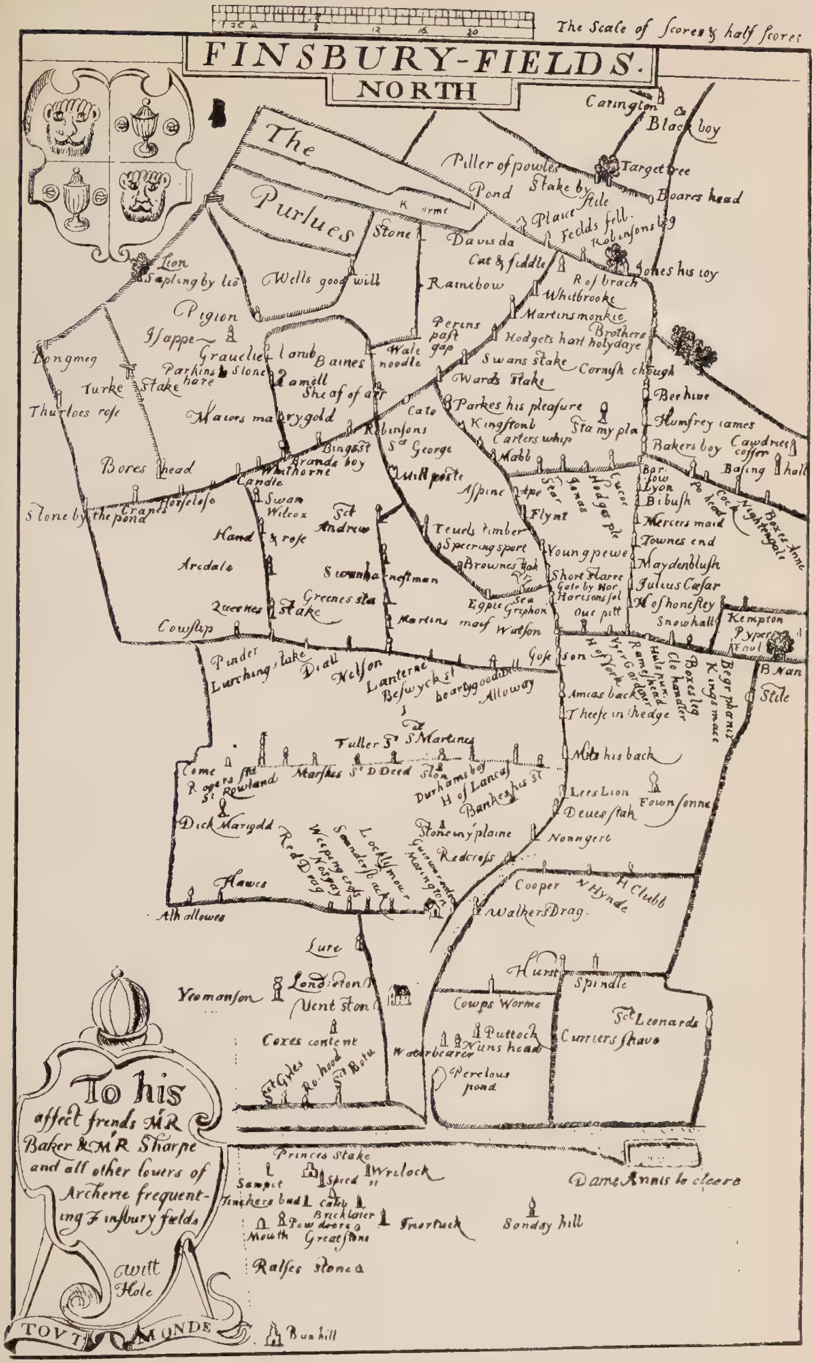
(*In the north-west corner of the map, between the haystack and the windmill*).

in the victories of Edward III against the French, which were almost entirely attributable to the excellence of our archery. Nevertheless it was found necessary, as early as 1363, to issue a proclamation in the City to the effect that all men strong in body should exercise the art of shooting in their leisure time and on holidays, and forbidding, under pain of imprisonment, the games of handball, football, bandyball, cambuch or cock-fighting, "or suchlike vain plays, which had no profit in them."

However averse they may have been to training in peace time, the men of London were not backward when the time came for action. It was in 1359 that the French raided the coast of Sussex and burned and plundered several towns. The citizens of London, in conjunction with the men of the southern ports, fitted out a fleet of 160 sail, embarked no less than 14,000 men, and, landing on the French coast, ravaged and burnt the country at pleasure.

Throughout the Wars of the Roses, London was predominantly Yorkist, and a body of London archers and billmen fought under Edward IV at Barnet.

In the time of Henry VII archery was on the decline and from 1487 onwards a number of Acts were passed for its encouragement, with apparently little success. An Act of 1512 ordered that the Statute of Winchester should be put into execution. Every man under sixty (except the clergy, justices and judges) had always to keep and use bow and arrows; every boy had to be instructed in archery from the age of seven; butts were to be kept in repair and used on holidays. A similar Act in 1514 sought to put a stop to tennis-play and bowls, "which only lead to murders and robberies." Many of the citizens of London, however, appear to have been keen archers and jealous of the ancient rights to their shooting grounds. We learn that, in 1498, the gardens and orchards to the north of Chiswell Street were levelled and turned once more into archery fields. Again, in 1514, when the villagers of Islington, Hoxton and Shoreditch not only enclosed portions of the shooting grounds, but made a practice



The Scale of scores & half scores
FINSBURY-FIELDS.
NORTH
The Purlues
Carington
Black boy
Piller of powles
Target tree
Pond
Stake by stile
Boares head
Place
Fealds fell.
Robinsons leg
Stone
Davis da
Cat & fiddle
Jones his toy
Lion
Sapling by leo
Wells good will
Rainebow
Ros brach
Whitbrooke
Pigion
Martins monkie
Perins past gap
Brothers holydaye
Hodgets hart
Jsappe
Graucliet
Lamb
Baines
Wale noodle
Swans stake
Cornysh chough
Longmeg
Parkins hare
Stone
Camell
Wards stake
Turke
Stake
Sheaf of arr
Beehive
Parkes his pleasure
Thurloes rose
Macors marrygold
Cato
Kingstonb
Carters whip
Sta my pla
Humfrey iames
Robinsons
Bakers boy
Cawdries coffer
St George
Mabb
Bingest
Brande boy
Whithorne
Basing
hall
Bores head
Candle
Millporte
Bar. low
Lyon
Po head
Bibush
Cock
Nightingale
Boxes Anne
Stone by the pond
Cranes
Horselose
Swan
Wilcox
Aspine
Ape
Star
Jonas
Hodge pl
Cucoe
Flynt
Mercers maid
St Andrew
Hand
& rose
Teuels timber
Townes end
Speering sport
Youngpewe
Aredale
Sowndhall
neftman
Brownes Bak
Short Harre
Gate by Nor
Horisons sol
Maydenblush
Julius Caesar
Greenes sta
Queenes
Stake
Egipt
Sea Griphon
Out pitt
H of honesty
Kempton
Martins maif
Watson
Snowhall
Cowslip
Pyper
Faul
Pinder
Lurching stake
Diall
Nelson
Lanterne
Beswyck st
beartygoodwill
Alloway
Gose
son
H of York
Vyr G
Gardner
Ramshead
Hale
Clo handler
Boxes leg
Kingsmace
Begrpanis
B Nan
Stile
Amias back
Theese in hedge
Tuller St
S Martines
Come
Rogers stt
St Rowland
Marshes
St D Deed
Slon
Durhams boy
H of Lancas
Bankeshis st
Mils his back
Lees Lion
Fownsonne
Deues stah
Dick Marigold
Red Drag
Weeping cross
Nosyes
Sounders back
Lockysmour
Gascoine
Morington
Stone my plaine
Redcross
Nonngere
Hawes
Cooper
Hynde
H Clubb
All allowes
Walkers Drag.
Lure
Hurst
Spindle
Yeomanson
Londonstone
Vent ston
Cowps Worme
St Leonards
Coxes content
Puttock
Nuns head
Curriers shave
Waterbearer
Perelous pond
St Gyles
Ro. hood
St Botu
To his affect frends MR Baker & MR Sharpe and all other louers of Archerie frequenting Finsbury fields
Witt Hole
TOVT MONDE
Princes stake
Sempet
Speed
Wrelock
Dame Annis le cleere
Tinkers bad
Callb
Bricklaier
Pewdores
Mouth
Greatstone
Frierfuck
Sonday hill
Ralfes stone
Bun hill

MAP SHOWING THE ANCIENT ARCHERY MARKS OF THE COMPANY IN FINSBURY FIELDS, CIRCA 1590

of forcibly seizing and destroying the bows and arrows of archers practising in their neighbourhood, something very like a riot took place. The Londoners were led by a tanner " clad in a Merry Andrew's coat," who ran up and down the city streets shouting " Spades and Shovels." The cry was understood. Citizens assembled to the number of several thousands and levelled every hedge and bank and ditch which encroached upon their archery fields.

The Wars of the Roses had seen the introduction of the handgun into England. The weapon which was to oust the English longbow was first used in this country in war by Burgundian mercenaries, but their slow and inaccurate fire excited only the derision of the English archers, and nothing further is heard of the handgun in England until 1515, when an Act of Henry VIII takes exception to its use against the King's deer, but allows such weapons to be kept for defence in all walled towns within seven miles of the sea.

We read of a meeting of archers in Finsbury Fields in 1520, and of a general muster of citizens (in white apparel, with caps and feathers of the same) in 1532. On this latter occasion the Lord Mayor was attended by " sixteen portly men, with long gilt Halberds." They mustered at Mile End and marched through the City to Westminster.

CHAPTER II

1537 TO 1601

THE suppression of the monasteries by Henry VIII had caused considerable unrest in various parts of the country, especially in the north, where a serious insurrection, known as the Pilgrimage of Grace, caused no little apprehension in Court circles. Eventually the rebellion was suppressed and the usual executions followed, but a general feeling of alarm and discontent prevailed. It was with the country in this unsettled condition that King Henry, who placed great reliance on the support of the City of London, set his seal to the Charter which incorporated for all time the Guild or Fraternity of St. George, for the better defence of the Realm by the maintenance of " the Science and Feate of Shootinge " with longbow, crossbow and handgun.

The King was not ill advised. It must be remembered that the London levies were at that time, with the possible exception of the King's personal bodyguard, the most efficient troops in the kingdom, and it is hardly surprising that the shrewd and soldierly monarch saw fit to bestow rights and privileges on a body of citizens which probably included, as was invariably the case in later days, the majority of the officers of the City forces, and which would, by its constitution, provide a training school for their successors.

At the time of the incorporation members of the Guild were presumably men of substance. This is evidenced by the privilege accorded them of wearing silk and velvet, furs and embroideries. They were, in all probability, recruited from the wealthier citizen class. Sir Christopher Morres, the first-mentioned of the four Masters and Rulers, was Master of the

Ordnance and a person of considerable standing at Court. His chief function was to visit and report upon the defences of castles, such as Berwick, Carlisle and Calais. He was "hurt on the Brest with a Handgon" at the siege of Boulogne in 1544. Anthony Knevett and Peter Mewtes, also mentioned in the Charter, were Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber to Henry VIII. Mewtes was afterwards Governor of Guernsey and was killed at the siege of Calais. Thus the Court was well represented among the leaders of the Guild, and we may be sure that all the honest persons, "subgiets and strangers, denizens or not denizens," who were admitted brethren of the Guild, were chosen as being "well affected to the King and Constitution of this Country," to use the phrase which survives to the present day in the oath administered to recruits on joining the Regiment.

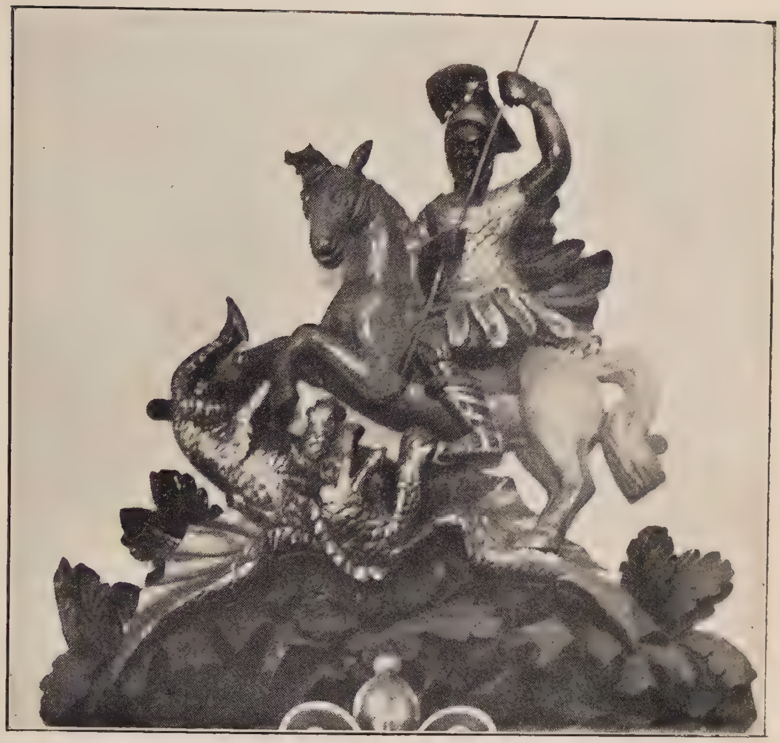
It is an irreparable loss to the Company and to military historians generally that no regimental records exist of these early times and that we have to be content with a rehearsal of casual episodes gleaned from other sources.

On the 8th of May, 1539, the citizens of London mustered in force at six o'clock in the morning in the fields from Whitechapel to Mile End and from Bethnal Green to Stepney. After being inspected to see that each man had a sword and dagger and that all were "clenely hosed and shodde" in white, 15,000 picked men entered the City at Aldgate and marched to Westminster, where they were reviewed by the King, and returned by way of St. James' Park, Holborn and Chepe. Thirteen pieces of cannon headed the procession, with the "gun-stones" (stone cannon-balls) in carts behind them. Then followed musketeers, bowmen, pikemen and billmen. As the musketeers passed the King they saluted him with volleys, and the great guns were drawn up and "shotte very terribly in divers places and especially before the King."

We read that the men of substance, who doubtless included the members of the Guild of St. George, "garnished their bassinets with turbes of silk set with brooches, onches and feathers." They also had their breastplates decorated with silver bullion and wore chains of gold about their necks. Some had their poleaxes gilded. The "meaner sorte" wore coats of white cotton with the arms of the City on back and front, and "such as were not meet to be archers were turned to pikes." Every man wore splint armour under his white surcoat and a steel "scull" beneath his cap. The Wyfflers, or marshalls, had feathers in their caps and chains about their necks, both they and the "Droumslades," or drumbeaters, being dressed in white, puffed out with crimson sarcenet. This review was intended to impress the ambassadors of certain foreign powers, having regard to rumoured schemes of invasion, and it had its effect.

A brief passage which possibly refers to this old Company occurs in a military work published by Humphrey Barwick in 1594. Speaking of himself he says: "And for that I entered to be a Souldier at the age of 18 yeeres, which was the second yeere of that good and godly King Edward the 6 (1548), at which time our English Archers were in force and greatly used, and Harquebuziers not as then common. For the first that ever had any whole band in England was Sir Peeter Mewtes, Knight, who had as I doo remember the charge of 500 halfe Hakes (hackbuts)." Sir Peter was the second Master or Ruler of the Guild of Saint George, the first body in England to receive official encouragement in the use of the handgun; it is therefore not beyond the bounds of probability that they were the 500 hackbutmen referred to above.

In 1554, Queen Mary issued a summons to the City for 100 "warlike men," of whom 40 at least were to be archers, to be ready to embark at Woolwich for Calais. The City Fathers unsuccessfully protested against this order as being contrary to the Franchise granted to the City "by Her Majesty's noble progenitors." Again, three years later, the Queen ordered the City to furnish 1,000 able men, well armed and weaponed, horsemen, pikemen, "hagbutters," and archers, "with Captaines meet for the ordinance and conducting of the



CURIOUS WOOD CARVING OF UNKNOWN AGE REPRESENTING ST. GEORGE AND THE DRAGON

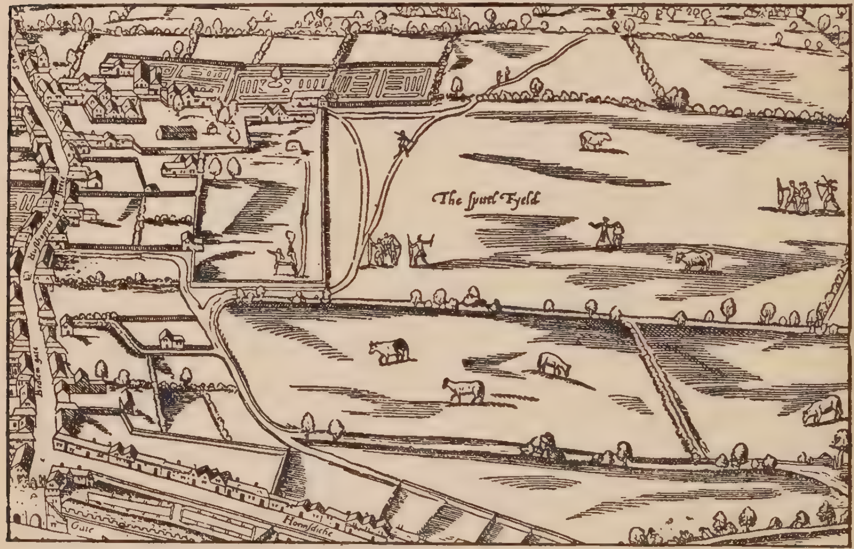
There is a tradition that this emblem, which is fixed in the wall above the President's Chair in the Court Room, was removed from the Old Armoury in Bishopsgate. If so, it possibly dates from the days of the Guild of St. George

WALTHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

same." Doubtless the Guild of St. George provided such Captains.

Archery meetings still appear to have been of frequent occurrence throughout this reign. The records of Guildhall contain an interesting "Proclamacon for Shootinge in Ffynnesburye Ffelde, by the Maier," dated 1557. After calling upon every true Englishman to support and uphold the "feate of Showtinge" to the best of his power, it laid down that "he who will come thither and take a longe bowe in his hand, and fairest draweth, clensiest delivreth and farthest of grounde shootithe, shall have for the best Game a Crowne of golde." The Crown was valued at 13*s.* 4*d.* We also learn that no person was allowed to stand within 20 yards of the marks and that a trumpet was blown between each shot as a warning. There was another gallant muster of the men of the City Companies at Greenwich in 1559, when 800 pikemen "in fair corselets," 400 hacquebuts in shirts of mail, and 200 halberdiers "in almanrinets" passed in battle array before Queen Mary and the French Ambassador. In 1578 all training in the City was suspended on account of the Plague, but was resumed by edict of the Privy Council in 1580.

From the period of the Charter onwards, the Guild of St. George had its headquarters in the Teasel Ground, or Old Artillery Garden, off Bishopsgate. This enclosure, which is supposed to have been the site of the old Roman "Campus Martius," had been leased in 1537 to the Fraternity of Artillery, or Gunners of the Tower, to be used by them for the practice of great and small artillery. These Gunners of the Tower, under the leadership of the Master Gunner of England, taught the science of gunnery, "levelling brass pieces of great Artillary against a Butt of earth." Their pupils had to take a solemn oath neither to serve any foreign prince, nor teach their art to any alien. It was here that gunners were trained for service with the fleet, and, in 1581, the Master Gunner petitioned Queen Elizabeth for authority to send deputies to the principal sea-port towns to train men in the knowledge and science of great ordnance. It is to this circumstance that we owe the prevalent tradition that members of the Company served as gunners with the fleet and so assisted directly in the defeat of the Spanish Armada. Unfortunately this was not the case. These men were trained by the Gunners of the Tower, while our Company at that time and for centuries afterwards concerned itself exclusively with "small artillery," namely, the longbow, crossbow, handgun or musket. We shall see later how the conflicting claims of the Gunners and the Artillery Company for the use of the Old Ground led to the removal of the Company to its present Headquarters in Finsbury.



The Old Artillery Garden from the map of Ralph Agas, *circa* 1560–70. *Note the two Members firing at a butt in the Garden, and the Archers practising in the adjoining fields.*

Archery was still a popular amusement as well as a department of military training. We hear of 3,000 London archers assembling at Hodgson's Field, in Shoreditch, in 1583. The archers wore green ribbons and sashes, and the victors in the competitions were led off the field mounted on horses and attended by 200 torchbearers. Popular opinion still favoured the longbow as compared with the new-fangled firearm, and with some reason, for, as late as the year 1549, in the reign of Edward VI, the arrows of the rebellious Norfolk peasantry under Ket the tanner had driven from the field the German hackbutmen sent against them, no doubt to the secret joy of all true Englishmen.

An interesting account survives of the funeral procession at the burial of Sir Philip Sidney in January, 1587. A contemporary manuscript, The Roll of Thomas Lant, not only describes the " Cyttizins of London Practised in Armes, about 300, who marched 3 by 3," but illustrates the actual funeral postures of the " muskiters," with rest and slow match trailing on the ground. The Captain marched first with a partisan, point to the ground. Then came the Lieutenant and three " targiters " (sword and target men), in pinked breeches. After them followed the " Muskiters 4 rancks, drums and fyfs, small shott 20 rancks, pykes 20 rancks, halberts 4 rancks," etc. The " small shott " were the caliver men, armed with a lighter piece than the heavy musket, which latter weapon required the use of a rest in firing.

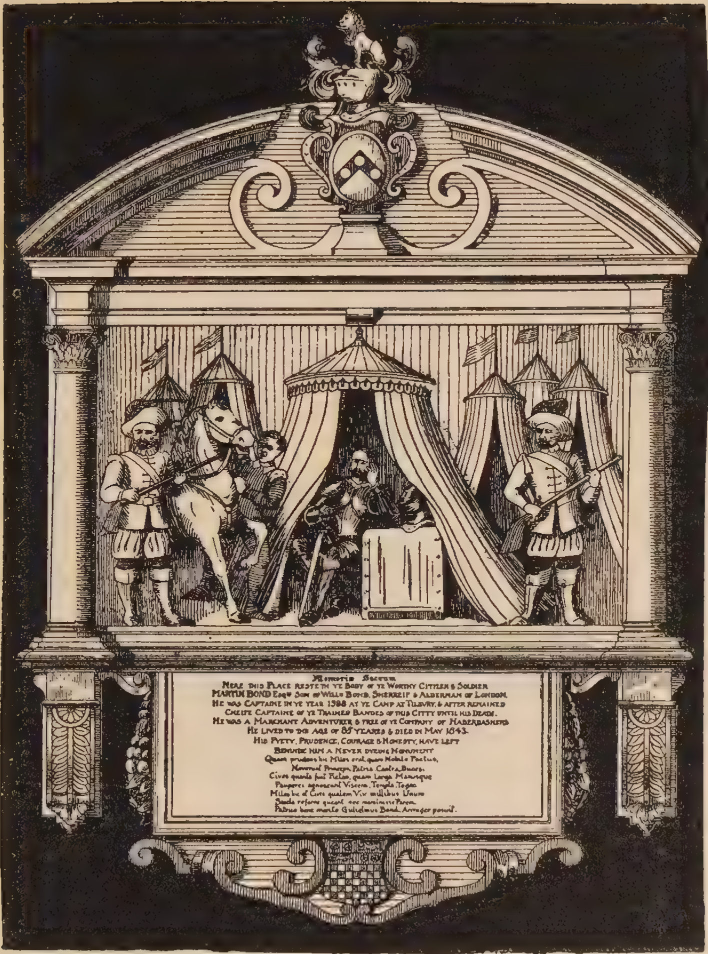
There can be no doubt that it is the Artillery Company which is here described. The name of " Guild of St. George " had been definitely dropped by that time, that of " Artillery Company " had not yet become official, and our members were invariably referred to by such titles as " The Society of Citizens of London practising Arms," " The Company exercising Arms in the Artillery Garden," and other similar titles. The number, 300, also tallies with other records relating to the Company, as we shall now proceed to prove.

John Stow, the great historian of London, writing in 1598, makes the following statement: " During the long reign of Elizabeth, the City having been greatly troubled, and charged with continual musters and trainings of soldiers, many gallant, active and forward citizens, who had had experience, both at home and abroad, voluntarily enrolled themselves in the (Artillery) Company in 1585, and trained up others for the wars, so that *within the space of two years* there were about *three* *hundred* merchants, and others of like quality, very sufficient and skilful, to train and teach common soldiers the management of their pieces, pikes and halberds; to march, countermarch and ring; who, for their perfecting in military affairs and discipline, met every Thursday in the year, practising all usual points of war, and each man, by turns, bare office, from the Corporal to the Captain." The coincidence of the numbers in that particular year (1587) should be sufficient to prove the identity of this body of "Cittyzens practising Armes" with the body of gallant, active and forward citizens referred to by a contemporary historian as forming the body which later became known as the Artillery Company.

And now we come to an important epoch in the early history of the Company—the year of the Great Armada.

Facts, again, are scanty. Stow has placed it on record that some of our members "in the dangerous year 1588, had charge of men in the great camp at Tilbury, and were generally called Captains of the Artillery Garden." Maitland, writing in 1739, states that divers citizens of London, members of the Artillery Company, were chosen from it, and, to their great honour, were appointed, by order of the Queen in Council, to the rank of officers in several parts of the kingdom, and that it was by their care and indefatigable application that the Trained Bands in most parts of the country were put into a good state for defence.

The camp at Tilbury was commanded by the Earl of Leicester, the Queen's favourite, who had with him John Norris, the most brilliant English soldier of his day, and other leaders experienced in war. In spite of this, the general conditions appear to have been chaotic, so much so that the veteran Norris wondered that he "could see no man in England afeard but himself." To one who was able to compare from personal knowledge our hastily raised levies with Parma's Spanish veterans, the situation must have appeared serious enough, but his feelings were not shared by his men. Stow records with evident pleasure how the English troops marched into camp "with cheerful counten-


Memoriæ Sacrum
Neare this Place resteth ye Body of ye Worthy Cittizen & Soldier
MARTIN BOND Esq. Son of Willm Bond, Sherreif & Alderman of London.
He was Captaine in ye yeare 1588 at ye Camp at Tilbury, & after remained
Cheife Captaine of ye Trained Bandes of this Citty until his Death.
He was a Marchant Adventurer & free of ye Company of Haberdashers
He lived to the age of 85 yeares & died in May 1643.
His Pyety, Prudence, Courage & Honesty, have left
Behinde him a Never dyeing Monument
Quam prudens hic Miles erat, quam Nobile Pectus,
Noverunt Procerum Patria Castra Ducum.
Cives quanta fuit Fides, quam Larga Manusque
Pauperes agnoscunt Viscera, Templa, Togae.
Miles hic et Civis qualem Vix millibus Unum
Saecla referre queant nec meminisse Parem.
Patruo bene merito Gulielmus Bond, Armiger posuit.

Monument in the Church of St. Helen's, Bishopsgate, to Captain Martin Bond, a "Captain of the Artillery Garden," who served at Tilbury Camp.

ances, courageous words and gestures, leaping and dancing." The Englishman's incurable optimism and self-confidence on the outbreak of war was evidently as strong in those days as it showed itself of late. It was possibly as well that Leicester's force was not called upon for action. Fortescue, in his admirable " History of the British Army," sums up the situation in one pithy sentence: " Ammunition was short, provisions were scanty, organisation was extremely defective, and the general confusion incredible."

The City of London had furnished no less than 10,000 men " for the defence of the City and the Queen's person." They were officered mainly by members of the Artillery Garden and were admittedly the best disciplined of all the Trained Bands. After all, the blame for faulty organisation and lack of supplies was none of theirs. Censure must rest where it is due, and the year 1588 provides a notable instance of the typical English lack of preparedness for war, aggravated by the well-known parsimony of Good Queen Bess in military matters. The hasty assemblage at Tilbury may have been sadly lacking from the point of view of military efficiency, but none can cast a sneer at those " forward citizens " who had prepared in time of peace to be the leaders of their fellow citizens when need should arise.

Little is known of those worthy members of the old Company who served at Tilbury. A list of officers of Trained Bands, with the strength of the various levies, survives, but as no regimental roll exists for that period, it is impossible to say whether all or most of these individuals were the Captains of the Artillery Garden, or not. But in the church of St. Helen's, Bishopsgate, there is a monument to one Sir Martin Bond, who was a " Captaine in ye yeere 1588 at ye Camp at Tilbury," and was afterwards President of the Company from 1616 to 1618.

After the defeat of the Spanish Armada the usual period of post-war slackness appears to have set in. It provided the occasion for the first Order in Council relating to the Company, which ran as follows:—

"At the Court at Whitehall, the 20th of Novemb^{r}, 1591.

PRESENT:

L. Treasorer
L. Admyrall
L. Chamberlaine
Mr. Treasorer
Mr. Vice Chamberlaine
Sir Robert Cecill
Mr. Wolley
Mr. Fortescue

"A lre to the L. Maio^{r} of London and his Brethren. Requyring them that whereas the Artillery Yarde belonginge to the Cittie beinge erected for the trayninge of yonge gent in London firste broughte in by M^{r} Capt^{n} Allen Lewis servante to the L. Chancellor hathe bin of late discontynued: that the same maie forthwith upon the receipte hereof be renewed beinge a matter verie requisete and necessarie for ye benefitte of the comon weale &c."

Training appears to have been renewed.

Four years later a further Order in Council pronounced the final doom of the longbow, which still formed the weapon of a proportion of the Trained Bands, and ordered all bows to be exchanged for muskets and calivers. This marks the practical disappearance of the longbow from the English army, though crossbows were used as late as 1627 during the disastrous expedition under Buckingham to the Isle of Rhée, and bodies of archers were actually raised for service during the Civil War.

A letter from the Lords in Council, dated October 31st, 1596, directed the City of London to provide 3,000 men, to be led by some of the principal gentlemen of the City, for the defence of the coasts of Kent and Essex against a threatened Spanish invasion. The Lord Mayor protested, on the ground that the citizens were very dissatisfied already at the lack of profit from their investment of £19,000 in the recent successful expedition to Cadiz. The Council replied to the effect that, as the chief city in the land and by far the wealthiest, London should raise 10,000 men, as they did in 1588, for the defence of the coast.

The Company of Citizens practising Arms in the Artillery Garden, as the old Guild of St. George was now generally styled, continued to thrive. Many of the nobility, the Lord Mayor, most of the Aldermen, and all the officers of the Trained Bands and Auxiliaries exercised arms with the Company, which consisted in 1598 of six hundred members. There is therefore little doubt that some of them saw foreign service for the first time when, in 1601, a Royal Warrant levied 500 men from the London Trained Bands for service in Ireland on account of the invasion of that country by a Spanish force. The expedition embarked at Bristol in January of that year, but of its adventures we know nothing. It probably formed part of the reinforcement of 2,000 men which enabled Sir George Carew to hold the town of Cork, and, later, to assist in the final defeat of the invaders. It is interesting to note that brightly coloured uniforms had been found unsuitable for the irregular warfare of Irish campaigns, so that troops for service in that country were equipped with cassocks and cloaks of "russet, motley, or sadd grene coller." A curious anticipation of protective colouring in uniform.

The London Trained Bands were also embodied for service in the City during the abortive rebellion of the Earl of Essex in the same year. A record exists that the City Captains and their officers received a gratuity of £200 for their services during that period.

CHAPTER III

1602 TO 1641

DURING the early years of the seventeenth century little or nothing remains to be recorded of the Company's existence. There was certainly a standstill in military activity; the Company may even have been temporarily dissolved. Even so, it was not for long. Stow mentions that, in the year 1610, one Philip Hudson, with Thomas Laverock, Robert Hughes, Samuel Artois, Robert Greenhurst and others, took active measures to revive the military exercises which had been neglected for years past. This statement is borne out by the Great Vellum Book still in the possession of the Regiment, which dates from the following year. The first page is headed " A Book of such Gentlemen as have been admitted into the Artillerie Garden, London, since ye 15th of Aug. 1611 "; the first name enrolled is that of Philip Hudson, and the names of the remaining four mentioned by Stow all occur on the first page.

Maitland states that " all danger from the Spanish fleet having passed away, the laudable practice of instructing the citizens in the Art Military was discontinued till the year 1610, when it was revived and with it the ancient appellation of the Artillery Company." Now we have no record as to when the designation of " Guild of St. George " gave place to the loosely applied titles of " Citizens of London practising Arms " or " Captains of the Artillery Garden "; neither is there any proof of when this alleged " ancient appellation of the Artillery Company " came into use. It is noteworthy that this title is not used in the Old Vellum Book, which, though the Roll is dated from 1611, was not " drawne forth " till 1635. Moreover, the actual words " Artillery Company " do not appear in any of the Royal Warrants or Orders in Council, or in any other writings as applied to the Company, until 1656.

Some of the interesting variations in nomenclature applied to the Company in its earlier days are here appended :—

Date.	Authority.	Designation.
1537.	Royal Charter	"Fraternitie or Guylde of St. George."
1587.	Roll of Thos. Lant	"Cyttizens of London practised in Armes."
1588.	John Stow	"Captaines of the Artillery Garden."
1612.	Order in Council	"Companie of Cittizens of the Military Yarde."
1613.	Court of Aldermen	"Societie practising Armes in the Artillery Garden."
1616.	Order in Council	"Society of Armes, Cittizens of London." "Society in Martiall Exercises."
1616.	Court of Aldermen	"Societie of Cittizens of London practizinge Armes and military discipline."
1616.	Richard Niccols	"London's Artillery." "London's Hopefull Infantrie."
1622.	Order in Council	"Divers Cittizens of London exercising Armes in the Teasel Ground, or Artillery Garden."
1629.	John Bingham	"Martiall Company exercising Arms in the Artillery Ground."
1631.	Order in Council	"Companie of the Artillery Yarde."
1632.	Royal Warrant	"Voluntary Company of the Artillery Garden."
1634.	Order in Council	"Companie of the Artillery Garden."
1634.	Secretary of State	"Military Company of the City of London."
1639.	William Bariffe	"Gentlemen of the Artillery Garden."
1647.	William Bariffe	"Ancient and Worthy Society exercising Armes in the Artillery Garden."
1656.	Regimental Records	"Artillery Company."
1668.	George Elton	"Ancient and Honorable Artillery-Company of London."

A perusal of these somewhat cumbrous designations, of which there are many more slight variations, would appear to indicate that the Company possessed no fixed official title for a period of over eighty years. But there is reason to believe that the Company had been popularly known as "The Artillery Company" for some time prior to 1616. Richard Niccols, writing in that year, gives his work the title of "London's Artillery, briefly containing the noble practise of that worthy Society." It is dedicated to "The Right Worshipfull Favourers of Arts and Followers of Armes, the Captaines of the late Musters and to the rest of the Societie of London's hopefull Infantrie." In the preface Niccols apologises for the use of the title "London's Artillery," on the ground that "it is an impropriety of speech, not communicable to those of this praise worthie Societie," and explains that he is constrained to impose this term upon them "both because by the ignorant vulgar they are generally so called, and the French word Infantrie would be scarce intelligible to any common Reader." We may therefore consider it a matter for certainty that the designation "Artillery Company" was originally the popular rendering of the high-sounding titles then in use, and that the name bestowed on our regiment by the "ignorant vulgar" outlived all others and was adopted officially on the revival of the Company after the Civil War.

Of course, the word Artillery in the Company's title had no primary connection with guns or gunnery. It is used entirely in its original sense, meaning archery; *vide* I Samuel xx. 40. "And Jonathan gave his artillery unto his lad, and said unto him, Go, carry them to the city." The word came to be used of all "weapons of volley," such as crossbows and muskets. Bariffe's training manual, the first edition of which appeared in 1635, is called "Military Discipline, or The Young Artilleryman," but is entirely concerned with the exercising of infantry soldiers armed with musket and pike. Our Company did not train its members as gunners until 1781, and there is no doubt that, had "the French word Infantrie" arrived in our language a little earlier, our regiment would be known to this day as the Honourable Infantry Company.

Having enrolled about seventy members in 1611, the Company in the following year made formal application to the Privy Council for permission to exercise Arms and practise Military Discipline in the Artillery Garden. Their Lordships, finding the objects of the Society commendable and worthy, and having information that the petitioners generally were men of good means and otherwise well affected, "saw noe inconvenience but that said Companie of Citizens may trayne and practize Armes," but limited their numbers to 250. A weekly exercise "after the modern and best fashion and instruction" was instituted, and the numbers of the Company increased rapidly. Each new member had to be a citizen of London and approved by the Lord Mayor, who had also a final voice in the choice of officers. Captain Edward Panton was appointed Leader, and, in the following year the Court of Aldermen elected Richard Morris as Captain of the Company, and Philip Hudson as Lieutenant. This Court not only selected the officers of the Company, but paid the Leader his salary of £40 a year and gave a " free gift " of twenty marks each per annum to the Captain and Lieutenant, " for their care and pains taken with the Society."

In December, 1612, the Company applied for the use of Armourers' Hall for their feasts and assemblies. This was granted at a yearly rental of £3 *6s.* *8d.*, the Company providing their own brass, pewter, spits, linen and plate.

By 1614 the numbers of the Company had increased to such an extent that there was a waiting list of " divers of the better sort of citizens of the best means and quality." The Privy Council was thereupon approached and gave its sanction to an increase of the establishment to 500, providing that none were admitted but such as were known to be of good means, well affected in religion and to His Majesty, and approved by the Court of Aldermen, who were also directed to establish good rules for the government of the Company. We have it on the authority of Stow that the Company was now grown great and in good estimation. Not only Prince Charles, but also many country gentlemen of all shires resorted to the Artillery Garden and diligently observed their exercises, which they saw were excellent; and, returning home to their own counties, practised and used the same with their trained bands. This statement is borne out by entries in the Roll of members such as " William Lemmon, High Sheer[1] of Herefordsheere," " Thomas Skriven, Deputie Leiftennant for Salopp and Herreford and Collonell of a Regiment in the same Counties," etc.

We read in Strype's revision (1720) of Stow's Survey of London that " In the year 1614, there was a great Muster of the

[1] Sheriff.

City, the King having appointed after Harvest a general muster all *England* over; which every Shire performed with much cheerfulness. Then did the Citizens also shew themselves very forward, as well in making new Provisions of Ammunition, as in practising all Points of War and Military Discipline; and, for the well Managing of this Muster, the Lord-Mayor and Commonalty appointed twenty Captains to be selected of the most active and able Citizens; and unto every of them he allotted 300 Shot and Pikes, *viz*, 6000 in all for that Time, being for the most part Householders, bravely furnished—These twenty Captains performed all Things with such Expedition, Bounty and Bravery, as, except in the year 88, the like was never before; and such of them as were not formerly of the Martial Society, and Practice of the Artillery Garden, were then admitted."

This extract appears to refer to the fact that the Privy Council ordered a general muster of the Forces of the City in November, 1614, and laid down that all trained men who had served in the late reign were to be formed into companies, and any vacancies completed from householders and responsible persons. These orders having been presumably carried out, great musters were held on August 8th and September 27th in the following year. We are indebted to Richard Niccols, an accomplished writer and minor poet of the period, for a picturesque description of what must have been, on each occasion, a very martial sight. At the first muster 26 wards were represented, each "foot-band" marching under its own banner. The soldiers, "decked in bright arms," were "both for service and shew, well and rightly appointed, imitating the old Romans in their garnish of feathers," which is stated, on the authority of Machiavelli's *Art of War*, to provide at once a sight "brave and terrible to the enemie, as it is goodly and delightful to friends." A magnificent sham fight took place, troop charging troop, the "strong pikes shaking with eagar ire," and the "wings of shot" delivering such thunderous volleys that men lost themselves in the smoke thereof, while scared spectators fled or lay grovelling on the ground in terror at the noise, which was heard as far as Waltham Abbey.

The review of September 27th was attended by Prince Charles, who is referred to in the poem as " that Diamond spark of royaltie, that bud of hope, Prince of great Brittannie." As the troops marched past, the masses of steel-tipped pikes waved like a cornfield, in which scarlet plumes showed up like poppies; the Captains " shone in rich gold "; and the " red, streaming crosses " of Saint George blazed above the smoke of the vollies " like bloody comets through a sable cloud." The proceedings terminated with " chearful shouts " in honour of the Prince, who sat his horse " with martiall staffe upon his princely thigh." Apart from his appreciation of the goodly scene, Niccols has his criticisms to offer. He says—" In their demeanour I noted these two defects, ignorance of order, and neglect of their Captaine's command " and concludes that, on the whole, the troops were " more rash and turbulent, than discreet and well advised, and less instructed and trained than well furnished and appointed."

In 1616, the Privy Council ordered that the City Bands should be reorganised in four regiments of five companies each, with the Lord Mayor as their General. This was done and the regiments were known as the East, West, North and South Regiments respectively. A list of their officers survives, and the name of every one of them can be traced in our regimental roll as a member of the Company at the time. From this date onwards the Trained Bands appear to have been mustered for training at least once a year, as well as on special occasions.

A dispute arose about this time between the members of the Society and their Leader, Captain Panton. This gentleman appears to have been a military adventurer of more than doubtful reputation. Eventually he acquired a fortune by gambling and purchased property on which he built Panton Street and Square, near the Haymarket. In consequence of complaints by members, Captain Panton was suspended by the Court of Aldermen, and, after lengthy bickering and an appeal to the Privy Council, was replaced by Captain John Bingham, who, at a Court of Aldermen held in March, 1618, was chosen Leader of " the Military Company exercising Arms in the Artillery Garden " by the vote of the

13 Captains of the City. Bingham, a veteran soldier of the Dutch wars, had to be made a freeman of the City to comply with the regulations of membership and was admitted into the Company of Ironmongers. The same Court of Aldermen issued the following order:—"This Court doth specially devise that no man shall be admitted to that Company (of the Artillery Garden) who by reason of his abilitye and qualitye is not well fitted for the same."

While this internal dispute was in progress, a serious conflict arose between the Society and the Master-Gunner, one William Hamon or Hammond, concerning the right to use the Old Artillery Ground. Hammond had endeavoured to exclude the citizens from their old training ground and had forbidden their servants to "repayre to their Armoury to cleere, make cleane, and amend their Armes there," contrary to ancient usage and to the terms of the lease. Complaint was made to the Court of Aldermen, who forthwith presented a petition to the Privy Council. Their Lordships called the Master-Gunner before them, dismissed as frivolous his claim to a rent or other consideration from the Company, and ordered him not only to allow "the said Society in Martial Exercises" the full use of the ground but to do his uttermost to aid and assist them. In spite of this order Hammond continued his obstructive tactics and a further petition was put forward to the Council, who, after personal investigation, ordered that the ground be restored to the public use for the exercise of arms and artillery as it had formerly been employed. This was in 1620. Within two years we find the same obstinate Master-Gunner encroaching on the Company's exercise ground by enclosing certain cabbage gardens and thereby "restraining them from the use of a Butt with a Marke erected in the said ground and very usefull in their Exercise." The Company protested against this and at the same time sought authority to erect a new Armoury of brick and stone in the Ground, their original building being decayed and ready to fall down. The Council confirmed their former orders in respect to the use of the Ground and sanctioned the building of an Armoury "in such manner as may be Least subject to Surprize."

The foundation of the Armory of that remarkable Nurcery of military Diſcipline, called the Artillery Garden London, *was* begun to be erected the firſt day of May, *An. Dom.* 1622. and was finiſhed the laſt day of November then next following, Colonell *Hugh Hammerſley* being then Preſident, *Edward Pierce* Treaſurer, *Henry Petowe* Marſhall, and *Iohn Bingham* Eſquire, Captaine, and one of the Councell of warre for this Kingdome.

Upon which Monument theſe Lines following were compoſed.

Londons Honour, and her Citizens approved Love, exerciſing Armes in the Artillery Garden *London*.

The Fabricke.

THis Architecture, Phœnix of our age,
(All Europe cannot ſhew her Equipage)
Is Mars *his Miſtreſſe, which retaines the ſtore*
Of Mars *his Armes, being* Mars *his Paramore,*
This Fabricke was by Mars *his Souldiers fram'd,*
And Mars *his Armory's this Building nam'd.*

The Souldiers Honuor.

It holds five hundred Armes to furniſh thoſe,
That love their Soveraigne, and will daunt His foes,
They ſpend their time, and doe not ſpare for coſt,
To learne the uſe of Armes, there's nothing loſt;
Both time and coyne to doe their Country good,
They'l ſpend it freely, and will loſe their blood.

The Aldermans Love.

Our City London is a Royall thing,
For it is call'd the Chamber of our King;
Whoſe worthy Senate we muſt not forget,
Their Grant and our Requeſt together met,
They cherriſh us, and wee doe honour them;
Where Souldiers finde true love, they'll love agen.

The Ground.

The Ground whereon this building now doth ſtand,
The Teaſell ground hath heretofore beene nam'd.

The Donor of the ground.

And William, *Pryor of the Hoſpitall,*
Then of our bleſſed Lady, which wee call,
Saint Mary *Spittle without Biſhopſgate,*
Did paſſe it by Indenture, bearing date,
Ianuaries third day, in Henry's *time,*
The eighth of that name, the Covent did conjoyne,

The Vſe.

Unto the Guile of all Artillery,
Croſſe-bowes, Hand-guns, and of Archery,

The terme of yeeres.

For full three hundred yeeres excepting three,
The time remaining wee ſhall never ſee.

The Councels confirmation.

Now have the Noble Councell of our King,
Confirm'd the ſame, and under Charles *his wing,*
We now doe exerciſe, and of that little
Teaſell ground, we inlarg'd Saint Mary *Spittle,*
Trees we cut down, and Gardens added to it,
Thankes to the Lords that gave us leave to doe it.

A loyall Subjects deſire.

Long may this worke endure, and ne'r decay,
But be ſupported till the lateſt day.
All loyall Subjects to the King and State,
Will ſay Amen, mauger Spleene or Hate.

Mariſcallus Petowe compoſuit.

On May 1st, 1622, the foundations of the new Armoury were commenced, and it was completed by November in the following year at a cost of £1,000, an immense sum in those days. Henry Petowe, a member who had joined the Company in 1610, celebrated the occasion in a poem, an original printed copy of which is still in the possession of the Regiment. Stow relates that this Armoury was furnished with 500 sets of arms of extraordinary beauty, which were ultimately lost in the Civil War.

The membership of the Company had gradually fallen from 500 in 1615 to little over 200 in 1620. This diminution had caused the expenses of upkeep, powder and shot, etc., (£250 per annum) to weigh very heavily upon the remaining members, who therefore asked the Court of Aldermen for assistance. The Court, " being desirous to encourage such a commendable exercise to be performed within this City by freemen thereof," voted an annual grant of 100 marks " for their better encouragement in that worthie exercise." This was not the only financial support received from the Corporation. On May 9th, 1620, the Chamberlain of London was ordered to pay the President of the Society £10 17*s.* 4*d.* for provisions sent into the fields on the 26th April, when the " Artillery-men " mustered there, and for wine sent to the Stewards for the supper at Merchant Taylors' Hall. For many years a grant of £10 was allowed by the Corporation towards the cost of the Company's annual feast; and the following entry occurs in the Minutes of the Court of Aldermen for April 30th, 1622:—" For as much as this Court is advertised that the Society practisinge Armes in the Artillery Garden doe at their owne charge make an extraordinary Feast on this day senenight and have invited to the same the Lord Mayor and divers Aldermen. This Court in token of their good respect to that Society have thought fitt to bestowe on them against that Feast One hogshead of Clarrett wyne: Thirty Gallons of Sacke and thirty Gallons of Rhenishe wyne." This admirable practice was kept up for many years and was not finally discontinued until 1669.

The Company's troubles respecting the use of their training ground were not yet over. Master-Gunner John Reynolds, the successor of Hammond, petitioned the King on behalf of the officers of Ordnance, the "feed-gunners," and the scholars who were being trained to serve the Crown as "Canonyers." His complaint was to the effect that the citizens of London, having obtained leave to exercise a Company of Pikes and Muskets in the Artillery Garden and to build an Armoury there, had not only presumed to pull down a store-house and a proof-house, both of very ancient and necessary use, but had used threatening language to the scholars and committed other "insulteries and misdemeanours." Both parties appeared before the Privy Council and stated their respective cases. The Council once more approved the "forwardness of the said Cittizens in those so Warlike and Commendable practises" and ordered that they should have the sole use of the ground on Mondays and Tuesdays, on which days a servant of the Company should keep the door. Reynolds refusing to conform to this order, the Council confirmed their decision a month later and we hear no more of the matter. The Company, however, had already made application to the Corporation for a ground of their own.

No sooner had this bickering come to an end than some internal dissension appears to have arisen. Certain officers, who had not been successful at the annual election of civil chiefs and office-bearers, complained to the Privy Council of the "disorderly and mutinous caryages" of sundry persons in the Artillery Yarde," particularly in refusing the Captain chosen by the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen. The Council asked for a report by the Lord Mayor on the various alleged misdemeanours (including an enquiry as to which member had called Sir Hugh Hamersley, the ex-President, a "base fellow"), at the same time requesting His Lordship to inflict such punishments, by imprisonment or otherwise, as would result in "ye repressing and beating downe of the lyke insolencies and disorders in tyme to come." The Mayoral report attributed most of the blame for the trouble to the slackness and neglect of the Court of Aldermen. Correspondence on the subject accumulated and finally reached King Charles, who apparently took the part of the mutineers, as he caused the following letter to be addressed to the Company:—

"Charles R.

"Trustie and wellbeloved we greet you well. Whereas we are informed that the worthie and commendable institution of yo^r^ voluntary Company of the Artillerie Garden, hath been soe well pursued by yo^r^ industrious and forward endeavours that you are not only become ready and skilfull in the knowledge and use of Armes and military discipline, but that from thence, as from a fruitfull Nursery, all the trayned bands of our Cittie of London, and divers of the Companyes of the counties adjoyning have beene supplyed w^th^ fitt and able Leaders and Officers, whereby our Service hath received much Advantage, and the kingdome in generall a very great benefitt. And being unwilling that a Societie of soe good use to the publique, and of soe much safetie and honor to our renowned Citie of London should be dissolved or discontinued, as we are given to understand it is in great danger through some distractions which you have lately suffered about the Election of your Captaine. We have thought fitt hereby to will you not be hastie to disband, but if ye find that ye are molested needlessly or unjustly by any there, have recourse to us and you shall find such due encouragement as soe comendable a Societie deserves. Given att our Court at Newmarkett, the Eight day of March, in the Seaventh yeare of our Raigne.

"To our trustie and wellbeloved Humfrie Smith, Ald^r^ president of the Company exercisinge Armes in the Artillerie Garden, London, and to the Rest of the Companie."

His Majesty's well-meant effort appears to have displeased the Lords of the Privy Council. The whole matter was reopened and stoutly debated on both sides. In the end it was resolved that the King himself should appoint the Captain of the Company, the election of the President and other officers being left to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, subject to His Majesty's approval, and with a reservation that the members of the Company should appoint the Treasurer. Instructions were also issued for the framing of Rules and Orders for the government of the Company. Accordingly the Court of Aldermen met on March 12th, 1633, and, with the advice of the previously appointed President, elected officers for the government of the Company. These consisted of a Deputy-President, twenty-two Assistants, two Lieutenants, and two Ensigns. They also appointed four Surveyors of Arms, four Sergeants, four Drummers and a Fife, an Armourer, a Gunsmith, a Clerk and a Beadle. This date marks the origin of the present constitution of the civil side of the Company. The new regulations were modified in the following year by an Order in Council which laid down that the King should appoint the Captain of the Company and the Lord Mayor and Aldermen the President, while the members of the Company should elect all other officers, and, "setting asyde all differences, speedily returne unto their accustomed exercise of Armes." Thus happily ended a dispute which at one time seemed likely to lead to the dissolution of the Company.

Throughout the reigns of James I and his successor the Artillery Garden was the recognised school of instruction for officers of the nearest approach to a standing army of the day—the Trained Bands of London and the Counties. Colonel William Bariffe, a member of the Company and a recognised expert in military training, writes in 1645:—

> "The Grecians had their *Tactick* Masters, the Romans their *Tribunes;* and we our *Academies* and *Military Schooles* of *warre;* witnesse our ARTILLERY GARDEN, with the Military and Martiall grounds, wherein the *choice* and *best-affected Citizens* (and Gentry) are practised and taught the *Rudiments* of our *Militia.* In times of *peace* so fitting them, that they may be able to *stand* in the day of *battell*, to *God's glory*, their *owne honours*, and their *countrie's good.*"

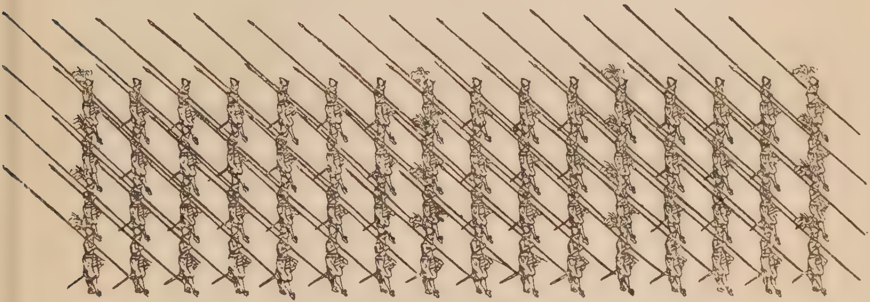
His statement is confirmed by Lieut.-Col. Richard Elton, a member of the rival Company of the Military Garden in Westminster, in his book "The Compleat Body of the Art Military (very delightful and profitable for all Noble and Heroick

Spirits)," written four years later. A passage in this work runs as follows :—

> " The great delight in handling of *Arms* in *Military* Exercises, makes the City of LONDON and the Surburbs thereof famous through the whole World, by reason, as I conceive, of those two great *Nurseries* or *Academies* of MILITARY DISCIPLINE, the ARTILLERY and MILITARY GARDENS, from whom, as out of pure *Fountains*, all other our *Private Meetings* (as of *Townditch*, and *Cripplegate*, &c.) are derived.
>
> " The *Artillery Garden* deserves the first place, in respect it is the greatest meeting, from whence, as it were out of a *Nursery* have been transplanted many able knowing souldiers both at home and in foreign Countries to the great honour of our Nation. . . . . My hearty wishes therefore that all and every one of them may be propt up, and supported to all ages, that when need shall require, we may draw from these *fountains* such skilfull and experienced Commanders, and Officers as may be, as it were, a *Bulwark* to this our Nation."

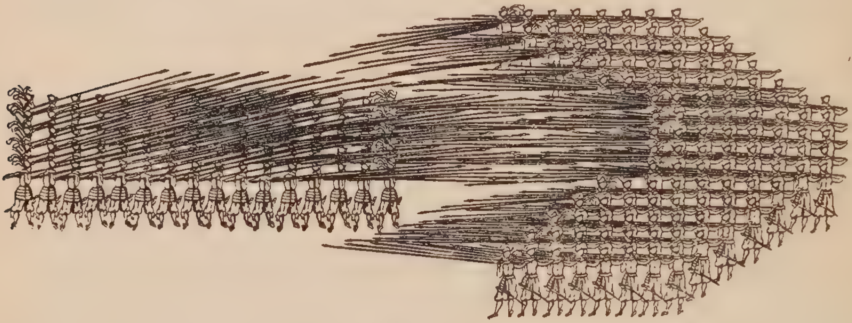
A second edition was published ten years later and dedicated to Richard Cromwell, Lord Protector; and a third saw the light in 1668, this last being dedicated to the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, and the rest of the Court of Assistants of the Ancient and Honourable Artillery Company of London.

The art of war, which had been passing through a period of transition, was now becoming stabilised, and in all European countries the pike and musket had superseded all other infantry weapons. Formation, drill and other details varied with the different nations, but the theory remained the same. Each regiment of foot consisted of a phalanx of heavily armed pikemen, ranged in ranks six, eight, ten or even sixteen deep, for hand to hand fighting and defence against cavalry, with two bodies of musketeers, or " wings of shot." These latter were generally drawn up in equal numbers on either flank of the pikes and provided the missile action. The pikeman wore as defensive armour a breastplate and tasses (thigh guards), backplate, and morion. His weapons were a pike, varying in length from twelve to eighteen or even twenty-one feet, and a sword. The latter was for use if the enemy broke into the ranks, when of course a long pike was merely an encumbrance. The musketeer was clad in a leather jerkin and wore sometimes a steel morion, sometimes a cloth hat. He was armed with the long, heavy musket, which required a rest to prop it up when taking aim. A length of slow match was carried in the hand, the lighted ends between the fingers, and a spare coil was wound round the waist beneath the buff coat. Powder cartridges were suspended from a bandolier worn over the left shoulder,—sometimes as many as eighteen charges were carried. The bullets were normally carried in a little bag slung to the bandolier, but when in action a supply was kept in the mouth. A pruning iron was carried for use when the bullets did not fit the bore and fine powder for pruning was carried in a small horn slung to the side. A sword was worn for hand to hand fighting, but English soldiers usually preferred to use the butt in a mêlée.



A Company of Pikemen drawn up in files sixteen deep.
From a Drill Book written by a Member of the Company in 1629.

The drill for pikemen consisted of a number of "postures" or manual exercises, and a complicated system of "doublings" and "countermarches," the main object of which was to enable any threatened point to be strengthened and to bring the best men to the front for attack or defence. With this purpose in view, the personnel of each file was carefully drawn up in order of precedence, the best men being placed in the front rank as “file-leaders,” the next best in the rear, as “bringers-up,” and the least brave or efficient where they would invariably find themselves in the centre of the body, whatever formation was ordered. In action against infantry the pikes were “charged,” *i.e.*, presented horizontally towards the enemy at the level of the shoulder, while the rear ranks “ported” their pikes in readiness to step into the places of men who fell in the front ranks. For defence against cavalry the pikemen, standing shoulder to shoulder in serried ranks, set the butt end of their pikes against the inside of the right foot, and, lunging forward with the pike in the left hand, presented a hedge of spear-points to the enemy. At the same time swords were drawn in case the enemy effected an entrance.



A Half-moon of Pikemen Attacked by a Column.
From a Drill Book written by a Member of the Company in 1629.

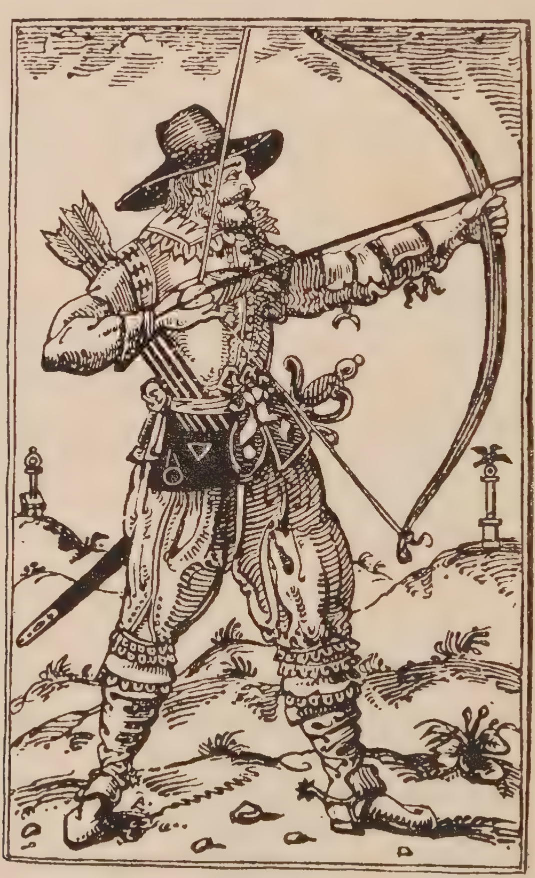
The drill with the musket was still more elaborate. To load and fire, thirty-three distinct orders were necessary, each order requiring several distinct motions on the part of the soldier. Here are two examples :—

Order.	Motions.
“Charge with Bullet.”	1. Take the bullet out of your mouths. 2. Slip up your hands by the barrel of your muskets and put in your bullets. 3. Clap your hands on your muskets to shake them down.
“Shorten your Scowring Sticks” (Ramrods).	1. Turn the screw-ends towards your bodies. 2. Set the ends under your left paps. 3. Shorten your sticks to an handful.

The musketeers, like the pikemen, were drawn up in ranks six to twelve deep. In giving fire to the front the usual method was for the front rank to fire and then retreat between the files to the rear. The second rank took their places, fired and followed suit, and so on till all had fired. By the time the original front rank had resumed its first position, the men had had time to reload their pieces. This plan was capable of infinite variation. When attacked, the musketeers would take refuge behind or among the pikes, and this fact probably led to the adoption of the practice of mingling muskets and pikes to meet a charge, which became eventually the standard method.

One device for obtaining increased fire power was for the front rank to kneel, the second to stoop, and the third to stand upright, all three delivering " a violent, speedy and thunderous discharge " at the word of command.

Although the bow had now been almost entirely supplanted by the musket as a military weapon, the practice of archery by civilians was still encouraged. Thorough inbred conservatism was probably the main reason, but there was quite a body of opinion of the older school which held that the bow in skilful hands was still equal, if not superior, to the clumsy matchlock, with its frequent misfires and varying accuracy. It was urged that an archer could loose six arrows in the time taken by a musketeer to load and fire his piece. Then, again, the cost of the new weapon, with its powder and match, placed it beyond the reach of many individual citizens, and the intricate drill necessary in loading and firing did not tend to make marksmanship with firearms the popular national pastime that archery had been. Thus we find, in 1625, a serious attempt to bring about the use of a weapon consisting of a bow and pike combined, invented by William Nead, an archer. A description of this device states that it had been in use by the Society of the Artillery Garden for over a year. At the King's express desire, a demonstration of the new invention was given by three hundred members of the Company in St. James' Park and was attended by the King in person, the Council of State and the Council of War. The question was then referred to the latter body and steps were taken to bring about the general exercise of the new weapon, but, though it was definitely ordered to be practised by the Trained Bands, we hear nothing further of the device. It seems, however, that archery was still considered by those in authority to be of some military value, for, as late as 1632, Royal Letters Patent were issued for the maintenance of archery and artillery. These orders were addressed to a number of gentlemen, among them



Archery in Finsbury Fields.

Note the archery marks in the distance and the archer drawing to the nipple of the right breast.

many officers of the Company, and directions were given that the ground in the vicinity of the ancient archery marks outside the City of London was to be kept open to archers and all enclosures cleared away.

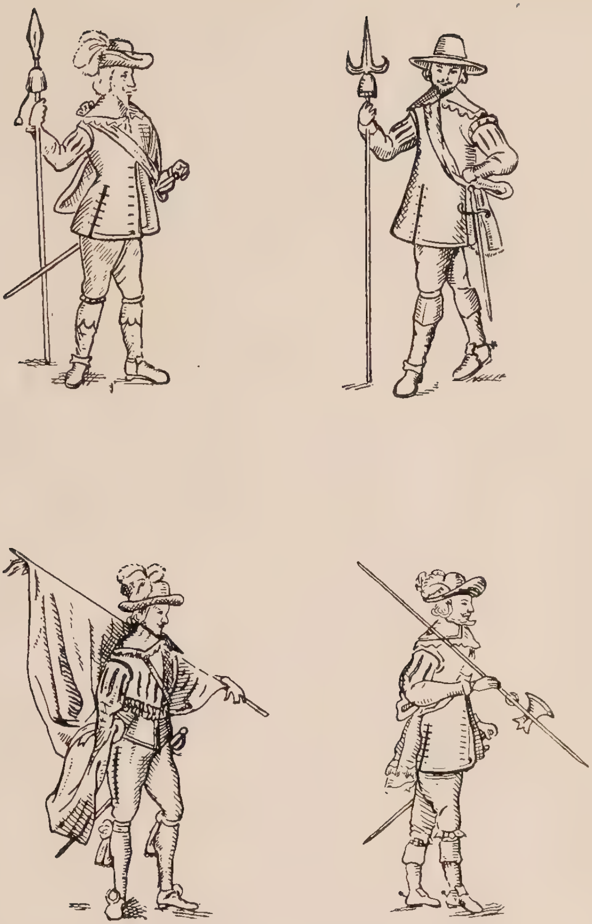
The system of military training inaugurated in London by the members of the Company led the citizens of other towns to follow their example. In 1621 the Bailiffs and Aldermen of Colchester presented a petition to the Privy Council to the effect that, stimulated by the most worthy example of London in her Artillery Yard, they desired permission to establish a similar organisation for the service of their country. Their request was acceded to, and a similar application by the Aldermen of Bury St. Edmunds was granted in the following year. Bristol followed suit in 1625, North Yarmouth in 1626, and Chester, Ipswich and Nottingham within the next few years. The citizens of Westminster also established a " Military Yard " in 1635, and certain gentlemen founded a " Martial Yard " at Horsey Down, Southwark, about the same time.

All these institutions have unhappily failed to survive, but there is one offshot of the old Company which still flourishes. Originally The Military Company of the Massachusetts, it is now known as The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston, Massachusetts, the oldest military body in the New World.

No regular military force had accompanied the early settlers in New England, so that each scattered community found itself dependent from the first upon its own powers of defence from the surrounding savage and treacherous Red Indian tribes. Voluntary military associations were therefore formed on the model of the English Trained Bands and by 1636 seven of these bodies were in existence,—the " train-bands " of Dorchester, Charlestown, Watertown, Newton, Saugus, Ipswich and Boston, —each company having selected as its leaders the most experienced soldiers, " noble instances of sublime piety and martial accomplishments, equally qualified to adorn the church by their exemplary virtue and defend it by their valour." It was found, however, that the isolated situations of the townships and the lack of opportunity for the teaching of discipline and tactics rendered necessary the formation of a central school of military training. Some of the early planters, including several officers of the trained bands, had been members of the Artillery Company of London, and these, with other leading citizens, founded a new military association on the lines of their old Company. This was in 1637. The new Company addressed a petition to Governor Winthrop asking for a charter of incorporation, but their request did not at first meet with approval. Winthrop wrote afterwards :—" Divers gentlemen and others being joined in a military company, desired to be made a corporation, but the council considering from the example of the Prætorian band among the Romans, and Templars in Europe, how dangerous it might be to erect a standing authority of military men, which might easily in time overthrow the civil power, thought fit to stop it betimes; yet they were allowed to be a company, but subordinate to all authority."

However, the infant Company were permitted to continue their voluntary training. There is an entry in the State Records that " Captain Keayne and the Military Company have power to exercise where they please and to make use of so many of the common arms as they need." Finally they were successful in obtaining a Charter addressed to Robert Keayne, Nathaniel Duncan, Robert Sedgwick, William Spencer and others, dated March 17th, 1638, which incorporated " The Military Company of the Massachusetts," endowed them with a thousand acres of land, and ordered that no other military training should take place on the days of their exercise.

Robert Keayne, the founder of the Military Company, was born at Windsor in 1595 and became a Gentleman of the Artillery Garden in 1623, being at the time a freeman of London and a Merchant Taylor. He was one of the earliest settlers in Boston, where for many years he took a leading part in local government, for which services he received one of the first grants of land made by the government of the State. Notwith-



FIGURES IN THE UNIFORM OF THE COMPANY CIRCA 1635, FROM ENGRAVINGS ON THE BRASS CLASPS OF THE GREAT VELLUM BOOK

WALTHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

standing his great reputation for piety and benevolence, he was on one occasion charged before the General Court with oppression in the sale of foreign commodities, in that he had taken more than sixpence in the shilling profit. This offence was styled a corrupt practice, the more so because the offender was an eminent professor of the gospel, a wealthy man of eminent parts with but one child, and had already been admonished by friends. A fine of £200 was imposed. On another occasion Keayne was suspected of killing for his own use a stray sow, the property of a neighbour. This case was the cause of considerable litigation, but the charge was never proved and Keayne was dismissed the case with costs.

By his will, Robert Keayne was a considerable benefactor to the town of Boston, leaving money to build a market-place, a conduit, a town house, a free school, a library and an armoury. He also left a legacy to Harvard College. To the Artillery Company he bequeathed five pounds for the purchase of pikes and bandoliers, and five pounds for the erection of a covered gun-platform for the training of members of the Company as scholars in Great Artillery. This platform was to suffice to carry a greater and a smaller piece of ordnance and was to be erected in a convenient place where a hill or rising ground formed a suitable butt to receive the shot of great guns. In addition he left the Company two heifers or cows, to be held on charge by them and the increase or profit to be laid out annually in the purchase of powder and bullets. This may sound a trivial gift from a wealthy man, but the value of a cow was £25 to £30 at that time and place. Finally the old soldier left his successors a deal of excellent advice on the management of the Company. He adds that he had in mind several other gifts for the encouragement of his beloved corps, but was deterred by the dwindling numbers which made him apprehensive of its final dissolution. "For what comfort or credit," he writes, "can a captain have to go into the field with six or twelve soldiers, and under the name of a Military or Artillery Company?"

Nathaniel Duncan, the second of those mentioned in the

Charter, does not appear to have graduated with the London Company, but Robert Sedgwick, the leader of the Trained Band of Charlestown and a gentleman of education and distinction, is said to have been a member of the parent Company, though his name does not appear on the Roll. He may have been a member of the rival company of the Military Garden of Westminster. However, a writer of the period observes that he was " brought up in London's Artillery Garden and furthered with sixteen years experience in New England, besides the help of a very good headpiece, being a frequent instructor of our Artillerymen." In 1652 Sedgwick was appointed to the highest military rank in the colony, that of Sergeant Major General, which office he held for one year. On the triumph of the Parliamentary cause in the Civil War he returned, with several others of the Company, to England, where he was employed as an officer by Cromwell. He served against the French and was engaged in the expedition against the Spanish West Indies which resulted in the capture of Jamaica, where he died, after having been promoted by the Protector to the rank of Major General.

There was a William Spencer admitted to the Artillery Garden in 1611 who may have been the fourth person named in the Charter, and this supposition is borne out by the knowledge that Spencer was of advanced age at the time of the incorporation of the Military Company.

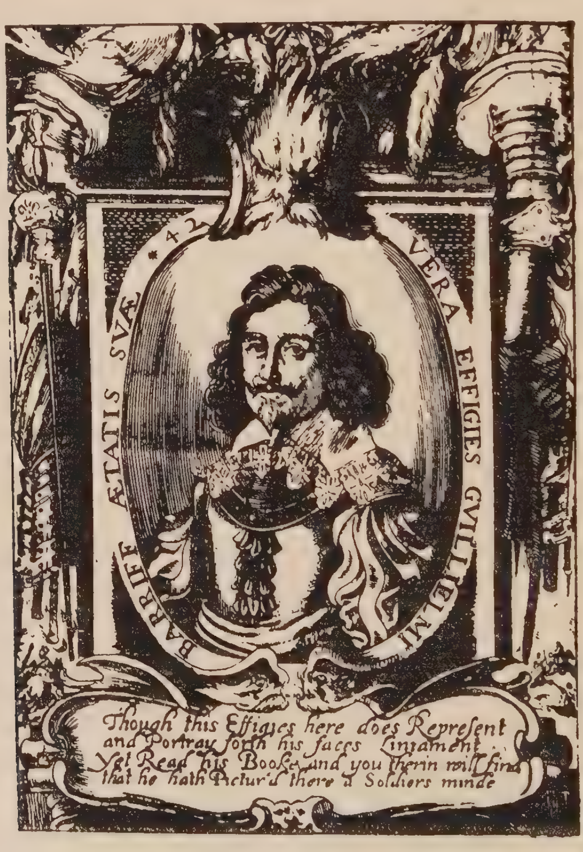
Several members besides those mentioned above had served with the old Company. John Underhill of Boston, a celebrated fighter of Indians and leader of the first military band formed in the colony, was admitted to the Artillery Garden in 1614. He afterwards served as an officer in the Low Countries and at Cadiz, and was taken to New England by Governor Winthrop to train the settlers in military discipline. There he became the first leader of the Trained Band of Boston and commanded an expedition, in 1637, which completely broke the power of the Paquod Indians by capturing their fort at Mystic (Conn.) and slaying about 700 of their warriors. Underhill is said to have been an eccentric character, though an enthusiast in religion. He had the misfortune to fall under suspicion of incontinency with a neighbour's wife, " the woman being young and beautiful, and withal of a jovial spirit and behaviour." For this he was arraigned before the Church Council, with an additional charge of having dated his conversion to religion " from a time he was smoking that good creature—tobacco," instead of attributing his enlightenment to " the preaching of the word." Finally Underhill was condemned to stand on the stool of repentance in church, with a foul white linen cap on his head, and there confess his sins.

The names of several other original members of the Massachusetts Company also appear in the Old Vellum Roll. It is impossible to verify the individuals and these entries may possibly refer to their namesakes, but, having regard to the fact that most of them were appointed to commands on the formation of the colonial Trained Bands, it is, to say the least, highly probable that these worthies had received their training at the School of War in London's Artillery Garden. Among these we find Lieut. Richard Morris, " a very stout man and an experienced soldier "; William Perkins, Captain of the Military Band of Weymouth; Captain Richard Walker, formerly Ensign of the Military Band of Saugus; Thomas Clarke, afterwards a Captain in the Boston Militia, and others.

The Military Company of the Massachusetts continued to perform its allotted function of training citizens in the art of war, and for many years most of the officers of the New England Militia Regiments (formed in 1644 from the old Trained Bands) were selected from its ranks. The designation of Artillery Company appears to have become usual about 1657 and at the beginning of the eighteenth century the prefix of " Honourable " came into use. The prefix of " Ancient " was added *circa* 1737.

On the 2nd day of June, 1635, the name of one of the greatest of Englishmen was entered on the Roll of the Regiment and John Milton commenced his short military career at the age of twenty-seven. It is difficult to picture the " mighty-mouthed inventor of harmonies " going through his recruit's drill with pike or musket, but it is certain that from our Company he obtained the military knowledge which reveals itself unmistakably in some of his works.

We are indebted to that energetic scribe, Lieut. William Bariffe, for the description of an exercise performed on October 18th, 1638, at Merchant Taylors' Hall, by "Certain Gentlemen of the Artillery Garden." Eighty of these worthies took part in a military display entitled "Mars, His Triumph," which was honoured with the presence of many of the "Nobility, Aldermen and Gentry." The proceedings opened with a display and


VERA EFFIGIES GVILIELMI BARRIFF ÆTATIS SVÆ 42
Though this Effigies here does Repreſent
and Portray forth his faces Lineament
Yet Read his Booke and you therin will find
that he hath Pictur'd there a Soldiers minde

WILLIAM BARRIFFE

Admitted a member of the Artillery Company, 1626. Author of "Militarie Discipline" and "Mars His Triumph."

combat by eighteen " Targettiers," armed with morions, swords and targets, who " made their encounters and varied their figures all according to the distinct sounds of their musick." Then entered twenty-two members disguised as Saracens, armed with Barbary guns, cymiters and broad Turkey daggers, and " habited after the Persian and Turconian manner." We are told that " their musick was a Turkie Drumme and a hideous noise making pipe made of a Buffolas (*sic*) horn." These gentry went through various evolutions, their Captain " supervising them with a stately survay," then saluted the Nobility and Gentry by putting their left hands on the tops of their Turbans and bowing their bodies forward, " and so passed out at the garden doore."

Next appeared forty members " in the Moderne Armes," namely, " sixteen Musketiers in Buffe-Coats and Beaver Morians, sixteen Pikemen compleatly armed in white Corslets, whole Pikes and Morians, one Phife and two Drummes," with officers and sergeants. They marched round the Hall, " the Drums beating a lofty English march," after which the drums " struck an Alt," while one of the musketeers was ushered to the front, and, " laying down his musket in a graceful manner," recited a poem specially composed for the occasion. This took the form of an appeal, addressed to the " Grave Fathers of the Citie," for the provision of a suitable ground for the Company's military exercises. The poem suggests that the whole motive of the display is to impress the Mayor and Corporation with the efficiency of the Company, and it concludes with the request that the City should

> " *Give your Souldiers one small piece of ground*
> *To shew their Arms in : else, in heaps of dust,*
> *Their glories will be hid, their bright Arms, rust.*"

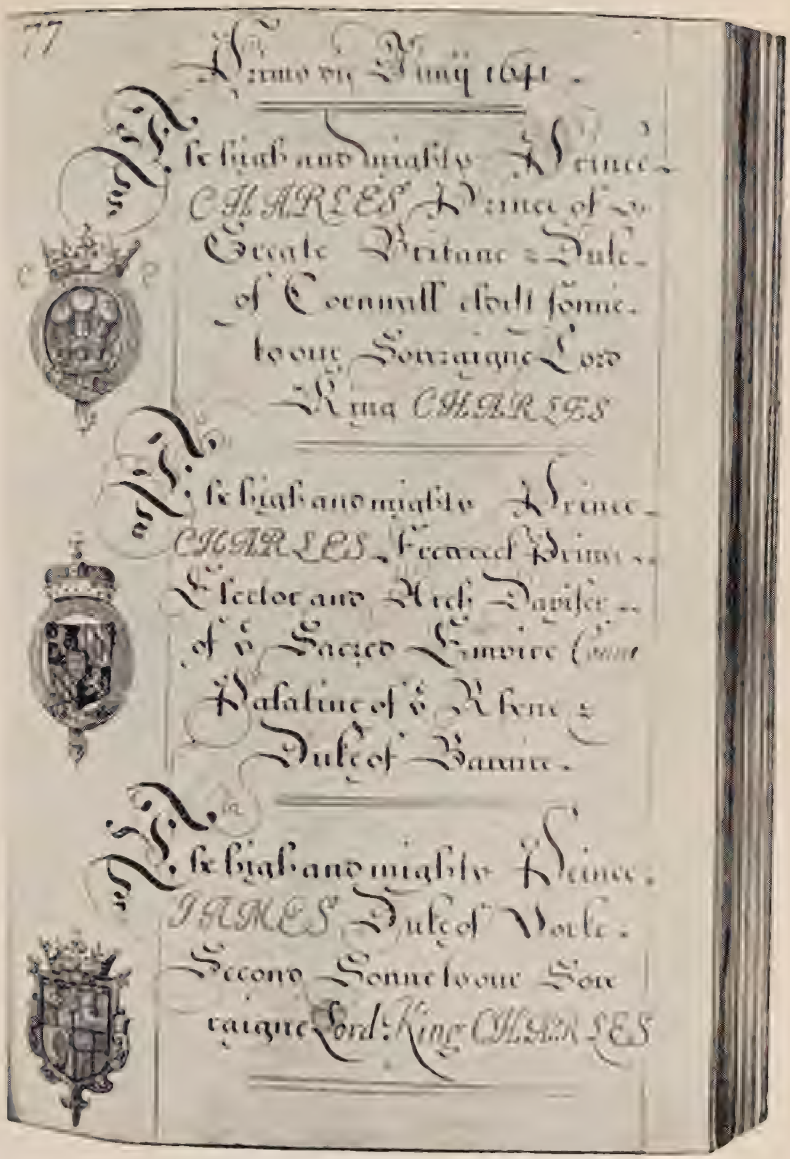
The whole body then performed a multitude of " postures " of the pike and musket to a " posture tune " played by the fife. These were followed by a series of complicated evolutions, doublings and countermarchings, firings and reducements, performed to " the streyn of the Almain posture tune."

At the conclusion of these exercises " a Sentinell gives fire without in the Yard," and "one comes crying into the Hall, Arme, Arme, the Saracens are Landed." The "Moderne Armes" are thereupon drawn up in battle array, the Saracens enter and a long and complicated sham engagement takes place. In spite of the gallantry of Mulley-ben-Achmay, the Saracen chief, who, "demonstrating a kinde of haughty scorn by the gesture of his body," engages the leader of the musketeers in single combat, "intending to have stabd him with a poysoned Creese," the Turks are finally forced to surrender; their lives are spared and the display concluded with a grand march past, the officers and soldiers "doing a short Souldier-like obeysance to the Nobility as they passed by them."

Three years afterwards the Company was granted (at a rental of 6*s.* 8*d.* per annum) the lease of the uppermost field in Finsbury, known to succeeding generations as the Artillery Ground.

The inhabitants of Bunhill Fields were not in the least pleased at the prospect of having the Artillery Company as neighbours and presented a petition to the House of Lords, setting forth the "evills and mischiefs to a great multitude" which would result from the "Military Gentlemen of London" having these fields for their place of exercise. Some of the alleged evils were (1) Citizens and archers passing by "to walke and recreate themselves" would be hindered and discouraged by the high wall; the pleasant passage would become a noisome lane, and the inhabitants forced to hire a scavenger to clean it. (2) Upon the building of a brick wall, 15 feet high, the passers-by would lose the beauty of a delightful prospect into the fields. (3) The narrow lane would expose wayfarers to the "pill of robbers" after dark, and expose them to infection of plague, as they would "unavoydably meete with sidans carrying persons to the Pesthowse." (4) Persons sick or in childbed would be "disquietted with the shott."

The House of Lords, on receipt of this petition, ordered the building of the wall already in course of erection by the "Artillery Men" to be stopped pending the hearing of the case. A counter petition was promptly submitted by the Company and



77

Primo die Junij 1641.

The high and mighty Prince
CHARLES Prince of ye
Greate Britane & Duke
of Cornwall eldest sonne
to our Soveraigne Lord
King CHARLES

The high and mighty Prince
CHARLES [illegible] Prince
Elector and Arch Davifer
of ye Sacred Empire Count
Palatine of ye Rhene &
Duke of Bavaria.

The high and mighty Prince
JAMES Duke of Yorke.
Second Sonne to our Sov
raigne Lord: King CHARLES

ENROLMENT OF THE ROYAL PRINCES IN THE GREAT VELLUM BOOK, 1641

Note.—The word 'Davifer' should read 'Dapifer'

WALTHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

a date was fixed for the hearing. No further records of the proceedings are available, but apparently the Company won the case, as they occupy the ground to this day.

It had always been the custom to call out the Trained Bands on any occasions when riots or civil commotions were feared, such as certain dates when the apprentices had a holiday. For instance, on Shrove Tuesday, 1622, eight hundred men of the Trained Bands were mustered under eight Captains and four hundred of them were directed to train in Moorfields "for preventing of riots and tumults which by the number of apprentices coming with other lewd and dissolute persons might happen to be attempted." Again, in May 1640, a thousand able and well-affected men of the City Regiments were embodied with orders to "suppress, slay, kill, destroy, and apprehend all persons tumultuously assembled in or about Southwark, Lambeth, Blackheath, and elsewhere in parts adjacent."

King Charles had always shown himself favourably disposed towards the Company. He had frequently attended the exercises in the Artillery Garden during his father's reign and had seen the Company or many of its members pass in review before him on more than one occasion. In 1641 he afforded a further signal proof of his favour by sanctioning the enrolment of the Prince of Wales, then but eleven years old, and his brother James, Duke of York, as members of the Company. The signatures of the two Princes in the Old Vellum Book are dated June 1st, 1641. The Elector of Palatine, a grandson of James I, became a member on the same day.

CHAPTER IV

1642 TO 1659

ON the outbreak of civil war between King and Parliament in August, 1642, neither side was prepared for a campaign and a sort of scramble ensued to obtain possession of arsenals throughout the country and to enlist the services of all available troops. These last consisted entirely of the trained bands, which were in most cases hopelessly inefficient. Furthermore, they could rarely be persuaded to move outside their own counties, and in some cases their lack of discipline made them more dangerous to their own officers than to the enemy. Both parties began by summoning the trained bands to their assistance, and both, before the war had been in progress many months, found it more profitable to relieve them of their arms and to form new armies from more suitable and less unwilling material.

It is some consolation to find once more that the only troops in England of reasonable efficiency were those officered by the members of the Artillery Company. "The one exception," writes Firth, "to the rule that the trained bands were worthless was furnished by those of London. Counting in the three regiments of the suburbs, the six regiments of the city, and the six regiments of auxiliaries, they amounted in 1643 to 18,000 men. They were the reserve on which the Parliament relied in every emergency. Without their aid, Essex could not have relieved Gloucester, nor could Waller have repulsed Hopton's invasion of Sussex. They were not very well disciplined, and were too accustomed to good food and good beds to support with patience the hardships of a compaign, but they were well drilled."

Closely connected as the Company had always been with that mainstay of the Parliamentary cause, the City of London, it is hardly surprising to find that the majority of our members supported the democratic party. Consequently, though the Company did not take part as a fighting unit on either side in the ensuing long drawn out struggle, we find the names of very many of its members serving as officers at the relief of Gloucester and the subsequent battle of Newbury, as well as in the defence of London and some minor operations. Doubtless many other individual members took part in the war on one side or the other, but their services are not recorded. However, we are able to trace to some extent the doings of those who served with the Trained Bands of London.

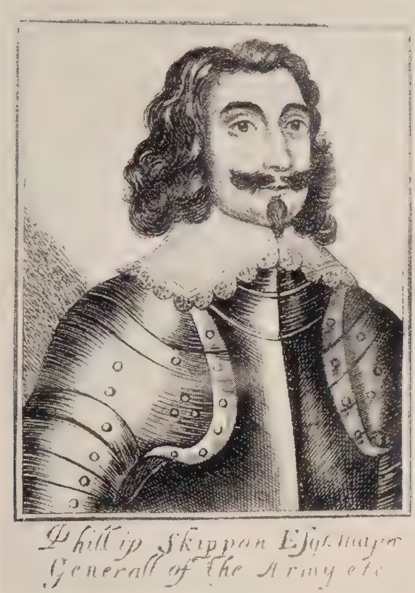
During the twelve months prior to the opening of hostilities nearly three hundred new members had been enrolled in the Company, probably in anticipation of the conflict which appeared to be inevitable. The first year of war saw a further increase of one hundred and fifty, indicating that training was still carried on at Headquarters during that period. Then recruiting practically ceased. One solitary member was admitted in April, 1644, and after that our records are silent until the revival of the Company under the Protectorate in 1656.

The war service of at least one member of the Company is known to history. Captain Phillip Skippon, a veteran of the Spanish wars, had been selected by King Charles as Captain of the Company in 1639, and three years later had been appointed, in addition, to the post of Commander of the City Forces, with the rank of "Sergt-Major General." He had seen hard service in the Netherlands under the Prince of Orange, and had gained a great reputation for gallantry at the siege of Breda, where, with thirty Englishmen, he had driven off two hundred Spaniards "at push of pike." At the outbreak of the Civil War the King endeavoured to secure the services of so experienced a soldier, but Skippon threw in his lot with the Parliament and was promptly appointed Major General under the Earl of Essex, to whom he acted as Chief of Staff. As General of the Foot he saw fighting in every part of the country and was responsible for drawing up the order of battle at Naseby, where he was severely wounded.

He also directed operations at the siege of Oxford. Cromwell appointed him as one of the judges of King Charles, but Skippon was no extremist and refused to act. He was a typical simple-minded, hard-fighting Puritan, firmly believing in the righteousness of his cause. In the early years of the war he published several books of devotion, such as "The Christian Centurion," etc. Perhaps his chief claim to fame is that he was one of the leading men in the formation and training of Cromwell's New Model Army, the most efficient force that England had produced for centuries and the direct ancestor of the Regular Army of to-day.

Barely three months after the commencement of hostilities a Committee of the House of Commons, being informed that Prince Rupert was advancing on London with a Royalist army, sent a message to the Corporation of London enquiring " what forces they were willing to spare for the present in a free and voluntary way to issue out of the City to meet and check the adverse party." The Militia Committee thought that twelve companies might be sent to join the forces of the adjacent counties in repelling the enemy. On this decision being made known, every company of the City Trained Bands volunteered for service ; a ballot was taken, and twelve were chosen. The names of the successful Company Commanders and those of the Colonels of the six regiments (the Red, the White, the Yellow, the Blue, the Orange and the Green) are preserved in the archives of Guildhall. Every one of them was a member of the Artillery Company.

The Parliamentary Committee was informed that the aforesaid twelve companies were willing to march as required " for the defence of Religion, the King, Kingdom, Parliament and City." They were ordered to rendezvous at Turnham Green, where the Earl of Essex was mustering a force to oppose Prince Rupert, who by this time had taken the town of Brentford and was threatening the City. There they found themselves under the eye of their old commander, Skippon, who exhorted them in a rough, blunt speech to stand firm. " Come, my brave, honest boys," said the grey-haired veteran, " pray heartily and fight heartily, and God will bless us."


Phillip Skippon Esq. major
Generall of the Army etc

PHILLIP SKIPPON

‘LEADER’ OF THE ARTILLERY COMPANY, AND MAJOR GENERAL OF THE PARLIAMENTARY ARMY

From a woodcut in the possession of the Company

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

The Royalists did not venture an attack, and the twelve companies returned to their drills and exercises in the Artillery Ground. An extract from the Parliamentary Chronicle throws an interesting light on the zeal of the people of London for their cause, as well as on the utter lack of commissariat arrangements in the armies of the day. It states that the Lord Mayor of London "with some prime, well affected citizens," taking into serious consideration the fact that the soldiers at Turnham Green "could not but be destitute of victuals to refresh them," urged the clergy of the City churches to appeal from their pulpits to their parishioners "to spare some part of their diet, ready dressed for that present (Sunday) dinner, and to bestow it upon the soldiers aforesaid." The appeal was effectual. Carts paraded the City streets to collect offerings, and over a hundred loads of provisions, wine and beer, were sent to the army, "accompanied by honest and religious gentlemen, who went to see it faithfully distributed."

In August, 1643, the city of Gloucester being closely invested by the Royalists, the London Trained Bands were called upon by Parliament to assist in raising the siege. All shops in the City were closed and six regiments were got ready for service with almost incredible speed. These troops consisted of a regiment of horse, the Blue and Red Regiments of the City Trained Bands, and the Red, Blue and Orange Regiments of Auxiliaries. They left London on August 23rd, the Red Regiment mustering in the Artillery Ground, and joined the army under the Earl of Essex which was advancing to the relief of the beleaguered city. Some skirmishing took place, notably at Stow-on-the-Wold, where the Red Regiment was engaged, but the Royalists raised the siege on the advance of the Parliamentary army, which entered Gloucester on September 7th and found the garrison reduced to their last barrel of powder. Essex then endeavoured, by feinting towards Worcester, to return to London without fighting, as he feared the King's superiority in cavalry, but his army was intercepted by the Royalists at Newbury. The result of the ensuing action, in which the London Trained Bands greatly distinguished themselves, was indecisive, but Essex succeeded in reaching London safely, though his rearguard was harassed by the enemy's cavalry.

Some interesting personal narratives of men of the City Regiments have survived. It appears from one of them that at the end of the first day's march several worthy citizens "who seemed very forward and willing at the first to march, yet upon some pretence and fair excuses returned home again, hiring others to go in their room." We are glad to note that at Chesham the men of the Red Regiment were "well accommodated for beer, having great plenty." At a village near Banbury, however, the troops were "very much scanted of victuals."

The first skirmish took place at Stow-on-the-Wold. The five regiments of trained bands formed the advance guard, and the Red Regiment, in advance of the rest, had stood to arms in an open field all night on account of the nearness of the enemy. In the morning they found themselves all but surrounded by four or five thousand Royalist horse, but the situation was saved by the appearance of Essex with the main body of his army. As Sergeant Henry Foster puts it:—"Their intent was to have compassed us in on every side, but the Lord prevented them. They might have spoiled our whole regiment, had they in the morning come down upon us when we were taking a little food to refresh ourselves." However, the great guns were brought up and opened fire. The enemy promptly retreated and the Parliamentary army followed them in battle array, five or six regiments abreast, 800 to 1,000 men in the front rank and six deep, "which goodly show did so much the more daunt the enemy that Prince Rupert swore he thought all the Roundheads in England were there." The pursuit lasted till late in the day and the Red Regiment "lay all night upon ploughed land, without straw, having neither bread nor water, yet God enabled our soldiers to bear it cheerfully." Again on the following night the same regiment found themselves acting as baggage guard on the top of Prestbury Hill, near Gloucester, "it being a most terrible tempestuous night of wind and rain, we having neither hedge nor tree for shelter, nor any sustenance of food or fire."

It speaks well for the discipline as well as for the fighting spirit of these citizen soldiers, suddenly called from the comforts of home life, that they endured these hardships of campaigning without loss of efficiency. Doubtless a leavening of religious fanaticism helped them to endure. As Foster has it, " We had by this time marched six days with very little provision. Such straits and hardships our citizens formerly knew not, yet the Lord that called us out to do his work enabled us to undergo such hardness as he brought us to."

On September 8th, the Royalists having raised the siege, the Earl of Essex entered Gloucester at the head of his army. Foster relates how the cannon shot fired by the besiegers had torn up the ground " as if a bear had been rooting up the earth." The army rested in Gloucester for two days, then advanced to Tewkesbury and halted there while the garrison of Gloucester was re-provisioned. Essex then ordered a bridge to be built over the Severn near Tewkesbury, and by this strategem deceived the Royalists into concentrating for the defence of Worcester, whereupon the Parliamentary army turned about and made for London with all speed. After a seventeen-mile march, they reached Cirencester, surprised a small garrison of Royalists and took 225 prisoners (whom they tied together two and two with pieces of match) and 27 wagon-loads of bread and cheese, a most important and welcome prize. Proceeding by forced marches through Cricklade and Swindon, the army collected from " malignants and papists " about 1,000 sheep and 60 head of cattle. Eighty-seven sheep were allotted to the Red Regiment, but were lost at the subsequent battle of Newbury. At Abern Chase skirmishing took place with the Royalist horse, who were pressing hard on the tracks of the retreating army. In this action Captain John Willett, a member of the Artillery Company admitted in 1618, was killed. The Red Regiment was quartered that night at Hungerford, the men being much distressed from want of sleep and lack of food. It was a night of wind and rain, and they were wet to the skin.

Advancing on the following day to within a mile and a half of

Newbury, Essex found that the Royalist army had intercepted him and was in possession of the town. His already exhausted troops were therefore forced once more to bivouac in the open with no shelter and little food. During the night the King's troops took up an advantageous position on high ground, where they planted their cannon and awaited with confidence the attack of their adversaries.

We cannot do better than allow Sergeant Foster to give his account of the next day's fighting:—"Very early before day, we had drawn up all our army in their several regiments, and marched away by break of day; and then advancing towards the enemy with most cheerful and courageous spirits. The Lord Robert's soldiers had begun to skirmish with them before we came up to the enemy, which, we hearing, put us to a running march till we sweat again, hastening to their relief and succour. When we came up into the field our two Regiments of the Trained Bands were placed in open campania upon the right wing of the whole army. The enemy had there planted eight pieces of ordnance, and stood in a great body of horse and foot, we being placed right opposite against them, and far less than twice musket shot distance from them. They began their battery against us with their great guns above half an hour before we could get any of our guns up to us; our gunner dealt very ill with us, delaying to come up to us. Our noble Colonel Tucker[1] fired one piece of ordnance against the enemy, and aiming to give fire the second time, was shot in the head with a cannon bullet from the enemy. The Blue Regiment of the Trained Bands stood on our right wing, and behaved themselves most gallantly. Two regiments of the King's Horse, which stood upon their right flank afar off, came fiercely upon them, and charged them two or three times, but were beaten back with their Musketeers, who gave them a most desperate charge and made them fly. This day our whole army wore green boughs in their hats, to distinguish us from our enemies, which they perceiving, one Regiment of their Horse had got green boughs and rode up to our regiments crying, ' Friends, friends '; but we let fly at them, and made many of them and their horses tumble, making them fly with a vengeance. The enemy's cannon did play most against the Red Regiment; they did some execution amongst us at first, and were somewhat dreadful when men's bowels and brains flew in our faces; but blessed be God that gave us courage, so that we kept our ground, and after awhile feared them not. Our ordnance did very good execution upon them, for we stood upon so near a distance, upon a plain field, that we could not lightly miss one another. We were not much above half our regiments in this place, for we had sixty files of Musketeers drawn off for the forlorn hope, who were engaged against the enemy in the field upon our left flank. Where most of the regiments of the Army were in fight, they had some small shelter of the hedges and banks, yet had a very hot fight with the enemy, and stood to it as bravely as ever men did. When our two regiments of the Trained Bands had thus played against the enemy for the space of three hours, or thereabouts, our Red Regiment joined to the Blue, which stood a little distance from us, upon our left flank, where we gained the advantage of a little hill, which we maintained against the enemy half an hour; two regiments of the enemy's Foot fought against us all this while to gain the hill, but could not. Then two regiments of the enemy's Horse, which stood upon our right flank, came fiercely upon us, and so surrounded us that we were forced to charge[1] upon them in the front and rear, and both flanks, which was performed by us with a great deal of courage and undauntedness of spirit, insomuch that we made a great slaughter of them, and forced them to retreat; but presently two regiments of the enemy's Foot in this time gained the hill, and came upon us before we could well recover ourselves, that we were glad to retreat a little way into the field, till we had rallied up our men and put them into their former posture, and then came on again. If I should speak anything in the praise and high commendations of those two regiments of the Trained Bands, I should rather obscure and darken the glory of that courage and valour God gave unto them this day; they stood like so many stakes before the shot of the cannon, quitting themselves like men of undaunted spirits, even our enemies themselves being judges."

---

[1] John Tucker, a member of the Artillery Company since 1618.

---

[1] *I.e.* To "charge" or level pikes.

"My noble and valiant Captain, George Mosse,[1] who was with the forlorn hope, received a shot in the back from the enemy, of which wound he is since dead. This 26th of September (*hinc illae lachrymae*) we lost about sixty or seventy men in our Red Regiment, besides wounded men; we having the hottest charge from the enemy's cannon of any regiment in the Army. Also that worthy and valiant gentleman, Capt. Hunt,[2] was slain in this battle, whose death is much lamented. These two poor regiments were the very objects of the enemy's battery that day, and they have since made their boast of it. The next day I viewed the dead bodies; there lay about 100 stripped naked in that field where our two regiments stood in battalion.

"This battle continued long; it began about six o'clock in the morning, and continued till past twelve o'clock at night. In the night the enemy retreated to the town of Newbury and drew away all their ordnance; we were in great distress for water, or any accommodation to refresh our poor soldiers, yet the Lord himself sustained us so that we did not faint under it; we were right glad to drink in the same water where our horses did drink, wandering up and down to seek for it. Our word on this day was 'Religion,' theirs was 'Queen Mary in the field.'"

If further proof be needed of the courage and efficiency of the citizen soldiers at Newbury, it is to be found in the pages of Clarendon, the Royalist historian. He pays a handsome tribute to the steadiness of the City troops in the following passage:—

"The London Trained Bands and Auxiliary Regiments (of whose inexperience of danger, or any kind of service beyond the easy practice of their postures in the Artillery Garden, men had till then too cheap an estimation) behaved themselves to wonder; and were, in truth, the preservation of that army that day. For they stood as a bulwark and rampire to defend the rest; and when their wings of horse were scattered and dispersed, kept their ground so steadily, that, though Prince Rupert himself led up the choice horse to charge them, and endured their storm of small shot, he could make no impression upon their stand of pikes, but was forced to wheel about: of so sovereign benefit is that readiness, order, and dexterity in the use of their arms, which hath been so much neglected."

---

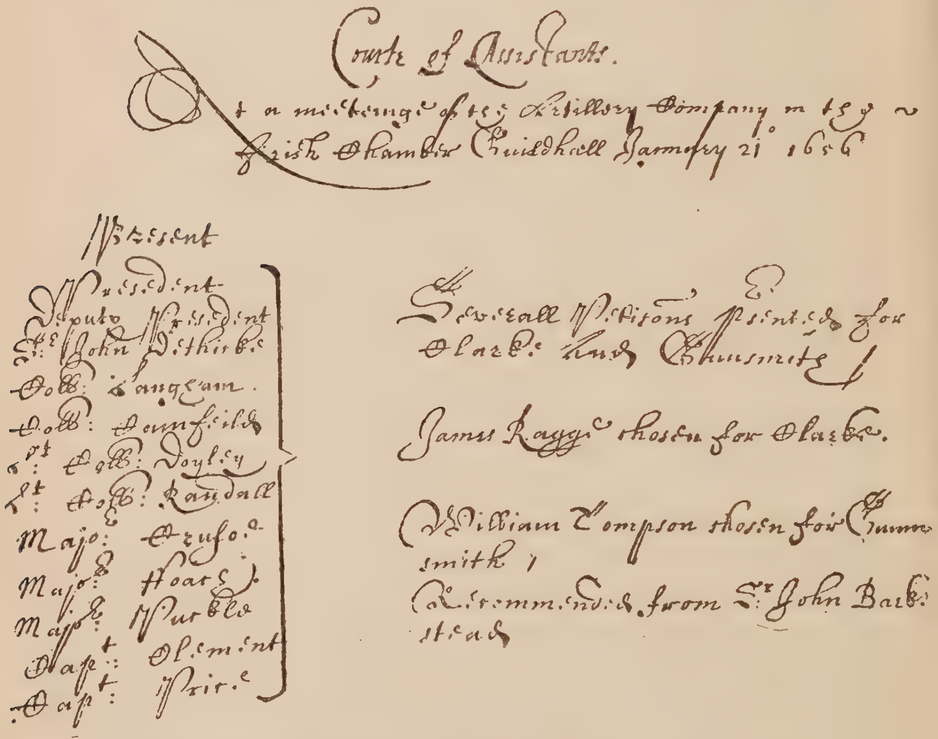
[1] Admitted a member of the Artillery Company in 1626.

[2] A confectioner in Bearebinder Lane. Admitted to the Artillery Company in 1631.

The return of the City Trained Bands to London was the occasion for great demonstrations of joy on the part of the inhabitants, more especially as reports had been circulated that they had been cut to pieces on the return march. The returning troops wore green boughs in their hats, as they had done at Newbury.

While these regiments had been away, a muster of the remainder of the City Forces had been held in the Artillery Garden and adjoining fields. Complete records are available of the strength of the various regiments at this parade, with the names of the officers of all the Trained Bands at that time. It is interesting to note, from the description appended to each name, the class of citizen of which the Company was composed at that period. We find the names of Captain William Manby, "Clerk of Leathersellers' Hall," of whom more will be heard later, Captain John Booker, "Registrar to the Commissioners of the Statute of Bankrupts, dwelling in Wallbrook," Captain William Coleson, "of the Custom House," Major Owen Roe, "a Mercer in Cheapside," and many other merchants and tradesmen. There is at least one notorious character in the person of Captain Walter Lee, a haberdasher in Ludgate, who "did break the windows on Westminster Abbey."

It has been noted that no new Members were admitted to the Artillery Garden from April, 1644, onwards, and from the complete lack of records of succeeding years it may be assumed that the Company's normal activities ceased almost entirely, if not wholly, during the later periods of the Civil War. It was not until 1655, four years after the final downfall of Royalist hopes at Worcester, that the Lord Mayor and Commissioners of Militia applied to Oliver Cromwell for leave "to revive the power of the Artillery Company, for the better disciplining of the citizens, whereby they might, upon any emergency, be enabled to act together for his defence." The Lord Protector readily agreed to this proposal, took upon himself the patronage of the Company and appointed Major General Skippon as Captain-General. It is significant that none were to be admitted Members but such as were well affected to His Highness the Lord Protector.



Courte of Assistants.

At a meetinge of the Artillery Company in the Irish Chamber Guildhall January 21° 1656

Present
President
Deputy President
Sr: John Dethicke
Coll: Langham.
Coll: Manfield
Lt: Coll: Doyley
Lt: Coll: Randall
Majo: Cruso
Major: Hoare
Major: Purble
Capt: Clement
Capt: Price

Severall Petitions presented for Clarke and Gunsmith /

James Ragge chosen for Clarke.

William Tompson chosen for Gunnesmith /
Recommended from Sr John Barkstead

Minutes of the Court of Assistants, January 21st, 1656.

Forthwith the Company was revived. A Court of Assistants was held in the Irish Chamber at Guildhall on January 21st, 1656, at which a Clerk and Gunsmith were appointed, and from that date the complete minutes of the Court are available in unbroken sequence to the present day. On the 28th of the same month a Beadle was appointed, whose office was to summon the whole Company and to collect moneys for the Treasurer, and at the same Court the names of the first new Members to be admitted since the revival were entered in the Old Vellum Book. At subsequent meetings the Court appointed two Sergeants, a "Cloake Keeper," and two "Drums," also Gatekeepers for the Old and New Artillery Grounds.

It appears that the Company still made use of the Old Ground in Bishopsgate, but in 1658 the Company sold to the Master Gunner for £300 their Armoury and Courthouse, built in 1622 at a cost of £1000, and all other structures belonging to the Company and situated in the Old Ground. Thus ended the century-long dispute as to priority of claim; and the Gunners of the Tower were left in sole possession of the Ground in Tassell Close.

In the first Minute Book of the Court of Assistants we find the reason for the lack of all earlier records (with the exception of the Vellum Book). It appears that during the Civil War the archives and valuables belonging to the Company had been placed in charge of various eminent Members. One of these, Lieut.-Col. William Manby, Treasurer of the Company, now refused to deliver up the plate, money, arms, books and papers in his possession. The reason for his refusal does not appear. He merely ignored all requests, orders or threats. Deputations and Sub-Committees waited upon the defaulter with no result; summonses to appear before the Court and before the Militia Committee were useless; a Bill in Chancery was tried in vain; petitions to the Lord Protector, to the Committee of Parliament, and later, to Charles II, had no effect. Nothing was ever recovered.

Thus the ancient archives of the Regiment, which must certainly have covered the period from 1610 to 1643, and probably went back to the date of the Charter, were irretrievably lost to posterity through the criminal carelessness or roguery of one individual. No traces of these records have ever come to light and it must be presumed that they were destroyed. Among the missing documents was the original lease of the Artillery Ground and the lost plate included a "giult standing Cupp" worth £50, also "two Silver Flaggons to the valew of 50L." The individual responsible for this irreparable loss was admitted a Member of the Company in 1618 and was appointed Treasurer in 1637. At the outbreak of the Civil War he appears to have been the 3rd Captain in the White Regiment of Trained Bands, and, in private life, Clerk of the Leathersellers' Company.

Another regimental possession which was lost under similar circumstances was "ye Storie of ye Fight Anno 1588, Painted on 8 Frames," which had been presented to the Company in 1630. These pictures had been entrusted to the care of a Mr. John Eager, of Farnham, whose connection with the Company is not clear. They were never recovered.

It is noteworthy that Highmore, writing in 1804, attributes the loss of the regimental records to their seizure by the Cavalier party. This statement is in no way borne out by the existing records, and Blackwell, who wrote only sixty years after the event, makes no such assertion.

The first General Court after the revival was held on January 26th, 1657. This was also the first meeting on record to be held in the Armoury in the New Artillery Ground, and provides the earliest intimation that such a building existed. It appears from contemporary maps to have been situated in the north-west corner of the field, where St. Paul's Vicarage now stands. No record of its erection can be traced.

At this Court Sir Robert Tichbourne was elected President and Major General Skippon, being present, "was pleased to acknowledge himselfe Captain of the Company, onely there could not bee Expected soe much from him as formerly there had, by reason of such multiplicity of busines that lay upon him, but his Earnest Desire was for the prosperity of yͤ company." This is almost the end of the veteran General's long connection with the Company. In 1660 he was superseded in his command of the City Forces by General Monk and retired into private life.

There appears to have been some friction between members of the Company and their commanders shortly after the revival, and the Treasurer, Col. Sheppard, was desired by the Court "to speake to ye Company and to pasyfye theyre Distempers, that noe mutiny may arise amongst them."

The ancient custom of attending the Lord Mayor on his return from Westminster was revived in 1658. Sir John Ireton, on landing at Baynard's Castle, was met by the Gentlemen of the Artillery Ground, who "accommodated his Lordship with their Company."

The earliest record of Standing Orders for the guidance of the Company occurs in 1615. On April 26th of that year certain propositions of articles were submitted to the Court of Aldermen by the Society of the Artillery Garden "to be confirmed for their better establishment and government in the practice and exercise of arms in or about the City."

The next mention of the subject occurs in 1631, when the Court of Aldermen appointed a Committee of eight (mostly members of the Company) "to carefully peruse and consider the orders (which had apparently been drawn up in 1629) to be observed by every Member of the Society exercising arms in the Artillery Garden" and to report to the Court their opinion thereon. In the following year, as no report had been received, the Court renewed its instructions, and added the Recorder of the City to the Committee to replace a member who had died. The final result, if any, of these deliberations has not survived, but in 1658 the Court of Aldermen drew up for the government of the Company a set of Rules and Orders, of which a reprint, dated 1751, is still in the possession of the Regiment.

These are believed the oldest regimental standing orders in existence, and are here set forth in full :—

ORDERS
Made by the
Court of Assistants
of the
ARTILLERY-COMPANY,
And confirmed by
The Whole Society, at two General Courts, holden in the *Armory* in the *Artillery* (Ground), *viz.* the First Court on the 8th of *February* 1658, and the other Court, on the 7th *February* 1659.
By which Orders the Company is to be governed.

IMPRIMIS, It is thought fit, and so ordered and agreed upon, that, as for the present, the Company is now ordered and governed, so it shall continue and be governed by a President, a Deputy-President, a Treasurer, and Four and Twenty Assistants, whereof four of the Assistants shall be Field-Officers, or Captains of the Trained-Bands of the City of *London*, that do pay Quarteridge, and shall continue to be of the Company, and shall be annually chosen there by the whole Body of the Company, in manner following.

II. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, The whole Company shall be summoned once every Year, to meet at the *Artillery-Garden*, on the next *Tuesday* after *Candlemas-Day* ; and there to nominate Three sufficient Citizens, being Freemen of *London*, and present Members of this Company, whom they shall think fit, to stand in order to Election for President, and out of them, they, or the greater Part of them, shall choose one, by holding up of Hands, to be President for the Year ensuing.

III. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That at the same General-Meeting, the Company shall every Year, in like Sort, nominate and choose, by holding up of Hands, out of such of the said Society as are Citizens and Freemen of *London*, a Deputy-President and a Treasurer, for the Year next ensuing, in Manner and Form following ; that is to say, out of three Members of the said Company to be nominated, shall elect and choose one of them for a Deputy-President; who, if he refuse to hold the Place, shall pay, for a Fine to the present Treasurer, for the Use of the Company, *Three Pounds*. And out of three, to be nominated as aforesaid, shall elect one of them for a Treasurer, to keep the common Treasure of the Company for the Year ensuing. In which Nomination and Choice, it is hereby declared, that Respect is to be had to the Antientest of the Company, if they be otherwise fit: Which Treasurer so chosen, shall at the next Court of Assistants, to be holden for the Company, after his Election, put in two sufficient Sureties, such as the Court of Assistants, or the greater part of them, shall approve of, to render a true Accompt at the Years End, to such Auditors as shall be chosen by the Assistants, of what Money he shall receive and pay for the Company's Use that Year; and to pay what shall be resting upon the Foot of his Account to the succeeding Treasurer, at the Time of his Audit. And if any Treasurer, so chosen, shall refuse to hold the Place, or give Security as aforesaid, he shall pay, to the present Treasurer, to the Use of the Company, *Forty Shillings*. And for the rest of the Assistants, It is ordered and agreed, That the Treasurer for the Year past, shall be one of the Assistants for the Year ensuing; and the Company shall also choose of the Assistants that were of the last Year, Six of them, for the Year ensuing; And that the Eight Stewards, that served the presedent Year, shall be Eight other of the Assistants, for the Year following; and the rest to be elected out of the Company, until the Number of Twenty-four be made up; and if any so chosen an Assistant, shall refuse to hold the Place, he shall pay for a Fine to the Treasurer, for the Use of the Company, *Twenty Shillings*.

IV. *Item*, Upon the Nomination of Persons for Leaders, It is ordered and agreed, That the Company exceed not the Number of Eight; which Number of Eight is to be reduced, by most Voices, to Four; out of which Four to elect Two to lead, and exercise the Company in the Absence of the Captain for the Year following; the First to begin the next Training Day after the Election, and to continue till Midsummer following; and the other to begin the next Training Day after Midsummer, and to continue till the next Election. And out of Eight, as aforesaid, shall elect Two, to serve as Lieutenants for the Year following; the First to begin the next Training Day after the Election, and to continue till *Midsummer* following; and the other to begin the next Training Day after *Midsummer*, and continue till the next Election. And out of Eight, as aforesaid, to be nominated, shall elect Two for Ensigns for the Year ensuing, to bear the Colours for that Year; the First to begin the next Training Day after Election, and continue till *Midsummer* following; and the Second to begin the next Training Day after *Midsummer*, and to continue till the Second.[1] And shall also choose Four Surveyors of Arms, who shall look to the Arms, to see them clean kept, and in good Order; and to see that Arms be brought in according to the Order of Arms: and shall give a Note to the Treasurer, at, or before the Audit of his Accompt, what Arms be in the Garden, and whose they be, and what Arms there shall be remaining to the Company. And if any so chosen a Surveyor, shall refuse to hold the Place, shall pay for a Fine to the Treasurer, for the Use of the Company, *Ten Shillings*. And out of Two or more, shall elect One, to be Marshall for the Year ensuing. And out of Six to be nominated, shall elect Three, to be Serjeants, to supply those Places and Offices for the Year ensuing.

V. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That the rest of the Officers and Attendants, belonging to the Company, *viz.* the Clerk and the Beadle, &c. shall be annually chosen upon the same general Election Day, as other Officers are.

VI. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That upon the next Court of Assistants, after the General Election Day, the Leaders, the Lieutenants, the Ensigns, the Treasurer, the Stewards, and Assistants, shall give their Answer, whether they will hold their Places, or not; and if any refuse, then the Assistants, or the greater part of them, to choose others in their Places.

VII. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That any Gentleman, or Citizen, that shall desire to be admitted into this Society, shall be recommended by one or more of the Company, to whom he is known, and presented to two or more of the Assistants, and after to the Court of Assistants, and there shall be confirmed of the Company, if no just Exception be against him; and every one so admitted, if he be a Freeman of *London*, shall pay to the

---

[1] ? Election.

Treasurer, for the Use of the Company, Twenty Shillings, and Twelvepence to the Clerk for registering of his Name, and Sixpence to the Beadle for entering him into his Book; and if he be not a Freeman, he shall enter a Pike, and pay according to the rate of a Pike, and Two Shillings to the Clerk, and Twelvepence to the Beadle.

VIII. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That Every one entering himself, and using a Pike, shall pay to the Company's Use for his Admittance into the Company Forty Shillings, and Five Shillings a Quarter; and Every one entering himself, and using a Musket, shall pay for his Admittance into the Company Twenty Shillings, and Two Shillings and Sixpence a Quarter.

IX. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That no Apprentice or Covenant Servant shall be admitted into this Society, not any Person that is not known to be well affected in Religion, and not inclined to Popery; nor any that is a Bankrupt, or hath compounded for his Debts, or not of sufficient Means or Ability to spare his Time, or bear the Charge of the Company: And if any such Person now admitted, or at any Time hereafter shall be known to be such, he shall be admonished by two of the Assistants to forbear the Company; and in case he shall refuse, he shall be expulsed the Company by the Court of Assistants, if they shall think so fitting.

X. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That every Member of the Company, that is already admitted, shall before the first Day of July next; and that every one which shall hereafter be admitted into the Company, shall within two Months after his Admission, bring into the Armory in the *Artillery-Garden*, there to be kept for his Use, such Arms of his own, as shall be thought fitting by the said Captain or Leader for the Time being, his Stature considered; *viz.* Every one entered to Exercise with a Pike, to bring in his Gorget and Pike, and every one entered a Musket, to bring in a Musket with a Match-Lock and Rest.

XI. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed on, That every Musket, which shall be brought into the Garden, which hath not been tried by the Gunsmith of *London*, shall be tried by the Gunsmith of the Company, in the Presence of the Owner, and one Surveyor of Arms for the Time being, at the charge of the Owner, before the same Musket be used in the Garden, upon pain that Every one that shall offend herein shall pay, to the Use of the Company, every Training Day that he shall use it before it be tried, Twelvepence upon Demand, by the Treasurer or Collector, for the Time being.

XII. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That the next *Tuesday* after Election Day shall be a General Training Day, and so forward every second *Tuesday* after through the whole Year, upon which General Training Day every Member of the Company, being summoned to appear at the Garden, shall appear there by Two of the Clock in the Winter, between the Twenty-ninth day of *September* and the Twenty-fifth of *March*, and by Three of the Clock in the Summer Season, betwixt the Twenty-fifth Day of *March* and the Twenty-ninth Day of *September*.

XIII. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That every Officer belonging to the Company, that hath Salary, shall make his Appearance at the Garden every General Day o Training, at the Hour of One of the Clock in the Winter, and Two of the Clock in the Summer; and if in Case any of them shall come after the Hours aforesaid, he shall pay for a Fine, to the Use of the Company, Sixpence; and if he come not at all that Day he shall pay Twelvepence, except in case of Sickness, or that he hath acquainted the Leader or Captain before-hand with his Business, and hath leave from him to be absent.

XIV. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That if any Member of this Company, being in the Garden, shall be required by the Marshal or Officers to arm himself, and shall not be armed upon any General Training Day, he shall pay for a Fine, to the Treasurer, for the Use of the Company, Sixpence, unless they can give reasonable Satisfaction to the Leader for the Time being; and if any of the Company do, upon any General Training Day of Exercise, bear Arms without a Sword or Rapier, he shall pay to the Treasurer Threepence for the Use of the Company, except he hath such as the Leader approves.

XV. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That upon the General Training Day every Member of the Company, whether he use Pike or Musket, shall be ready before the third Beat of Drum, which shall be at the Hours aforesaid, to be drawn into a File by the Officers, and shall take such Place as he shall be appointed unto; and, if any refuse to march forth in such

Place as he shall be commanded, he shall pay to the Company's Use Sixpence.

XVI. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That during the Time of Exercise, there shall be a general Silence, so as no Man's Voice be heard but the Officers, and Every one offending herein to pay Twopence to the Use of the Company.

XVII. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That no Member of the Company, during the Time of Exercise in the Garden, or in marching forth into the City-fields, or to Funerals, shall go forth of his Rank or File to shoot off his Musket, or shall do it in his Rank, without Command; and if any do so, he shall forfeit for every Time he shall offend herein the Sum of Sixpence.

XVIII. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That no Member of this Company, being in Rank and File, shall depart from his Colours before they be lodged, without Leave of the Leader, and Every one so offending, shall pay Sixpence.

XIX. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That no Member of this Company shall abuse any of his Fellow-Soldiers, by taking away his Powder or Match, or by shooting off his Musket, whereby any Quarrel may arise, and that the Party offending herein, shall pay for a Fine to the Company's Use, Twelvepence.

XX. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That no Member of this Company shall, upon any General Training Day, call the Captain-Leader, Lieutenant, Ensign or Serjeants by any other Name than the Name of his Place, upon pain of Fortfeiting for every Time they shall offend therein, to the Company's Use, Sixpence.

XXI. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That if any Member of this Company shall wilfully or negligently hurt any of his Fellow-Soldiers, and be thereof convicted, he shall submit himself to pay such Fine as the Court of Assistants shall impose upon him; and if, in such case, he shall refuse to do it, he shall be expulsed the Company.

XXII. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That if any Member of the Company shall, at any Time, challenge any of his Fellow-Soldiers to shoot at a Mark for any Wager, without leave of the Captain, or Leader, for the Time being, he shall pay for a Fine, to the Use of the Company, Five Shillings.

XXIII. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That if any Officer or Member of the Company shall, at any Time of their accustomed Meetings in the *Artillery-Garden*, or elsewhere, abuse the Name of God, by Swearing or Cursing, for every Time it shall be proved that he offends therein, he shall pay, to the Company's Use Twelvepence, which shall be put into a Box in the Court-House; and once in the Year shall be distributed to the Poor by the Court of Assistants.

XXIV. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That if any Officer or Member of this Company shall abuse himself, by drinking too much, or urge any of his Fellow-Soldiers to drink immoderately at any Time, or by ill Words or other Misdemeanours, shall breed any Quarrel or Disturbance, and shall be thereof convicted at a Court of Assistants, he shall submit himself to such Penalty, as the Assistants, or the greater Part of them, in their Discretions, shall think to impose upon him, not exceeding Five Shillings; and in case any such shall refuse to submit himself, he shall be expulsed the Company.

XXV. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That if any of this Company shall come to the Garden upon any of the usual Training Days, being overseen in Drink, he shall not be suffered to bear Arms that Day; and if he shall bear Arms notwithstanding, and shall be convict of Drunkenness at a Court of Assistants, he shall pay for the first Offence Three Shillings and Fourpence, for the second Offence Five Shillings, and for the third Offence he shall be expulsed the Company; and if any Officer that taketh Salary or Gratuity of the Company, and shall offend herein, he shall pay for the first Offence Five Shillings, for the second Offence Ten Shillings, and for the third Offence he shall be expulsed the Company.

XXVI. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That if any Officer or Member of this Company shall draw any of his Fellow-Soldiers, on any of their accustomed Training Days, or after their Training is ended to Dice, Cards, Tables, or any other unlawful Game, and shall be thereof convicted at a Court of Assistants, Every one so offending herein shall pay, for his first Offence, Ten Shillings to the Use of the Company, and for the second Offence, he shall be expulsed the Company.

XXVII. *Item*, It is ordered, and agreed upon, That if any Members of this Company shall be turbulent or factious, or a Stirrer-up of Dissension, or factious against the Peace or Welfare of the Company, and shall thereof be convicted at a Court of Assistants, and shall refuse to submit himself to the Order of the Court, he shall be therefore expulsed the Company.

XXVIII. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That if any Difference or Quarrel shall arise betwixt any of the Members of the Company, concerning the Affairs of the Company, each Party shall submit himself to such Orders as the Court of Assistants shall set down; and if any refuse to stand on such Order, he shall be expulsed the Company.

XXIX. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That the Company shall not be summoned to go in Arms to the Funeral of any Member of this Society except the Party deceased hath, by his Last Will or otherwise, given Ten Pounds at the least, to the Use of the said Company.

XXX. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That if any Member of the Company shall go out of the Land, beyond the Sea, and shall give Notice thereof to the Captain-Leader, Treasurer, and Collector, for the Time being, or any one of them, he shall be freed from paying of Quarteridge all the Time of his Absence out of the Land, and at his Return, paying his Quarteridge, he shall hold his Place of Antiquity upon the Roll which he had before.

XXXI. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That no Member of this Company shall take his Arms out of the Garden upon any Occasion, untill he hath paid all his Duties there; and if he continue of the Company, he shall bring them into the Garden again, within two Months, or else he shall pay for every Month he shall keep them forth longer, the Sum of Twelvepence, to the Treasurer, for the Use of the Company.

XXXII. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That if any Member of this Company shall refuse to pay his Quarteridge to the Treasurer or Collector of the Company for the Time being, it being demanded by either of them, he shall pay such Fine to the Company's Use, as the Court of Assistants shall think fit to impose upon him, so as such a Fine exceeds not the double Sum of the Money then in Arrear for such Quarteridge; and any that shall be behind in Arrearage Six Months, and it being demanded, if he shall refuse to pay it, he shall, if the Court of Assistants think fit, be expulsed the Company.

XXXIII. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That once every Year the whole Company shall meet at the *Artillery-Garden* upon such a Day, as the Court of Assistants shall think fit, and from thence shall go in Order and decent Manner, in their Cloaks, with Sword and Feather, to a Sermon, and so to Dine or Sup together; and every Member of the Company shall pay the Stewards, for the Time being, Two Shillings and Sixpence, Eight Days at the least, before the same Day of Meeting, whether he come to Dinner or Supper, or not; and every Captain that is at present in command of the Trained-Bands of *London*, that holds himself of the Company, shall pay to the Stewards Five Shillings, and this shall be paid by every of the Captains, whether he come or not.

XXXIV. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That the Preacher, that shall preach on the said General Day of Meeting, shall be chosen by the Court of Assistants, and shall be paid by the Treasurer, for his Sermon, Forty Shillings.

XXXV. *Item*, It is ordered, &c. That at the same General Day of Meeting, the Eight present Stewards shall choose out of the Company, such as shall be nominated to them by the Court of Assistants, to be Stewards for the Year following; and the Stewards so chosen shall give their Answers at the next Court of Assistants, whether they will hold the Place, or not; and if any so chosen shall refuse to hold the Place, then he shall pay to the Treasurer, for a Fine, to the Use of the Company, the Sum of Three Pounds Sterling, and the Court of Assistants shall have Power to choose another in his Place.

XXXVI. *Item*, It is ordered and agreed upon, That the Assistants, or the greater Part of them, shall, at the next Court before the General Day, yearly, for the Election of Officers, make choice of six or more of themselves to audit the Accompt of the present Treasurer and Collector.

FINIS.

It was not long before the Company revived the ancient custom of the Annual Feast and Sermon. This ceremony took the form of a muster in the Artillery Ground, followed by a field exercise, after which the Company marched in solemn procession to Old St. Paul's or some other City church, where they heard a Sermon preached by a dignitary of the Church specially selected for the occasion. The preacher received for his services "three broad pieces of gold." The sermons were afterwards printed and distributed, presumably for the benefit of those members who were unable to keep awake during the fifty minutes or more of their delivery. Some of these publications have survived. They almost invariably contain evidence of a strong political bias, varying with the popular feeling of the period. After the Sermon the Company marched, with their guests, to the hall of one of the City Companies, usually the Merchant Taylors', where the feast was spread. The expenses were shared by the eight Stewards, elected annually from among the wealthier members, who, as recorded in the Vellum Book, "were honorably pleased to bear the charges of the Feast." They received, however, some assistance from the general fund towards the entertainment of official guests. Happily, a description of the order of march on one of these interesting occasions survives in the minute books. It is here appended.

"The 18th of August 1658 The Company mett in ye Artillery Garden from thence they marcht to Pauls Church where Mr. Griffeth preacht a sermon and soe to Marchantaylors hall to dinner.

The manner of theyre march thus

Imprimis the Marshall of the Company in his Bufcoat Scarfe Sword feather Gauntlelet & Truncheon.

4 Marshalls in bufcoats Scarfes feathers swords & truncheons.

8 Stewards wth Guilt Staves swords & feathers 2 in rancke. Next place for ye Lord Mayor & Aldermen Ministers & other Guests 2 in rancke who mett ye Company att Church and after sermon marcht in theyre places to Merchantaylo^{rs} hall accordinge to theyre degree. The Right hono^{rble} Ald^{r}man Chinerton beinge Lord Mayo^{r} went a foote in his Scarlett Gowne wth the Mace & sword both borne before him & ye Sherriffs & Ald^{r}men in theyre Scarlet Gownes likewise.

4 Marshalls in like habit as before.
The Right hono^{rble} ye Lord Tichborne beinge Presedent.
4 Marshalls as before.
The Hon^{le} S^{r} John Ireton Dep^{ty} Presedent.
4 Marshalls as before.

Coll. Matthew Sheppeard Treasurer who likewise supplied ye place of ye Cap^{t} of ye Company haveinge ye Leadeinge Staffe borne by him by another yt marcht wthout a Cloake.

The Assistants in theyre Cloaks wth swords & feathers & white staves.

The Cap^{ts} of ye trayned bands & feild officers 2 in rancke.

The Company in theyre cloakes swords & feathers 2 in rancke likewise.

The Lieuten^{t} in ye reare in his cloak sword & feather haveinge his Partisan borne by another yt marcht by him wthout a cloake.

The Eldest Sarjeant attended ye Presid^{t} ye other ye Capt:

Dinner beinge Ended they proceeded to ye Eleccon of new Stewards Every Steward haveinge two Marshalls & a drum to attend him Every Steward wearinge a Lawrell upon his head w^{ch} hee put upon ye new Elected Stewards head.

The Motto. Love hates Division."

When Oliver Cromwell died in 1658, the Court of Assistants "thought good to move the Militia (Committee) that yf the Trayne Bands doe not attend the Lord Protector his funerall, then the Artillery Company is ready to present theyre Services." The Militia Committee, thinking the Trained Bands too numerous for the occasion, requested the Company to represent the Militia forces of the City of London at the funeral, and suggested that application should be made for a convenient place in the procession to be assigned to them. Whereupon the following summons was issued to members of the Company :—

"*Sr:*

"*You are desired to appeare on Tuesday morninge the 9th of this instant 9ber att eight of the Clocke in the Artillery Garden compleately armed and habited wth a black feather to march from thence to attend the funerall of his late Highnes Oliver Lord*

Protector and not to fayle in any of the premises as you tender the honor of the Cittie & Company."

and at the same time the following orders were promulgated :—

"Major Randal & Capt: Best are desired to speake to the Harroulds (Heralds) to knowe ye tyme of ye Companys Comeinge to attend ye funerall & the place where they shall drawe upp.

"Ordered that the Leading Staffe & Partison the heads bee covered with Sipress (cypress) and yt a ribbon bee provided for the Collours.

"Ordered that there bee 10 Drums & Fifes and that the Treasurer of this Company doe provide blacke bayes (baize) for the coveringe of them."

It is unfortunately impossible to ascertain the exact design of the colours carried by the Company at this time. Six Colours were usually used, the Colonel's, the Lieutenant Colonel's, and one for each of the four Captains. A Colonel's Colour of this period usually took the form of a plain coloured field, with the cross of St. George in the first canton; the other five colours were similar in colour but charged with one or more devices, such as fleur-de-lys, balls, crosses, portcullises, or the like, for the purpose of distinction.

The following note occurs in the Court minutes of 1659:—"It beinge put to most voyces whether there should bee a Cullors flyinge on the head of the Company or not upon the By Days it was carried in the affirmative and that they bee of the Companyes Cullor w^th^ a Cross for Distinction in forme of a Lt: Collo^lls^: Cullo^rs^." Most probably the Company's colour, referred to above, was red. An entry in the Vellum Book records the gift, in 1635, of "red Colours with a Red Cross therein."

CHAPTER V

1660 TO 1701

FOLLOWING on the restoration of the Monarchy, King Charles II entered London on May 29th, 1660, amid unprecedented popular rejoicings. The same City which had been a bulwark of the Parliamentary cause now took the lead in greeting the son of the deposed King. Sick of the tyranny of Parliament and a military dictatorship, the people of London threw off the trappings of Puritanism and welcomed the King to his own again with lavish display.

It is a little difficult to discover what part the Artillery Company took in the military procession which was the centrepiece of the day's ceremonies. Doubtless many of our members were on duty with the Trained Bands. The Green Regiment formed a Guard of Honour at Southwark Bridge, where the King entered the City, and we are told that these troops, " who by the order of their Officers, had presented to His Majesty as he passed the Butt end of their Musquets, gave and discharged a great many Vollies of shot " after the royal cortège had passed. This seems to be a very early instance of the " Present Arms." The remaining five regiments of Trained Bands were lining the streets.

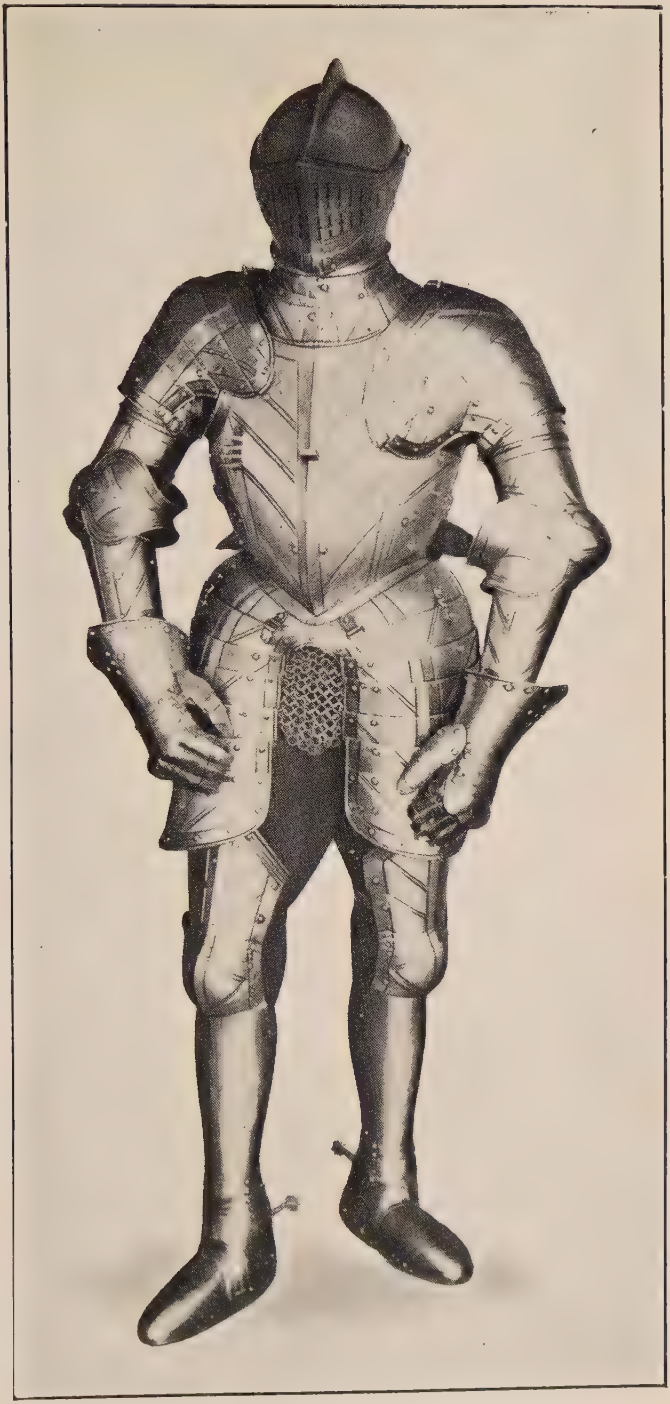
Those members of the Company who were not officers of the Trained Bands must have been somewhere in the procession, but the regimental records are vague on the subject, merely mentioning the intention of the Company to march on that day and to entertain General Monk afterwards. It is recorded elsewhere that a portion of the procession assembled in the Artillery Ground; and it is possible that " the gallant troop of gentlemen in cloth of silver, brandishing their swords, and led by Major General Brown" were the Artillery Company, though unknown to the contemporary writer. Brown was a leading member of the Company, and became Lord Mayor later in the year. But perhaps the Company can be better identified with "the troop led by Alderman Robinson (the President of the Company) in buff coats, with cloth of silver sleeves, and very rich green scarves." Buff coats were certainly the correct wear in the Company at that period, and the writer inclines to the theory that these were the Gentlemen of the Artillery Company.

The roll of membership during the two decades following the revival of the Company under Cromwell furnishes an interesting study of the trend of public opinion during that period. At first only those citizens who were known to be well affected to His Highness the Lord Protector were admitted as members, but the changed ideas which brought about the Restoration are reflected in the records of the Regiment. Naturally enough, the verdict of the country brought about certain changes in the government and personnel of the Company, due to the retirement of fanatical Puritans and the accession of staunch royalists, yet the majority of the Court of Assistants and other officials continued to serve under the monarchy and took the oath of allegiance to King Charles. The Minute of the Court on this subject runs as follows: "*Att a Court of Assistants of the Artillery Company held att ye Greate James Taverne B*^{pps} *gate Streete W*th*in the* 17*th January* 1660. It is Ordered and agreed upon by this Court that the Gentlemen members of the Artillery Company doe take the Oath of Allegiance upon the General Eleccon day." No less than 220 new members were admitted in 1660 against a total of 70 in the preceding year, but no record was kept of resignations, so that it is impossible to say to what extent the members of the Company complied with the above order. No doubt the prominent share taken by the Company in the several public ceremonies in the City was partly responsible for the increase of admissions.

For the first time we are now given an inkling of the methods of recruiting then employed. In 1661 members of the various City Wards were appointed to call upon "inhabitants of ancient standing" and to invite them to join the Company. Each candidate had to be recommended by a member, and the names were recorded in the Minute Books of the Court for the first time.

At a General Court held on June 26th, 1660, His Royal Highness the Duke of York was elected "Commander-in-Chief" of the Company, he being the first and last holder of that title. His successor, William III, styled himself Captain-General, which latter designation has survived to the present day. The Duke not only accepted the proffered rank, but took considerable interest in the Company. He almost invariably attended the annual feasts, and it was the custom for a special deputation of the Court of Assistants to report to him the results of the election of officers each year. His Royal Highness was prompt to show his displeasure when an election did not meet with his approval. In 1677 a prominent member of the Company, Sir Thomas Player, was re-elected Leader, a position he had held continuously since 1669. On hearing of this, the Duke "declared his displeasure," stating that Sir Thomas "had behaved himself so that no honest man ought to countenance him." Wherein this gentleman had offended we are not told; but he was acquainted with the Royal "disproval," and never led again. In fact, from that time onward the appointment of Leader was allowed to lapse.

The King was entertained by the City to dinner at the Guildhall in July of this year. On that occasion, says a contemporary writer, "the Gentlemen of the Artillery, led by the Valiant and Learned Lord Lucas, at *Cheapside*, opened to the left and right and guarded both sides of the way, while His Majesty passed through." Another chronicler relates that "after the Banquet, the Gentlemen of the Artillery, placed from the South end of the Old Jury to the West end of *Cheapside* with Trophies and Trumpets, received his Majesty." Apparently the Lord Mayor accompanied the royal procession back to Whitehall, the Com-



THE SUIT OF HORSEMAN'S ARMOUR MADE BY JACOBE OF GREENWICH CIRCA. 1560, REFERRED TO IN THE MINUTES OF THE COURT OF ASSISTANTS OF FEBRUARY 1st, 1660, AND STILL IN THE POSSESSION OF THE REGIMENT

pany, meanwhile, "eagerly awaited his Lordship's return, which, being discovered, a volley is given, and every man departeth to his home."

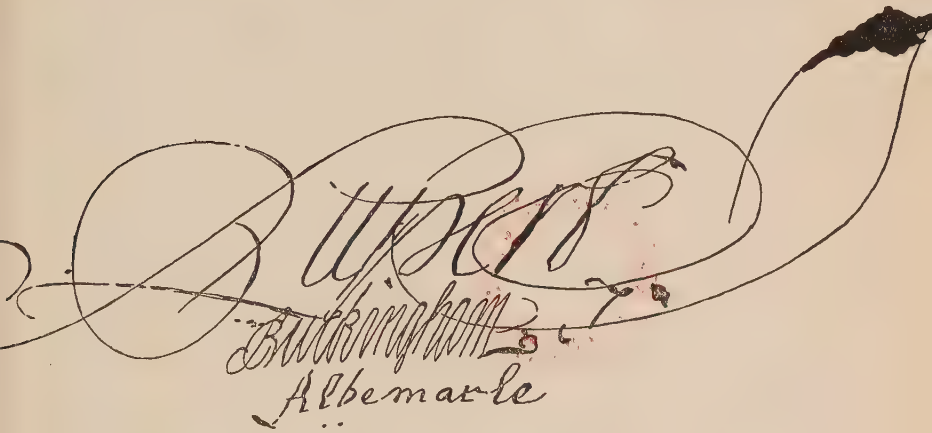
In October, Sir Robert Brown, a member of the Company, became Lord Mayor, and the Company marched in front of his procession from St. Paul's Wharf "to shew their affection and loyalty." On this occasion they were led by Sir John Robinson, Lieutenant of the Tower and President of the Company, "in his scarlet gown and sword."

A line in the Court Minute Book of February, 1660, sanctions the payment of £3 10*s*. to the Armourer for cleansing a number of corselets and "one Gilt capape (cap-à-pie) Armer." This is the earliest known reference to the magnificent suit of tilting armour which is still one of the two most cherished possessions of the Company. Experts tell us that the suit was wrought by Jacobe of Greenwich *circa* 1555–60 and that it is the earliest known work attributed to that celebrated craftsman. The suit is made for a man about 5 feet 6 inches in height, and is furnished with a mezail (or reinforcing face guard) and grand guard (extra protection for the chest and throat when jousting). The decorative channels with which the suit is enriched still show traces of the gilding, which was last renewed in 1787. The wooden tilting lance which has been in the possession of the regiment for at least two hundred years may quite possibly have belonged to the original owner of the suit, but who this individual was it is quite impossible to say. As the suit is of the finest workmanship, he must have been a person of some importance. The writer is inclined to attribute the ownership to Sir Peter Mewtes, a Master General of the Ordnance and Ruler of the Guild of St. George about the time the suit was made. He was killed at the siege of Calais in 1558, and it is not beyond the bounds of probability that his tilting suit remained at the old Armoury in Bishopsgate, where tournaments occasionally took place. In the year 1658 certain officers of the Company were detailed to superintend the removal of the arms and lumber from the Old Armoury prior to its sale, and

WALTHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

of Sir George Whitmore, Lord Mayor of London in 1631–1632. The original carriage way to the house was still in use as a private approach when the estate was held on lease by the grandfather of Cecil Rhodes and can even now be recognised as Whitmore Road, Hoxton.

The particular reason of the Company's march to this spot lay in the fact that it occupied a central position in the old archery fields, many of the stone marks or rovers standing in its grounds. The assertion of ancient rights and the removal of encroachments were the important features of the exercise, and many were the disputes which arose in later days as brick-fields, buildings and enclosed gardens began to interfere with the right of way from one mark to another.



Rupert

Buckingham

Albemarle

THE SIGNATURES OF PRINCE RUPERT, THE SECOND DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM AND THE FIRST DUKE OF ALBEMARLE.

From the Vellum Book.

The Company now found itself in great favour at Court, and many of the nobility and gentry of the royal household enrolled themselves as members. Prince Rupert, the dashing Royalist leader, joined in 1664, bringing with him George Monk, first Duke of Albemarle, the Earl of Sandwich, patron of Pepys and a famous admiral, and Lord Craven. These were followed shortly afterwards by James, Duke of Monmouth, the

Duke of Ormonde, the Earl of Manchester, (an old Parliamentary general, then Lord Chamberlain), the Earl of Anglesey and the second Duke of Buckingham. Then on the lists of Stewards for the years 1677 to 1682, eight of whom were

Monmouth

The Duke of Monmouth's Signature in the Vellum Book.

"nobly pleased to bear the charges of the Feast" each year, we find the names of the Marquis of Worcester (afterwards first Duke of Beaufort), the Earls of Ossory, Feversham, Shrewsbury, Mulgrave, Thanet, Oxford and Arundel, with

JChurchill

Signature of John Churchill, afterwards first Duke of Marlborough.

the Lords Newport, Hawley, Berkeley, Lumley, Allington, Paston and Falkland.

The signatures of all these noblemen appear in the Old Vellum Book of the Company, together with those of many

Sep·13
1676 Chr· Wren

Christopher Wren's Signature in the Vellum Book.

other distinguished men of the period who do not appear to have been actually elected members, but were probably guests of honour at the Company's feasts. Among these latter are John Churchill, the famous Duke of Marlborough, Christopher Wren the architect, Vauban, the great French engineer, William, second Earl of Denbigh and an ancestor of the present Colonel

Commandant, the Earl of Rochester, Peircy Kirke, the notorious colonel of "Kirke's Lambs," and a host of others, including practically every leading sailor, soldier, courtier and statesman of the day.

A curious account of one of the Company's "General Days" in 1665 is to be found in the Domestic Series of State Papers (Chas. II, Vol. CXX). On this occasion the troops, instead of being divided into the usual sides of "Army" and "Revolting Party," assumed the titles of "Greeks" and "Romans," the officers being allotted classical pseudonyms for the occasion. The exercise was performed in the Artillery Ground and the fields and passes leading to it from Moorgate. The "Designe" explains that a Roman army, under Albus Regalius Turre (Sir John Robinson) is invading Greece. After forcing the passes into that country, the invaders defeat the Greek army, which retires into Dyrrachium. The Romans besiege the city, beat off a relieving army and finally carry the town by storm.

Then follows "The Action." The Company march forth of the Artillery Garden, through Cripplegate into Cheapside, up Cornhill to the Lord Mayor's, whence "after the volleys Given" (the usual salute to the Lord Mayor) they proceed to Moorgate. The Romans are drawn up in the ditch outside the city wall, but the Grecians, under Philopantus (Sir George Smith) carry straight on until they come to the stile that leads into the second field, where they form up. Then the battle begins. With pike and musket the Romans "force the passes" through the fields and oblige the enemy to retire up the (City) Road. Finally dislodging the Grecian musketeers from a strong point by the corner ale house, the victorious Romans enter the gate of the Artillery Ground pell mell with the flying rearguard of the enemy ("Noate that in this part of the action the officers are to have a greate care that no mischief is done").

The armies are now drawn up in battle array facing one another at the full length of the field. And now, says the order of the day, "is the refreshing tyme, where the Commanders are to have a great care that noe excesse be suffered."

Having "well refresht themselves," the opposing forces fight a pitched battle for an hour and a half ("Noate, in firing the Officers are by no meanes to hurry the souldiers"), at the end of which the Greeks make good their retreat into the City. The Romans lay formal siege to the stronghold; their Pioneers throwing up lines of circumvallation, including the necessary trenches, half moons and square forts, sited with due regard to the danger of attack by a relieving force. They open fire on the town ("Noate that the Musqueteers now must load with a very full charge"), beat off an attempted relief, repulse a sally from the beleaguered garrison, and, as a grand finale, storm the citadel.

The description of the assault is of considerable military interest and merits complete reproduction:—

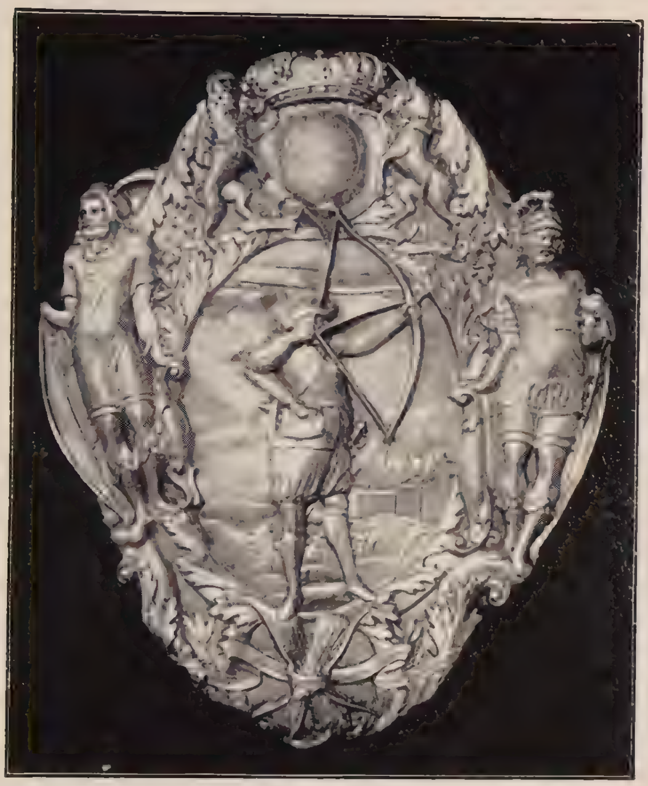
"The Storme is to be put in execution after this manner. From each quarter of the Leaguer the parties to fall on shall be thus ordered. The officer that commands the Quarter is to lead them on. First sixe musquetts in two files, who, in falling on, are to fire point blank: then sixe pikemen in two files, their Pikes comported, carrying on their Pikes each three bavins;[1] then two pioneers with pickaxes; then two pioneers each a ladder; then sixe musquetts in two files, who in falling on are to fire obliquely. The first musquetts, when they come neere the Moate, are to open outwards, and the Pikemen having taken their bavins from their Pikes are to throwe them into the Moate, over which the Pioneers passe; and having dig'd downe some of the enemy's lyne they place the ladders at the breach, the pikes and musquetts are to presse on and enter mixt. The parties being all thus disposed the signal for falling on shall be a wispe of strawe flaming on the head of a Pike advanced in the South Quarter.

"The Grecians, after a stout resistance, are beaten from their Out-workes; they retire into the Citty, and place themselves on the Walls, resolving to defend it to the utmost.

"The Romans having thus gained the Out-workes, they make their approaches neere the Walls, whereby most of the enemy's shott are rendered uselesse. Here both parties doe

---

[1] Bundles of brushwood.



THE BRAGANZA SHIELD

PRESENTED TO THE FINSBURY ARCHERS BY QUEEN CATHERINE
(OF BRAGANZA), 1676

WALTHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

liberally tosse their hand granadoes at each other for neare a quarter of am houre, during which tyme the Romans sinke a mine under the South part of the Wall; and having put all things in readinesse for a Second storme, the mine is sprung. Altus Longinus Naso, with his party presently falls on at the breach.

"The other Parties of the Romans are to bring on their Ladders; the Pikemen are to mount first, armed with swords and Pistolls, or halfe Pikes.

"The Grecians make a desperate opposition; but, overpowered, they are beaten, from their Walls.

"The Romans enter on all Quarters, and put all to the sword but such as begg for quarter."

On June 29th, 1665, the usual drills were ordered to be suspended on account of "the great sickness" known to posterity as The Plague and which is computed to have swept away 1,000,000 persons. The arms were sent to Guildhall for safe custody, and for months the Artillery Ground was deserted. The casualties caused by the pestilence among members of the Company must have been very heavy. Of the officers elected for that year, ten are noted in the books as having died before the next annual Court.

An attempt to form a plague pit in the ground was happily frustrated by the exertions of the President, Sir John Robinson, who, for his services in this connection, received the thanks of the Company and had his named inscribed in the Vellum Book in letters of gold. The plot of land to the north of the ground was actually purchased by the Corporation and enclosed for use as a burial ground, but, the plague abating, it was not used as such at the time. Later it was leased to a Mr. Tindall and taken into use as a burial ground for Dissenters. John Bunyan, Daniel Defoe and several of the Wesleys lie buried there.

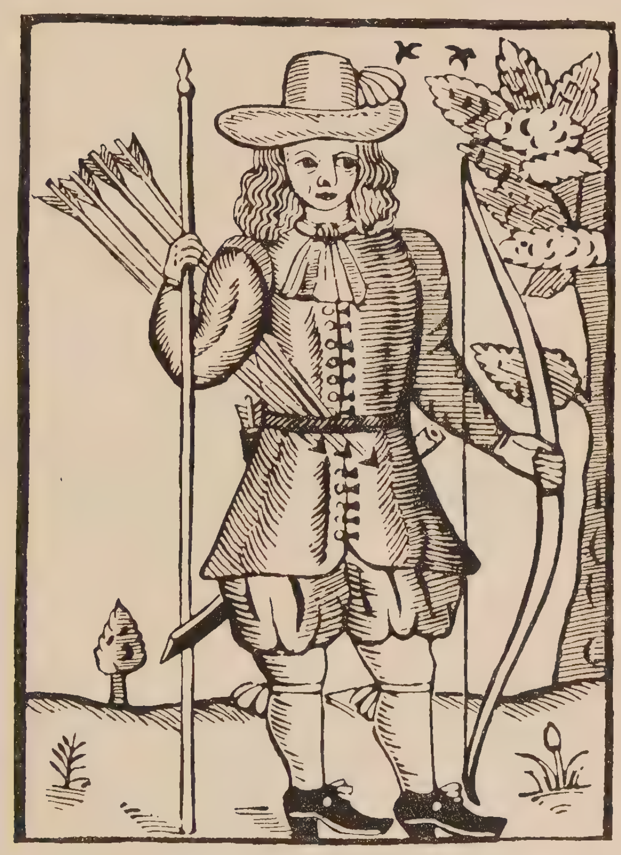
In the following year the exercises again suffered interruption, this time on account of the Great Fire of London, which broke out on September 2nd and laid two-thirds of the city in ashes. The records of the Company contain only the most casual references to this disaster, but it is more than probable that its members were mustered for the maintenance of order and the prevention of looting. It is certain that the Artillery Ground must have presented a scene of great activity for some weeks, as the Court of Aldermen gave to freemen of the city whose premises had been gutted permission to erect booths or tents in the ground (and other places) for the pursuit of their trades and occupations. It was also ordered that all salvage should be brought to the Armoury to be sorted and inventoried for restoration to the rightful owners.

On September 20th the Court of Assistants ordered " that the breach made in the wall of the Artillery Garden in the tyme of the late dreadfull fire be forthwith made up," but it is doubtful if this breach was the direct result of the fire; more probably it was an opening made for the use of the temporary occupants of the ground. Apparently it was thought necessary at the time to remove the Company's valuables, as an entry in the cash books shows a disbursement of 10 shillings " for saving the trophyes " during the fire.

The Company appears to have almost invariably attended as a bodyguard to the Lord Mayor on the day he was sworn in at Westminster. They usually met His Lordship as he landed from his barge at one of the City wharves and saluted him with three vollies. Contemporary writings refer to the Company on these occasions by such high-sounding titles as " The Military Glory of this Nation," and " The Warlike Honour of this Nation, Bravely Reviewed." On some occasions they were accompanied by the Finsbury Archers, a body then commanded by Sir R. Peyton, a member of the Company, and who seem to have had the privilege of shooting in the Artillery Ground. This body is referred to as " a most heroic rarity; viz.: gentlemen Archers completely armed with long-bows and swords, arrows and pallisades,[1] with hats turned up at the outside, and tied with large knots of green ribbon." Perhaps some little jealousy was felt by members of the Company concerning this counter-attraction to the " Military Glory, etc.," for on one occasion they were asked to draw up elsewhere than in the Artillery Ground, and at another time it was suggested that some course should be taken to hinder the Archers from marching, " but few of them being citizens." Raikes states that these Finsbury Archers were afterwards incorporated with the Company, but quotes no authority for this conclusion. The point is, at least, doubtful.

---

[1] Stakes pointed at both ends for defence against cavalry.



A Finsbury Archer.

Note the pointed stake or 'palisade.'

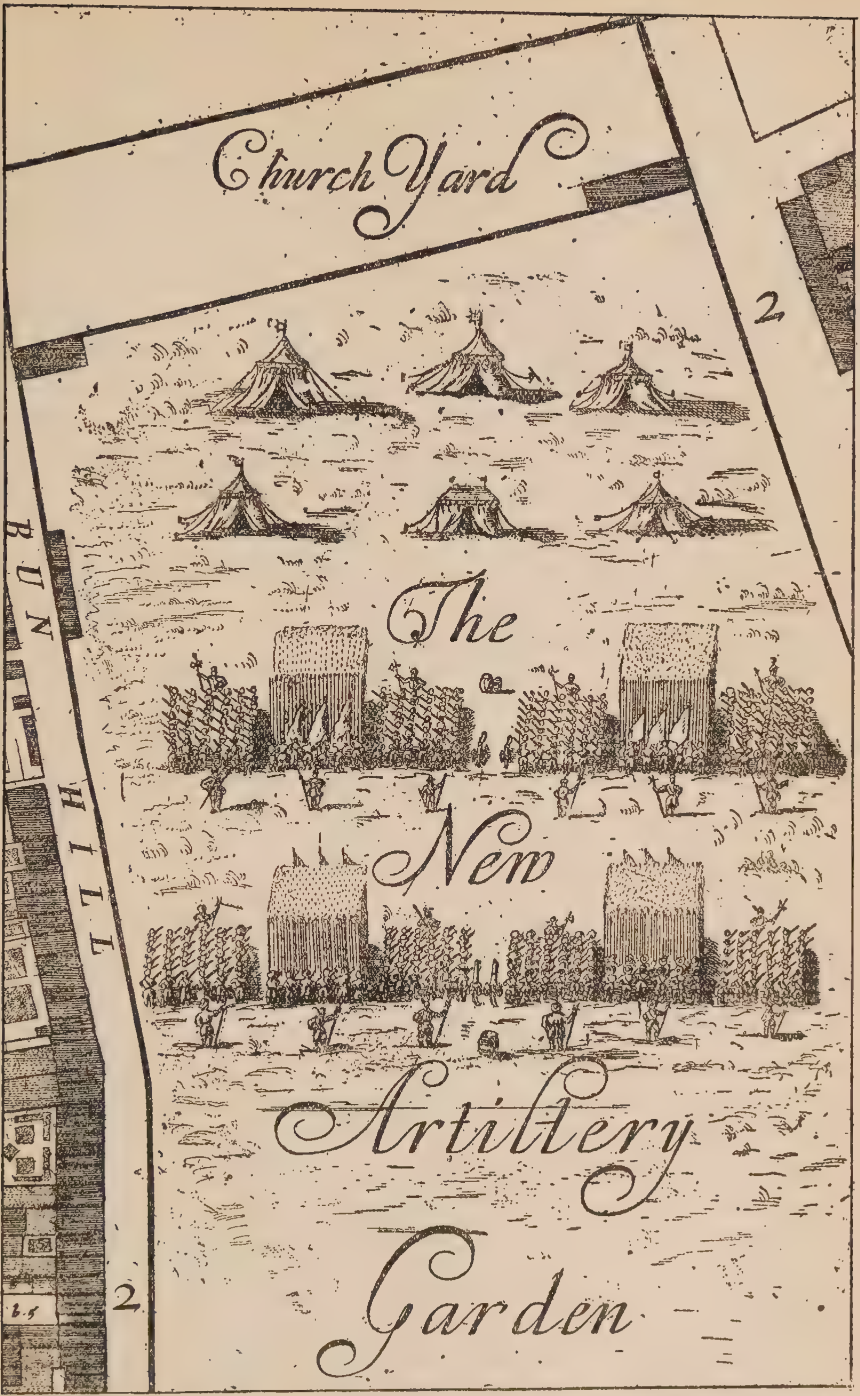
A passage in Tatham's " London's Triumphs," published in

1664 and containing a description of the Lord Mayor's Procession in that year, states that His Lordship, "being landed at Baynard's Castle, the Gentlemen of the Artillery are there ready to receive him, Commanded by the right Worshipful and much deserving Sir Robert Peake, Knight, Vice-President of the Artillery Ground." This Robert Peake became a member of the Company in 1635. On the outbreak of the Civil War he took up arms on the Royalist side and acted as Lieutenant-Governor of Basing House, Hampshire, during the celebrated and protracted siege of that fortress, for which service he was knighted by Charles I in person in 1645. On the surrender of Basing House, Peake was imprisoned in London and was subsequently banished for refusing to take the oath of allegiance to the Commonwealth. At the Restoration he was elected Vice-President and Leader of the Artillery Company. In private life he was a print-seller in Holborn.

Sir Robert died in 1667. In his will, which provided for £500 to be expended on his funeral, the following paragraph occurs: "Item to the Gentlemen exercising armes upon the Artillery Grounds London Provided that two hundred of them under armes doe accompany my Funerall I give Fifty Pounds to bee payd in to their President or Trer." However, in a codicil dated after the Great Fire the expense of his funeral is reduced to £200, "it haveinge pleased God to Consume my houses and Tenements att Holbourne Conduitt . . . but still desiring my Funerall may bee attended by ye Artillery Company in armes in such numbers as they conveniently can."

The Company attended the funeral of the old Royalist at the Church of Saint Sepulchre, and "gave there five vollyes." The reason for the departure from the usual procedure of three volleys is not clear. Nine extra drums and a fife were used on this occasion, and twelve pioneers were employed "to clear the way with brooms for the Company to march."

The training of the Company during this period consisted of weekly parades during the summer months, at which members were taught the postures of the pike, the musket and rest, and


Church Yard
2
The New Artillery Garden
BUN HILL
2
b.5

THE ARTILLERY GROUND IN 1677, FROM THE SURVEY BY OGILBY AND MORGAN, SHOWING FOUR REGIMENTS OF PIKEMEN AND MUSKETEERS DRAWN UP IN BATTLE ARRAY.

Note the old Armoury in the N.W. corner.

the musket and half pike; a number of "Ordinary Days" in the Ground, when Members of the Court of Assistants filled the post of Leader in turn; and several "General Days" in each year. These General Days took various forms. On one of them it was the yearly custom for the Company to march through the City "in a regimental way." This meant that the body marched as a completely equipped battalion, preceded by pioneers bearing the implements of their office and by additional drums and fifes. The principal officers were attended by marshals armed with truncheons. One of the duties of these officials was to keep the crowd from breaking the ranks, and on one occasion the Company had to pay a surgeon's bill "for cureing the man's head broke by the marshal on the last general day." But the particular feature and glory of these marches must have been the "trayne of artillery" which invariably accompanied the regiment on these occasions. In 1670 the expenses of this train, including Gunners, Matrosses and Firelocks, amounted to £20. These Matrosses (from the Dutch *matroos*) were unskilled soldiers appointed to assist the Gunners in handling their weapons. The term will be encountered again more than a hundred years later in this history. The Firelocks were the escort to the guns, armed with the new firelock or fusil instead of the musket.

In 1674 the six field guns and two wagons were attended by 24 marshals in buff coats, armed with blunderbuses, and in the same year it was ordered "that all Gent. handling musketts on extraordinary days bee desired to provide themselves with Bright Headpieces and Plumes of Red Feathers, it having bin the Ancient and constant Custom for the musketeers to march so Accoutred."

It is a pity that detailed accounts are lacking of the social side of the Company's activities in the reign of the Merry Monarch. It is only in the old account books that we encounter items with a bearing on the festive aspect of those days: "P^{d}. for wine coming back from Whitehall—2/-; P^{d}. coach home from the Devill taverne—1/-; five shillings given to the

Yeoman of the wine seller"; such entries lend a human touch to the long list of disbursements to pioneers, drummers and the like—and there is one which appears to refer to a good old English custom: "2/6 to Mr. Weeks his mayde Jone for kissing Sr John Robinson."

In the lists of Stewards for 1677 appears the name of "The Hon^ble^ Samuel Pepys Esq. Secretary to the Rt. Hon^ble^ the Lords of the Admar^ty^ of England." The celebrated diarist had already been associated with the Company for some years, as he signed the Vellum Book in 1669, the same year in which his failing sight had compelled him to abandon his famous cypher diary. The last entry in that unique specimen of literature is dated 31st May, so that he must have become a member of the Company later in that year, there being no reference whatever to this event in his writings. If only his eyesight had served him for another few years the records of the Company would doubtless have been enriched by his intimate descriptions of feasts and field days. But it was not to be and we must rest content with a faded signature in the Vellum Roll and the mental picture of the immortal Samuel, his best periwig crowned with a wreath of laurel, and bearing in his hand the gilded staff, emblem of his office as a Steward of the Artillery Company.

S Pepys.

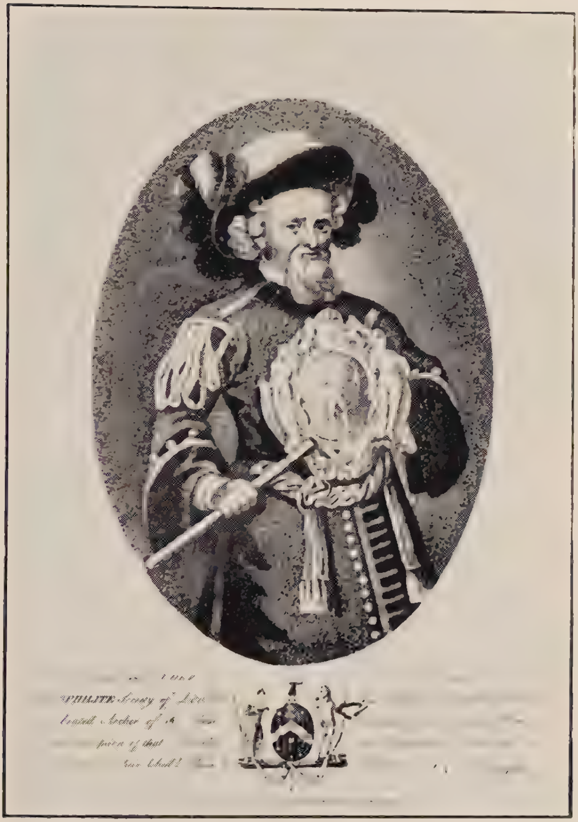
SIGNATURE OF SAMUEL PEPYS.
From the Vellum Book.

Every year the Company tendered their services as an escort to the Lord Mayor elect, and the offer was usually accepted. John Tatham, whose "London's Triumphs" consist of descriptions of the Mayoral Pageants written up year by year, records that in 1678 his Lordship landed at Blackfriars on his return from being sworn in at Westminster. There he was saluted by "the military glory of this nation, the company of artillery men, they being all in their martial ornaments of gallantry, some in buff, with head-pieces, many of them massy silver." The procession then marched to Cheapside, where several elaborate pageants were displayed, and afterwards to Guildhall, where his Lordship was saluted by the Company "with three volies more, which concluded their duty."

It seems to have been necessary to mount a guard in the Ground for the safe custody of the arms during periods of popular unrest. For example, in 1679, the year of the "Habeas Corpus" Act, it was ordered "that the Clarke procure nine men beside himselfe, to keepe wach in the Artillery ground to secure the Armes, and to pay each man two shillings and six pence and likewise to provide powder Mach and Bullett for them." This may have been a new departure, for only four years previously the Beadle had been directed to move the arms from the Artillery Garden to Guildhall "in case any Tumult bee in the Holydays."

The Annual Feast and Sermon was still the outstanding feature of the Company's activities and was invariably attended by Royalty, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and many of the nobility and gentry of the Court. The Minutes of the Court of Assistants contain little information beyond the names of the Stewards, but an account of the Feast of 1679 happily survives in the pages of the London Gazette of that year. It reads as follows:—

"London, Octob. 21. *This day the* Artillery Company *kept their Annual Feast at* Merchant Taylors Hall. *In the morning they met in the* Guildhall, *and went to* Bow-Church, *where the Earl of* Ossory, *and the Earl of* Feversham, *out of a particular respect to the Company, met them, and after Sermon, marched with the other Stewards, which were Colonel* Legge, *Sir* Richard How, *Sir* John Chapman, *Capt.* Dodson, *for Sir* Robert Holmes, *Major* Horne, *Captain* Hudson, *with Gilt Staves in their Hands* ;



SIR WILLIAM WOOD, MARSHAL OF THE FINSBURY ARCHERS CIRCA 1670-80, WEARING THE BRAGANZA SHIELD AS HIS BADGE OF OFFICE

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

after whom followed the Lord Mayor, the Court of Aldermen, the Recorder, and the two Sheriffs in their Scarlet Gowns, the Court of Assistants, and the rest of the Company. Being come to the Hall, they found there his Royal Highness, (whom they had prayed to Honor them with his Presence), attended by many of the Nobility, and other Persons of Quality. The cheif Officers made their Compliments to his Royal Highness, Kissed his Hand, and Presented to him, as their Captain, their Ensigns, which they first laid at his Feet. Then his Royal Highness went to Dinner at a Table at the upper end of the Hall, at which the Lord Mayor, the Nobility, and other Persons of Quality, likewise sate, the rest of the Company being at four other Tables. The Entertainment was great and splendid, and all things performed with great Order and Nobleness. Then, according to Custom, the new Stewards were chosen; which are, the Lord Marquis of Worcester, *the Earl of* Shrewsbury, *the Earl of* Mulgrave, *the Earl of* Berkeley, *Sir* —— Raymond, *Sir* Simon Lewis, *the Sheriffs, Sir* Ben. Newland, *and Captain* Ben. Harvey. *After Dinner his Royal Highness returned to Whitehall, leaving the Company extremely pleased with the Honor he had done them.*"

So much for the official description. But the following extract from a private letter, written from the viewpoint of a disaffected citizen, throws a different light on the event and affords evidence of the growing unpopularity of the royal duke and heir presumptive:—

" You may wonder, after the citizens' address to the Lord Mayor for increasing the City Guards on account of the Duke's presence at Court, that the Artillery Company, which contains about 700 citizens, should invite the Duke to a public entertainment. The Stewards chosen, both for last year and the year ensuing, consist of as many great courtiers as citizens, and, as they bear all extraordinary charges, they are at liberty to invite whom they please. How then could it be imagined that, when one-half are courtiers and the other half courtly citizens, they would omit anything which might tend to the Duke's interest, as they hoped this would prove, and it is commonly said he gave £200 towards the feast! It was stated that only 128 members were present, but some hundreds of other citizens who had paid the usual ticket money of 2*s.* 6*d.*, when they heard the Duke was going, tore up their tickets; others gave them to their porters, or other mean men, and some sold them for a shilling or sixpence apiece.

"Amongst the healths they drank one to the happy Succession in the Right Line, and it is reported that they drank so many that one of the grave City Sirs lost his beaver hat and gold hatband, and left the greater company to sport with the footboys; and that the Duke promised to defend the Religion established by law, of the Church of England.

"On the Duke's return through the Poultry, a cry arose from many hundreds of spectators, of 'No Pope, No Papist,' as in the morning; when coming through Temple Bar, the people began to hiss.

"This shows how little was gained by this entertainment, which was no more an act of the City than if one of forty-eight Companies had invited him, and demonstrates the affection of the citizens to their Religion and Government."

It is obvious that by this time the disaffection to the royal family in the City was becoming a matter for concern at Court. Steps were taken to influence the election of Lord Mayors and Sheriffs, and in this connection it should be noted that the influence of the Company on all elections in the City had become proverbial, so much so that it became the custom to ask "Who is the Artillery Company for?" Hence it is not surprising that the King, being tolerably satisfied with the existing Court of Assistants, took occasion to prevent their supersession by the issue of the following warrant suspending the right of annual election:—

"CHARLES R.

"Trusty & Welbeloved, Wee greet you well; Whereas Wee are well satisfyed of ye Loyalty and abilities of ye present officers Employed in ye Artillery Company, and are therefore willing, out of Our concerne, and care, for ye good Governmt thereof, that noe alteracon or change bee made therein, by removing any of them out of there Employmts, or Introducing any others; Wee have thought fit hereby to Signify ye same to you, as a matter conducing to our Service, wherein accordingly Wee expect your ready complyance, & soe not doubtíng thereof, Wee bid you farewell.

"Given at our Court, at Whitehall, 9th day of February, $168\frac{0}{1}$, in ye three and thirtieth yeare of Our Reigne.

"By His Majties Comand,
"Conway."

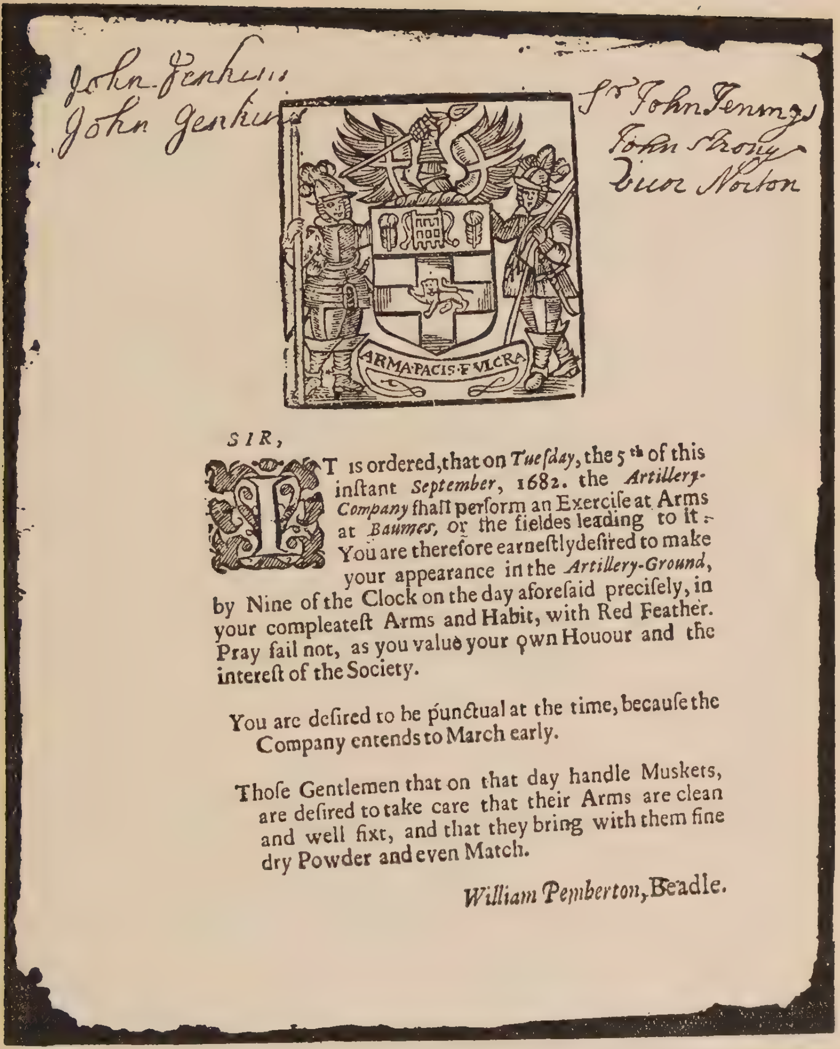
The reading of this letter at an Annual General Court provoked such a storm of opposition to this withdrawal of a long-established privilege that the President adjourned the Court for a week to allow him to make sure of the precise meaning of the warrant. The King's reply was to issue a second order, explanatory of the first, signifying his will and pleasure "that all those who were in any Employment, Trust, Office or Comand in that Our Artillery Company the last yeare, shall remayne and continue soe for ye yeare Ensuing; and in Case of ye Death, or other Incapacity of any of them, that ye Court of Assistants proceed to a free Choice for supplying those Vacancies."

A similar warrant was issued every succeeding year during the remainder of the reign. After the first outburst the Company seems to have acquiesced in the situation. Several members of the Court were thrown out by vote of the remainder, evidently for political reasons, and others elected in their stead.

Here is an account, from the *London Gazette* of 1682, of another of the Company's Feasts:—

"*London*, *April* 20. This day the Artillery-Company kept their Annual Feast at Merchant-Tailors Hall, which His Royal Highness, upon their humble Invitation, was pleased to Honour with his Presence. In the Morning they met, according to custome, in the Guildhall, and went to *Bow Church*, (where an excellent Sermon was Preached by the Reverend Dr. *Sprat*) and from thence to the Hall; the Stewards, which were the Right Honourable the Earl of *Tenet* (Thanet), the Lord Viscount *Lumley*, the Lord *Paston*, the Lord *Allington*, Sir *John Narborough*, *Philip Frowd* Esq; *John Shales* Esq; and Captain *Burden*, marching first, with guilded Staves in their hands; then the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Recorder in their Scarlets, and the Assistants and the rest of the Artillery-Company. About two a Clock his Royal Highness came to the City, being attended by a very great number of Nobility and other Persons of Quality, in their Coaches; In *Cheapside*, Sir *William Dodson's* Company of the Yellow Regiment of the Trained-Bands, was drawn up, and Sir *William* at the Head of it, as his Royal Highness passed by. Being come to the Hall, his Royal Highness was received by the Stewards of the Artillery Company, and by the Master and Wardens of the Merchant-Tailors Company; and after the usual Compliments and Respects to his Royal Highness, as their Captain General, and that the Assistants and others had kissed his Hand, his Royal Highness went to Dinner at a Table at the upper end of the Hall, at which the Lord Mayor, the Nobility, and the Aldermen likewise sate, there being five other Tables for the rest of the Company, which was very numerous. The Entertainment was very Great and Splendid, and the new Stewards being chosen, who are his Grace the Duke of *Albemarle*, the Right Honourable the Earl of *Arundel*, the Earl of *Oxford*, the Lord *Falkland*, *Henry Guye* Esq; *William Leg* Esq; Sir *William Dodson*; and *Charles Duncombe* Esq; his Royal Highness rose from Table, and retired into another Room, where a great many Persons had the Honour to Kiss his Hand; after which, his Royal Highness returned to *Whitehall*, highly satisfied with his Entertainment, and the whole management of it."

An entry in the records of this year throws some light on the subject of the regimental colours in use at the time. It was ordered by the Court "that some Gentlemen waite upon the Six Colls: (of the regiments of Trained Bands) to request each of them to give a Coller for the Artillery Company: The Collers to be as the last are with Porculloses (portcullises) for the first second and third Captaines distinctions." These Colours were used for the first time when the Company waited on the Lord Mayor in 1683. It is recorded that on this occasion the members of the Company "were very gallantly and richly habited; many of the musketeers in buff, with head-pieces of massive silver, all with red feathers, and most of the pikemen, as well as the officers, wore very rich embroidered belts."


ARMA·PACIS·FVLCRA

John Jenkins
John Jenkins

Sr John Jenings
John Strong
Dixon Norton

SIR,

IT is ordered, that on *Tueſday*, the 5th of this inſtant *September*, 1682. the *Artillery-Company* ſhall perform an Exerciſe at Arms at *Baumes*, or the fieldes leading to it:- You are therefore earneſtly deſired to make your appearance in the *Artillery-Ground*, by Nine of the Clock on the day aforeſaid preciſely, in your compleateſt Arms and Habit, with Red Feather. Pray fail not, as you value your own Houour and the intereſt of the Society.

You are deſired to be punctual at the time, becauſe the Company entends to March early.

Thoſe Gentlemen that on that day handle Muskets, are deſired to take care that their Arms are clean and well fixt, and that they bring with them fine dry Powder and even Match.

William Pemberton, Beadle.

A Regimental Order of 1682.

From an original in the possession of the Company.

A custom had arisen about this time of electing as Commanding Officers for each public march or exercise a General and Lieutenant-General and a Major-General. These officers would each have had their special colour borne by an Ensign, the other three colours being allotted to the Captains. Thus the third Captain's colour probably took the form of three portcullises on a red field, with a cross of Saint George in the top corner near the staff.

The expressions " Honourable Company " and " Honourable Court " were first made use of at a Court of Assistants held on February 4th, 1685. In the following year it was ordered that a certain Sam Jones Esq. should be one of the Court of Assistants of " ye Honnerable Artillery Company." This is the first use of the full title by which the Company is now known.

The Duke of York continued to evince a friendly interest in the Company, which may or may not have been due to a desire to soothe feelings which had been severely ruffled by the King's recent attack upon the City Charters. In 1684 he announced his intention of leading the Company in person on one of their General Marches. The following notice was therefore sent to all members :—

> " HIS ROYALL HIGHNESSE having ordered the Artillery Comp^{y}. to march on Thursday the 26th of this Inst. June, And declared to honour the Comp^{y}. wth hys Royall presence, you are therefore desired By the Court of Assistance (as a Member of the said Comp^{y}.) To Appear in the Artillery Garden By 9 of the Clock in the morning in your Compleatest arms and habbit with Red feather."

The orders for the reception of the Captain-General on this occasion throw an interesting light on the ceremonies usual in these circumstances. It was arranged that His Royal Highness " be first entertained in the Principal Tents And That the Presid Vice-Presid and Treasurer present to the Duke Each of them a White Staffe as usually hath bin done. And That

Coll: Freind p^r^sent the Leading Staffe to the Duke, Capt: Perry the Partasin and Capt: Blagrave the Colors." Forty pioneers, twenty-four drummers and six fifers were employed on this occasion.

Any satisfaction in the ranks of the Company at the accession of their Captain-General to the throne of England on the death of his brother in 1685 must have been tempered by reflections on his extreme unpopularity with many of his subjects. Diminishing musters and a steady falling off in membership were already giving cause for uneasiness, but the Court of Assistants put the best possible face on the business and voted a loyal address couched in more than usually fulsome phrases. After protesting that the Company would "with their Swords in their hands defend your Majesties Honour, Person, Crowne, title and Dignity, against all opposers to their last Breath," it concluded with the assurance that "your Majesties most dutyfull Subjects do no longer expect Mercy from Heaven than while they continue firm and steady in their faith and Allegiance to your most Excellent Majesty."

King James's reply to this effusion was to issue a warrant similar to those of the previous four years, again suspending the election of officers.

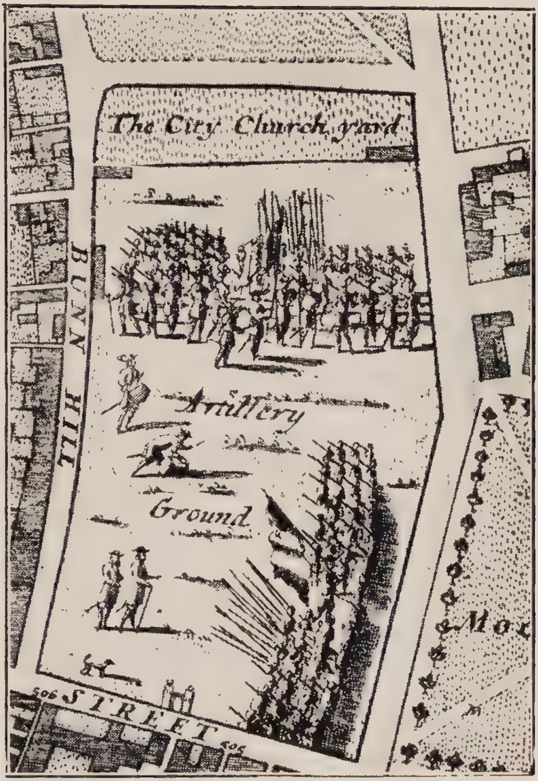
On June 23rd, 1685, the Company marched through the City to pay their respects to the Lord Mayor, and afterwards "performed an Exercise in more fields (Moorfields) and the Artillery garden according to Custome."

On these and similar occasions it was usual to issue rations for the day. The exact nature of the provision is frequently recorded. For one march the Treasurer was ordered to provide "a Pullet, a bottle of Canarey and a bottle of Clarett for each file, being fower deepe, that shall march on yt day." Another entry records that every four men should have "a Bottle of Sack and a Bottle of Claret a Large Fowle and The Bottle for Bread." Apparently the troops were allowed to sell the bottles and buy bread with the proceeds. If the provisions failed, the remaining files received six shillings in money in lieu of rations, and the whole supped after the exercise at the expense of the Officers for the day, each of whom paid a certain fixed sum towards the cost of the march and of the entertainment which invariably followed.

An interesting entry occurs in the Court Book under the date September, 1670, when a Committee was formed to view certain damage done in the Artillery Garden " by the throwing of Granadoes the last general day." This is the second record in the history of the regiment of the use of the hand grenade; the first mention of them occurs in the Greek *v.* Roman exercise of 1665. Grenadiers had appeared in the French army in 1667, but it was not until eleven years later that a grenadier company was attached to each British regiment. The extracts quoted above seem to point to a more or less experimental use of the new weapon by the Company, as no record of the formation of a body of grenadiers occurs until 1686, when one Captain James Kelk applied to the Court for the necessary permission to exercise members of the Company " according to ye methods of ye Granodeeres " and was given liberty to form a Company of " such Gentlemen as are willing to Accowter themselves accordingley." We find a little later that they wore caps of crimson velvet, lined with rich furs. The colour of their uniform for many years was buff, not scarlet.

The hautboy (or oboe) makes its appearance among the military music of the Company about this time. Three of these instruments were used on Lord Mayor's Day in 1686 and they continued to form part of the regimental band for nearly fifty years. They are last heard of in 1731, when it was ordered that the Grenadiers' music should consist of " one courtail (bassoon), three hautboys and no more."

No Feasts were held by the Company during this reign. In 1685 delegates from the Court of Assistants waited on King James to know his pleasure, but were directed to defer the ceremony until further orders " as his lords who were stewards were not at leisure." The orders never came; the custom was allowed to lapse and was never revived.


The City Church yard
BUNN HILL
Artillery
Ground
STREET
Mo

THE ARTILLERY GROUND, 1682

From "A Prospect of London and Westminster," by R. Morden and P. Lea

There is no mention in the Company's records of the chief events of this short and troubled reign. We hear nothing of the rebellion of the ill-fated Duke of Monmouth, the only member of the Company who has suffered death for treason; neither is there any reference to the trial of the seven bishops whose acquittal was received with tumultuous joy by the whole kingdom, nor to the rising flood of disaffection which, culminating with the defection of the army, paved the way to the bloodless revolution of 1688.

To the last King James regarded the Company, or rather their leaders, as his friends and supporters. In October, 1688, a deputation waited on His Majesty to know whether it was his royal will and pleasure that the Company should wait on the Lord Mayor according to custom. The King was graciously pleased to return this answer to the delegate: "That he was heartily glad to see him there and desired him that the Company might march by all means, for that they were honest Gentlemen and that he could trust them."

The Company took no active part in what Highmore styles "the justly celebrated Revolution" of 1689. This is not surprising. If we are to believe Blackwell, the Company was by this time, through the unpopular political views of its chiefs, in a declining condition, having very few members but such as favoured the Court party or "were inclined to Popery." Military training was almost at a standstill and the Company was in danger of suffering a total eclipse.

One of the first acts of King William was to issue the following Royal Warrant restoring the Company's ancient privileges, including the right of annual election of officers which had been abrogated by his two predecessors:—

"WILLIAM R.

"Trusty and Wellbeloved We greet you well. We being well satisfied of the loyalty and good affection of that Our Artillery Company, and being therefore willing to promote the welfare and preservation of it in its ancient good Order and Discipline, Have thought fitt to authorize and impower and accordingly do hereby authorize and impower you frequently to exercise Our said Company in Armes, as well in the ground commonly called the Artillery Ground near Moor Fields, as in other places where they have formerly used to exercise. And We do hereby likewise give you full power and authority to hold Courts free and publick for the annuall choice of Officers, and other occasions, as may be necessary and requisite for the better government of the said Company according to the ancient Rules and practice thereof, in such place and places, and at such time and times as hath been usuall. And for so doing this shall be your Warrant. And so We bid you farewell.

"Given at Our Court at Hampton Court the 22nd day of May 1689 in the First year of Our Reigne.

"By His Maj^{ties} Command,
"SHREWSBURY.

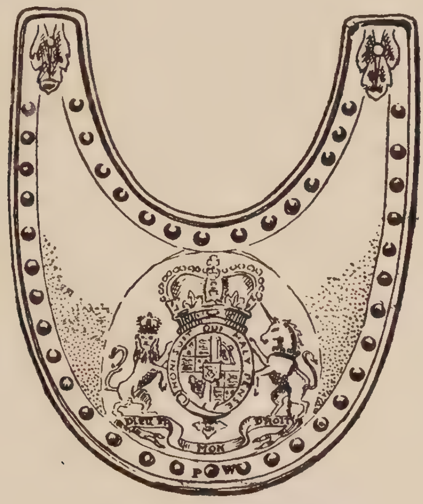
"To Our Trusty and Welbeloved the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, and Court of Assistance of Our Artillery Company of Our City of London."

NOTE:—This is the earliest Royal Warrant of which the Company possesses the original.

Immediately on receipt of the Warrant those members of the Court of Assistants who were well disposed to the new régime met and directed that a General Court should be held at an early date for the election of officers, etc. "as formerly." It is particularly noticeable that a number of the old Court failed to retain their seats at this election. Evidently the Company was considered to have made a fresh start. Arrears of subscriptions were remitted, obviously for the benefit of members who had absented themselves from training for political reasons. Courts began to be held more frequently, at regular intervals, and were much better attended. The copy of the King's warrant in the Minute Book is referred to as "the King's Letter for reviving ye Ground." Even more significant is the fact that a debt was repudiated as having been incurred before the Revolution.

In the following year the Chiefs of the Company waited on His Majesty and humbly entreated him to become their Captain-General. The King thereupon issued a Warrant declaring himself Captain-General and appointing Henry, Duke of Norfolk, to act as substitute during his absence abroad.

William III was no stranger to the Company. In December, 1670, the Company had marched forth to attend upon the "Prince of Orange" on the occasion of his entertainment by the City of London. After the ceremony at Guildhall the Prince had been entertained in the Artillery Ground and had signed the Vellum Book. The only details of this occasion recorded in the Company's books are the payment of the expenses of the march. These include five shillings to a "bagpipe"—the only known instance of the use of this instrument in the history of the regiment.



Officer's Gorget bearing the Arms of William III.
Actual size, 7″ × 6¼″.
From a specimen in the possession of the Company.

In 1690 a grant of £10 was obtained from the Office of Ordnance at the Tower, towards the cost of a new pair of gates for the Artillery Ground. This is the first and only instance of the employment of any public funds (other than those controlled by the Lieutenancy of London) in the maintenance of the Company's property.

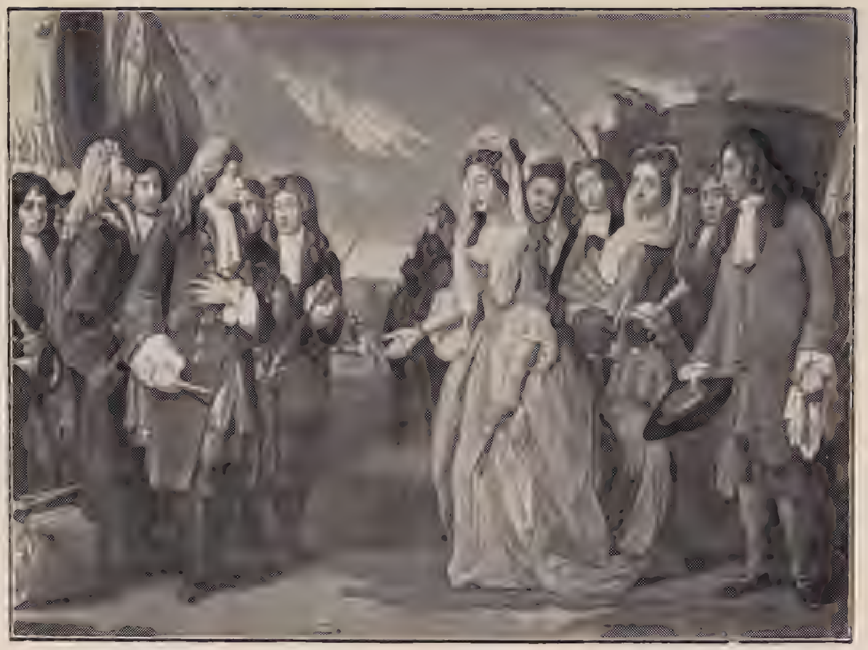
During King William's absence in Ireland in 1690, a Dutch fleet was defeated by the French in the Channel owing to the misbehaviour of an English admiral, who lay with his squadron an idle spectator of the fight. Fearing an attempt at invasion, the City Trained Bands were mustered, 9,000 strong, with six regiments of auxiliaries; but the feared landing was not attempted.

It became necessary about this time for the Court to take steps to prevent damage to the ground and inconvenience to members caused by the practice of the game of Pall Mall. The tenant of the herbage was also warned against the admission of strangers "to try engines" in the ground.

The title of Drum Major was first used in place of Drumbeater in 1692.

Although the Company had attained practically a new lease of life at the beginning of this reign, the influx of members during the next few years hardly came up to expectations. This was particularly the case with regard to the Officers of the Trained Bands of the City and Tower Hamlets, many of whom failed to comply with the ancient custom that they should undergo their military training in the ranks of the Artillery Company. Representations to this effect were made to the King and a Royal Warrant was directed to the Lieutenancy of London recommending "that all the Commission Officers of ye Trained Bands of o^{r} said City may List Themselves members of The said Society, that so by the frequent practice of arms according to their Rules they may be the Better qualified to perform their trust, in their Respective Commands." This recommendation has been incorporated in all subsequent royal warrants to the Artillery Company up to and including that of 1863. Even the royal command did not meet with universal compliance, and for many years it continued to be a sore point with the Company that a minority of the officers of the Trained Bands declined to comply with regulations in this respect.

During the King's absence in Holland, Queen Mary reviewed the City Forces in Hyde Park. This was on May 9th, 1692.



QUEEN MARY REVIEWING THE MILITIA OF LONDON AND WESTMINSTER IN HYDE PARK, 1692

From a mezzotint by V. Green after J. G. Huck. This was the Review at which the Company delivered a loyal address

DEDHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

Six regiments of Trained Bands assembled, 10,000 strong, under the command of Sir John Fleet, Lord Mayor and President of the Artillery Company. The troops were thanked by the Queen, who expressed her confidence in the alacrity of their zeal for the Crown. An engraving in the possession of the Company represents the Queen engaged in conversation with a group of officers on this occasion.

It is not quite clear whether the Company paraded as a body at this review, as the Clerk omitted to write up the Minutes of the Court from March to June of that year, but they were probably in attendance, as they presented an address to the Queen that day, couched in the following terms :—

"Wee your Majestie's most loyall dutyfull and obedient subjects . . . presume to approach the Royall presence to acknowledge your Majesty's care and vigilance in disappointing the designes and mechinations of your most enveterate as well as powerfull enemie the French king, who attempted to invade your kingdoms to support a pretender, whom he hath dignified with the stile and title of King of Great Brittain, in order to amuse your subjects with Fears and jealousies. &c. &c."

The Company continued to "pay their respects" to the Lord Mayor once a year, and in January, 1694, His Lordship invited all the members to dine with him at Grocers' Hall. The orders for this occasion were as follows :—

"*The Method of the Company's March to Dine with the Lord Mayor, as by Sir Matthew Andrews' Order.*

The Beadle and Porter.
The President wth A White Staffe.
The Aldermen and Knights by 2 and 2.
The Treasurer with ye Purse & White Staffe.
The Court of Assistants by 2^{s}.
The Clerk.
The Two Ensignes wth Staves.
The Company Two and Two.
The Lieutenants in y^{e} Reer of all."

The following is a copy of the ticket sent to Members for the occasion:—

"*The forme of ye Tickett for ye Company's Dining with The Lord Mayor.*

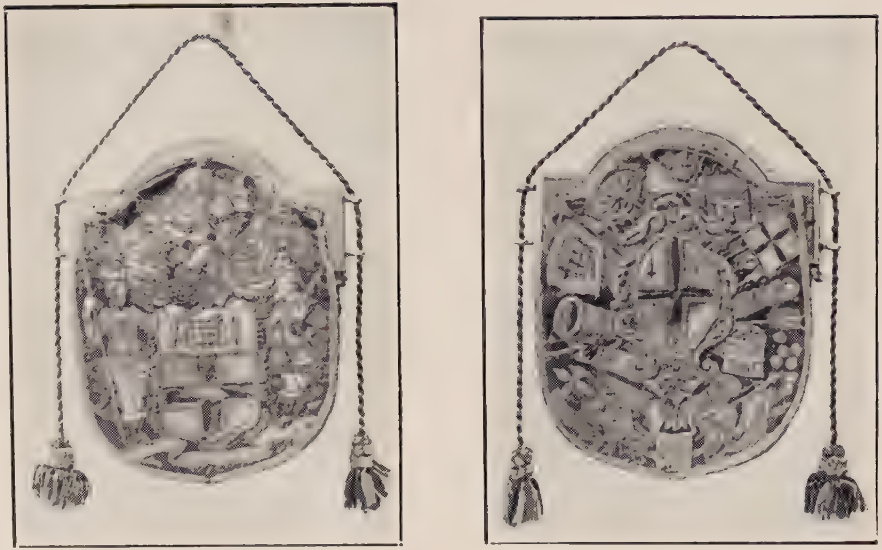
"Sir,

"You being a Member of The Hon^{ble} Artillery Comp^{ny} of London, Are Desired to meet the Presid^{t}, Treasurer, And Court of Assistants and other Memb^{ers} of the s^{d} Society, at Guildhall, on Tuesday the 23 of This instant January at one A Clock Precisely, with your sword and Red feather, thence to march to Grocers Hall, to Dine with the Right Hon^{ble} Sir W^{m} Ashurst, Knight, Lord Mayor of London, and Vice-President of the said Company.

"SAMUEL SMITH, *Clerk*."

Sir Matthew Andrews, who is mentioned above, was then Treasurer of the Company. It was he who presented to the Company the magnificent Leading Staff (since used as a Drum Major's Staff) dated 1693, which is still in the possession of the regiment.

It is not quite clear what use was made of the Purse carried by the Treasurer. From a note in the Court Minutes that "a guinea be allowed for a purse," it would seem either that it was to be presented to someone, or, more probably perhaps, that that sum was to be expended on a purse as the official emblem of the Treasurer of the Company. The latter supposition is supported by the fact that the British Museum owns a purse of crimson satin, emblazoned with the arms of the Company on one side and with the shield of the City of London surrounded by trophies of arms on the reverse. It is dated 1693, and it may be that this specimen is the actual article purchased especially for the above mentioned occasion. On the other hand an earlier minute of the Court records an order "that ye Artillery Companey doe dyne wth my Lord Maior on Tuesday the 5 of May, 1685, and y^{e} there bee a purse provided by ye Clerke to this Hon^{ble} Company too putt the money in, w^{ch} is to be presented to my Lord Maior."



A REGIMENTAL PURSE OF CRIMSON SATIN, EMBROIDERED WIPH THE ARMS OF THE COMPANY AND OF THE CITY OF LONDON, WITH THE DATE 1693. THE ORIGINAL IS IN THE BRITISH MUSEUM

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

At least one member of the Company was killed in action at the siege of Namur (1695). This was Michael Godfrey, deputy governor of the Bank of England, who had visited King William in the trenches to arrange for the loan of a million pounds which formed the foundation of our National Debt. The incident of his death is thus recorded by Macaulay :—" On the seventeenth (July 1695) the first counterscarp of the town was attacked. The English and Dutch were thrice repulsed with great slaughter, and returned thrice to the charge. At length, in spite of the exertions of the French officers, who fought valiantly sword in hand on the glacis, the assailants remained in possession of the disputed works. While the conflict was raging, William, who was giving his orders under a shower of bullets, saw with surprise and anger, among the officers of his staff, Michael Godfrey, the Deputy Governor of the Bank of England. This gentleman had come to the King's headquarters in order to make some arrangements for the speedy and safe remittance of money from England to the army in the Netherlands, and was curious to see real war. Such curiosity William could not endure. 'Mr. Godfrey,' he said, 'you ought not to run these hazards: you are not a soldier; you can be of no use to us here.' 'Sir,' answered Godfrey, 'I run no more hazard than your Majesty.' 'Not so,' said William, 'I am where it is my duty to be; and I may without presumption commit my life to God's keeping: but you——.' While they were talking a cannon ball from the ramparts laid Godfrey dead at the King's feet."

CHAPTER VI

1702 TO 1726

ON the accession of Queen Anne in 1702 the Company hastened to present to the "Illustrious and High Born Princess Anne" a dutiful address couched in the following terms:—

"*To the Most Illustrious and High-born Princess Anne,*
By the Grace of God Queen of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland,
Defender of ye Faith:

"The most humble Address of the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Court of Assistants, and Body of the Artillery Company, in the City of London:

"Permit us, mighty Queen, to condole with the rest of your faithfull Subjects for ye death of our late most glorious and Heroick Sovereign, of immortall Memory, William the Third, the Deliverer of these Nations from impending Slavery and Superstition, the Rescuer and Maintainer of the Liberties of Europe, and Protector of the Protestant Interest in all the parts of the Earth.

"But of all the obligations he laid on the People of England, what we must ever remember with the most feeling sence of Gratitude, is the preserving of your Majesty from being excluded from the throne; your Accession to which we congratulate with the greatest Sincerity, having not only the most rightful and lawfull Title in the World, but as being likewise the Worthiest to succeed our Deceast Monarch, by your unshaken Adherence to the Church of England, your charitable disposition to tender Consciences, your glorious Resolutions of humbling France, of Supporting your Allies, Maintaining the succession of the Crown in the Protestant Line, and incouraging the peaceable Professions of Arts and Trade in the midst of Tumultuous Wars.

"According to the institution of our Company, we promise to do our best in the training your Loyall Citizens to the use of Arms, for the security of your Royal Person, Title and Dignity, and the preservation of those Blessings so much worth Fighting for, which Citizens can only enjoy in a free government, and under so excellent a Prince. And, in all Humility, we pray that your Majesty would be gratiously pleased to appoint us a General, which charge the late King did us the Honour to take upon himself, according to the example of some of your Royal Predecessors: And on our parts we shall never be wanting in Gratitude or Duty, with the Hazard of our Lives and Fortunes, to defend your Cause and Person against the pretended Prince of Wales, and all your Majestie's open or secret Enemies whatsoever."

As a result of these loyal protestations, the Queen was prompt to confirm the ancient privileges of the Company and appointed her husband, Prince George of Denmark, Captain-General. Beyond signing the Vellum Book, this Prince does not seem to have taken any active interest in the Regiment. He died in 1708, and no fresh appointment was made during this reign.

The Company appears to have been in anything but a flourishing financial condition at this time. The Clerk and other officials had constantly to petition for their arrears of salary; the arms were badly in need of repair; and the rent of 6*s.* 8*d.* per annum to the Corporation was five years in arrear. The Court was thus compelled to raise a mortgage on the rent of the herbage of the ground and to obtain loans from Members (at 6 per cent.) in order to pay off debts. Another embarrassment was the threat of proceedings against the Company in respect of the necessary repairs to the paving of the roads adjoining the ground. After showing considerable dexterity in staving off a prosecution, the Company had this paving repaired with "good fast binding Rubbage."

This financial stringency was partly due to the neglect of many of the Officers of the Trained Bands to enrol themselves as Members of the Company, in spite of positive orders from the Court of Lieutenancy to do so. Another cause of insolvency was the refusal of certain gentlemen, chosen as Leaders for the various exercises, to accept the financial responsibility for the expenses of the occasion, thereby throwing additional burdens on the general fund. The excuses put forward in this respect are many and varied. One gentleman craved to be excused, " being to go to ye Bath " to take the waters. Another worthy Alderman refused to lead on the ground that he had no inclination to military affairs and was lame.

Finally the Court decided, with the permission of the Corporation, to lease a strip of ground 90 feet deep adjoining Chiswell Street for building purposes, leaving a space for an entrance to the ground. Advertisements were inserted in the *Daily Courant* and the *Postman*, and a board was set up at the Royal Exchange, offering the sites at 4*s.* per foot per annum. The ground was eventually let at 3*s.* per foot.

William Blackwell, the Clerk of the Company who did so much to restore its prosperity twenty years later, ascribes the unfortunate state of the Company's affairs at this period to political influences, the Court of Lieutenancy, and eventually the Company, having fallen into the hands of " the adverse party." " But," says Blackwell, " the Ministry being again changed, and the Lieutenancy of this City put into the former Hands, the low Party, or *Whigs*, were resolved once more to endeavour the rescuing the Company out of the Hands of the contrary Party ; and at a General Election, held *April* the 27th, 1708, gave almost a total Overthrow to them . . . whereby the Company began again to revive and flourish ; but still the adverse Party used all Ways and Means they could to depress and discourage them. So that when the Ministry and Lieutenancy was again changed after Dr. *Sacheverell's* Tryal they made the greatest Effort that ever was known to gain the Government of the Company at a General Court held *March* 20, 1710 ; but the honest Citizens, observing which way Things were then going, and being resolved to keep that little Privilege they had of exercising Arms, happily prevented them." The worthy Blackwell, it appears, was a Whig in politics. It is, however, quite clear that the government of the regiment was a bone of contention among political factions during this reign, and that the bitterness of party strife was a potent cause of the sorry state into which the fortunes of the Company had fallen.

One regimental custom arose out of all this high feeling. In 1711 the election of officials at the Annual General Court was so keenly contested that a poll was demanded. This is the first record of the use of the ballot on these occasions, it having been the custom, from time immemorial, to vote by means of a show of hands. It is recorded that, on this occasion, "the spirit of opposition carried all parties into the labours of a scrutiny." Here we have the inauguration of the existing method of balloting and the appointment of twelve trusty "scrutineers" to count the votes.

It was also decided, in 1707, that eight members of the Court could form a quorum, elect a Chairman, and proceed to business. This rule still holds good.

An account of an exercise at arms by the Company in 1700 survives in the pages of "The Protestant Mercury." After enumerating the various officers, it proceeds: "The General, having made a review in the Artillery-ground, orders a march to Baums, to preserve the ancient privilege; which orders are accordingly pursued, and the whole body marches in one battalion through the East gate into an open field about half-way thither, where it is drawn up, and the Lieutenant General sent with half the army to the Eastward; at which he is disgusted, and resolves to revolt, therefore possesses several passes through which the General must march to the Southward, and accordingly attacks his van by a detachment of Grenadiers and Musqueteers forcing them to give way; but they making an orderly retreat (by the advantage of a bridge thrown over a morass) gain the open field more Westward, in which the Lieutenant General also draws up in Battalia, which brings them to a general battle, in which the Lieutenant General having the disadvantage, retreats to a strong pass, defending it some time, but being overpowered maintains a running fight to an eminence strongly situated, and with great celerity fortifies it, which the General attacks, and after springing several mines and carrying the outworks, prepares for a general assault, which obliges the besieged to beat a parley, and surrender upon articles."

The ancient privileges mentioned in the above passage refer to the rights of the Company, from time immemorial, to march over and exercise on all the fields extending from the Artillery Ground to Newington Butts. At this period the extent of these fields of exercise was still indicated by some 180 archery marks, consisting of stone pillars with the arms of the Company on a small iron plate and surmounted by a wooden device to indicate the individual mark. These stones served to mark the ranges for the archers, being all set at known distances from each other, measured in scores of yards. They were all named. Some bore very curious titles, such as Speering Sport, Robinson's Leg, Currier's Shave, Theefe in Hedge, Piller of Powles, Maydenblush, etc. Several maps of the archery fields, showing the marks at various periods, are extant and provide an excellent field for antiquarian research. Baums (sometimes spelt Balmes) House was the residence of Sir George Whitmore, a noted Lord Mayor of London. The name will recur frequently in these pages.

Of the military exercises of the Company in this reign but little further evidence remains. Apparently drills were not very well attended, as we read of an order for the repair of 48 Pikes and Bandoliers "in case such a number should come to exercise." On the other hand, as many as 260 Members voted at a General Court, showing the relative interest of the personnel of the Company in matters military and political.

The Company continued to attend the Lord Mayor on the day he was sworn and usually received £30 from that official towards the expenses of the march and subsequent entertainment. In 1702 they attended his Lordship at Blackfriars Bridge accoutred in buff with silver head-pieces. The annual field day at Balmes was continued, as well as the General Marches, and the Public and Private "Leads" in the Ground. The Grenadier Company continued to flourish. There is in the possession of the Company a remarkably well-preserved specimen of a Grenadier's mitre cap of this period. It bears as a badge a portcullis embroidered in silver, surmounted by the crest of the Company, the cypher of Queen Anne appearing below. A very similar specimen is preserved in the Victoria and Albert Museum at South Kensington.

It had been the custom of the Company for some years past to borrow from the Lieutenancy the necessary accoutrements for the grenadiers. In 1711, however, owing to some ill-feeling, the officials of the Lieutenancy placed obstacles in the way of the loan of the equipment for a general march. It was therefore decided to have, instead of Grenadiers, "an advance party of Fusiliers to march at the head of the Company on the General Day." This is the first mention of Fusiliers in connection with the Regiment, but by no means the last. They appear to have taken the place of Grenadiers for a few years, and, on the occasion referred to above, received the allowance of £4 for drums, music, grenades, etc. usually granted to the Grenadiers.

By a stroke of fortune a reproduction of a regimental order of this period has survived in the pages of "The Tatler" of July 12th, 1709. It concerns an Exercise of Arms by the Company, and reads as follows:—

"*White's Chocolate House, July* 12*th.*

"There is no one thing more to be lamented in our nation than their general affectation of everything that is foreign; nay, we carry it so far, that we are more anxious for our own countrymen when they have crossed the seas, than when we see them in the same dangerous condition before our eyes at home; else how is it possible, that on the 29th of the last month, there should have been a battle fought in our very streets of London, and nobody at this end of the town have heard of it?

"I protest, I, who make it my business to inquire after adventures, should never have known this, had not the following account been sent me enclosed in a letter. This it seems, is the way of giving out of Orders in the Artillery Company; and they prepare for a day of action with so little concern, as only to call it, *An Exercise of Arms.*

"*An Exercise at Arms of the Artillery Company, to be performed on Wednesday, June 29th,* 1709, *under the command of Sir* Joseph Woolf, *Kt. and Ald., General;* Charles Hopson, *Esq., present Sheriff, Lt.-Gen.; Capt.* Richard Synge, *Major; Major* John Shorey, *Capt. of Grenadiers; Capt.* Wm. Grayhurst, *Captain;* John Buttler, *Capt.* Robert Carellis, *Captains.*

"*The Body march from the Artillery Ground through Moorgate, Coleman St., Lothbury, Broad St., Finch Lane, Cornhill, Cheapside, St. Martin's, St. Anne's Lane; Halt the Pikes under the wall in Noble St., draw up the firelocks facing the Goldsmiths' Hall, make ready and face to the Left, and fire, and so ditto three times. Beat to Arms and march round the Hall, as up Lad Lane, Gutter Lane, Hony Lane, and so Wheel to the Right, and make your salute to my Lord; and so down St. Anne's Lane, up Aldersgate St., Barbican, and draw up in Redcross St., the Right at St. Paul's Alley, in the rear. March off Lt.-Gen. with half the body up Beech Lane; he sends a subdivision up King's Head Court, and takes post in it, and marches two divisions round into Red Lion Market, to defend that Pass, and seccour the division in King's Head Court, but keeps in Whitecross St., facing Beech Lane; the rest of the body ready drawn up. Then the General marches up Beech Lane, is attacked, but forces the division in the Court into the Market, and enters with three divisions while he presses the Lt.-Gen.'s main body; and at the same time, the three divisions force those of the Revolters out of the Market, and so all the Lt.-Gen.'s body retreats into Chiswell St., and lodges two divisions in Grub St.; and as the General marches on, they fall on his flank, but soon made to give way; but having a retreating place into Red Lion Court, but could not hold it, being put to flight through Paul's Alley, and pursued by the General's Grenadiers, while he marches up and attacks their main body, but are opposed again by a party of men as lay in Black Raven Court; but they are forced also to retire soon in the utmost confusion; and at the same time those brave diversions in Paul's Alley ply their rear with Grenadiers, that with* *precipitation they take to the rout along Bunhill Row. So the General marches into the Artillery Ground, and being drawn up, finds the Revolting party to have found entrance, and makes a show as if for a battle, and both Armies soon engage in form, and fire by Platoons.*"

The comments of the Editor of "The Tatler" on this quaint document are somewhat pungent:—

"Much," he says, "might be said for the improvement of this system; which, for its style and invention, may instruct Generals and their historians both into fighting a battle and describing it when it is over. These elegant expressions, *Ditto—And so—But soon—But having—But could not—But are—But they—Finds the Party to have found, etc.*—do certainly give great life and spirit to the relation. Indeed I am extremely concerned for the Lieut.-Gen., who, by his overthrow and defeat, is made a deplorable instance of the fortune of war, and vicissitudes of human affairs. He, alas! has lost in Beech Lane and Chiswell St. all the glory he lately gained in and about Holborn and St. Giles.

"The Art of subdividing first, and dividing afterwards, is new and surprising; and according to this method, the troops are disposed in King's Head Court, and Red Lion Market: Nor is the conduct of these Leaders less conspicuous in their choice of the ground or field of battle. Happy was it, that the greatest part of the achievements of this day was to be performed near Grub Street, that there might not be wanting a sufficient number of faithful historians, who, being eye-witnesses of these wonders, should impartially transmit them to posterity: But then it can never be enough regretted, that we are left in the dark as to the name and title of that extraordinary hero who commanded the divisions in Paul's Alley; especially because those divisions are justly styled brave, and accordingly were to push the enemy along Bunhill Row, and thereby occasion a general battle.

"But Pallas appeared in the form of a shower of rain, and prevented the slaughter and desolation which were threatened by these extraordinary preparations.

> "'Hi Motus Animorum atq: hæc Certamina tanta
> Pulveris exigui Factu compressa quiescunt.'"

A month later the same publication waxed exceedingly satirical over a gallant major of the Company who had been sent to Birmingham to buy firearms. It is alleged that when the firelocks arrived they were found to be without touch-holes.

One item of military interest remains to be recorded. In 1708 the bayonet made its belated appearance in the armoury of the Company. Invented in 1640, it had first been introduced into the English army in 1673. Then it was withdrawn, only to be re-issued in 1686. Slow as were the Army authorities, the Company were in still less hurry to adopt the new-fangled weapon, and clung with typical conservatism to the pike.

The minutes of the Court of Assistants are disappointingly meagre during this period. Either the Company was entirely engrossed with its own petty affairs or the Clerk was a man of little imagination and less initiative. It is surprising and exasperating to find in the records of a military body no mention whatever of the chief events of those stirring days. For example, at a time when England went nearly mad with delight at the news of Marlborough's great victory at Blenheim, the first serious check to the conquering career of the French armies for nearly forty years, either the Court made no mention of the matter or the Clerk considered it unworthy of record. The minute books are full of the election of officers, deputations to wait on the Lord Mayor, and petty domestic details. Not one word, however, of the magnificent series of victories which raised the military reputation of this country to a position it had not attained for nearly three hundred years.

The science of marksmanship was not wholly neglected in these days. Leave had been given by the Court, as far back as 1664, to the Gentlemen of the Garden to set up a butt in the ground at their own expense, but unfortunately we have no record of its use. Again in 1700 permission was given to those members willing to bear the charge to erect a butt in the ground to shoot at with ball. This butt was situated in the north-east corner of the ground near the north wall. It was 36 feet long and 24 feet high and was for the use of members only, " but not to be shott at in time of the Company's Tuesday Exercises."

A copy of " The Postman " dated June, 1703, contains the following notice of a competition on this range :—

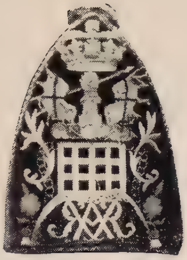
" On Friday, the 16th of this instant, at two in the afternoon, will be a plate to be shot for of twenty-five guineas value, in the Artillery-Ground, near Moor Fields. No gun to exceed four and a half feet in the barrel; the distance to be 200 yards, and but one shot apiece, the nearest the centre to win. No person that shoots to be less than one guinea, but as many more as he pleases to complete the sum. The money to be put into the hands of Mr. J. Jones, at the Lion and Horse-shoe Tavern, or Mr. Turoy, Gunsmith, in the Minories. Note, that if any gentleman has a mind to shoot for the whole, there is a person will shoot with him for it, being left out by mistake in our last."

A contemporary description of the Artillery Company occurs in a work entitled " A New View of London; or, An Ample Account of that City," published in 1708 by R. Chiswell and others. Under the heading of " The Military Government of London " it is stated that " The Artillery Company are of very great authority, having perhaps been a Nursery of Martial Discipline near 2 Centuries. I find by their Constitutions, That the Company was Revived *Anno* 1610, (which implies it to have been long before). . . . Of this Company have been divers of the prime Nobility and Gentry. . . . They do by Prescription, march over all the Ground from the Artillery Ground to *Islington* and *Sir George Whitmore's*, breaking down Gates, &c. that obstruct them in such Marches. . . . They used formerly to have very splendid publick Feasts, when 4 of the Nobility and as many Citizens were commonly Stewards, to which the Principal Nobility and Foreign Ministers were invited. The Number of this Society are uncertain, but they have not long since marched 700. Those admitted pay to the Clerk a Guinea Entrance and 2*s.* 6*d.* *per* Quarter. One of the Court of Assistants leads once in a Fortnight, when it costs him in Treats about 5£. (but it seldom comes to their turn ;) at other times private Persons of the Company lead, according as they are qualify'd. The Company meet every *Tuesday* in the Artillery Ground from *February* to my Ld Mayor's Day, to exercise. The Officers for the City Trained Bands are commonly chosen out of this Society, and with great reason, these being all expert in the exercise of Arms."

In June, 1714, the Court decided that it would be "for the honour and grandiour of the artillery Company to have Accouterments for a body of granadiers to march before them on general marches." This decision was probably the result of the recent trouble with the Lieutenancy over the loan of their equipment. A Committee was forthwith authorised to purchase caps, pouches, and slings for fusees sufficient to equip twenty-four grenadiers, two Lieutenants & 2 flankers, with caps and coats for two drummers, the money to pay for these articles to be borrowed "with the best good husbandry possible."

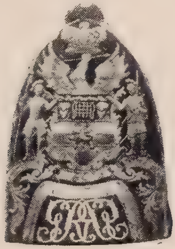
Blackwell states that these caps bore as a motto "The Queen and House of Hanover," thereby speaking the fears and apprehensions of the Company that too many were for *the Queen and Pretender*. He adds that this action on the part of the Company became a matter of national interest, all the newspapers being filled with it, and that "many gentlemen entered themselves members of the Company on purpose the better to qualify themselves to fight for their liberties and properties, which they apprehended were in the utmost danger."

At the death of Queen Anne all doubts as to the question of the succession were set at rest and the country prepared to welcome George of Hanover as its sovereign. Whereupon the Artillery Company resolved to draw up a memorial for presentation to the Lords Regent asking permission for a detachment of the Company "in buff coats, etc.," to march in the procession at the public entry of King George into the City. This request was complied with, and at the next Court it was resolved "that Coll. Robt. Gower, with his body of Granadiers belonging to this Company, doe march in the Cavalcade as set forth by



OFFICER'S CAP OF THE GRENADIER COMPANY, H.A.C., CIRCA 1700

Made of leather and crimson velvet. Embroidered with a silver portcullis. On the "little flap" the cypher of Queen Anne; on the "turn-up" behind an embroidered grenade,



OFFICER'S CAP OF THE GRENADIER COMPANY, 1714

Leather and tawny red velvet. On the front the arms of the Company in stamped metal and embroidery. The earliest known example of the use of a metal badge on military uniform. On the flap is the cypher of George I.; on the "turn-up" an embroidered grenade.

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

the Earl Marshall. And whereas severall Gentlemen of this Company doe desire to march as fuziliers to joyn the said Granadiers in the sd Cavalcade, Resolved that a body of fuziliers doe march according to the said Request and that the body consist at Least of the Number of forty eight but not to exceed sixty four—provided they Equipt themselves according to this order: Clean Buffcoats: hats eged with gould: Red feathers—white stockings and black garters. The hair tied behind with red Ribbonds: Black Ribbonds before: fuzees unslung: and Cartouch boxes."

This entry is of remarkable interest as being the first record of any attempt to lay down precise details of uniform for the Company. It is also noteworthy that the red feather, for many years a distinguishing badge of the regiment, is here retained. Its use was finally abandoned in 1723.

As officers for this body of Fusiliers, the Court elected a Colonel, a Lieutenant-Colonel and three Captains, who were to march in front, and it was left to these officers to choose three Lieutenants, who were to march in the rear, and four flankers, or sergeants. The charge for drums, music and pioneers was ordered to be paid out of regimental funds.

It appears that the Muster-Master of the City Militia, one Captain Silk, being a Jacobite, did everything possible to prevent the Company taking part in the procession and finally ventured to assert that they had no right to appear officially at the royal passage through the City. The Company at once appealed to the proper authorities, and their appeal was allowed. Further, the Company charged Captain Silk with having drunk the health of King James III on his knees, whereupon the Muster-Master was arrested, to the great joy of the members of the Company.

Shortly after this ceremony, a special Committee was appointed to draw up a digest of the memorial to the Lords Regent, with "a particular account of the applications made from time to time to procure to the Company a right of marching upon public ceremonials and the Lords Justices resolutions thereupon; and all matters relating thereto; to be entered in the Company's Book." Unfortunately, the Committee, after the manner of their kind, did not function. A note in the Clerk's handwriting under the resolution reads—" but never would meet to compleat it." Thus was posterity deprived of another invaluable regimental record.

In the same year the Company ordered " that proper application be forthwith made to the Committee of Aldermen and Common Councellmen for Twenty pounds usually paid to this Company when any King or Queen of this Realm Comes to dine in the City of London." At present nothing is known of the origin of this pleasing, but long obsolete, custom, but it offers a field for research in the archives of Guildhall to any leisured enthusiast.

The Clerk's salary at this time was £20 per annum, plus £4 bonus, on the rent of the herbage. In addition he was entitled to a fee of 1*s.* from every new member and a percentage of 2*s.* in the pound on subscriptions and 1*s.* in the pound on other moneys collected by him. As a further " encouragement to serve the Company with diligence " he received special allowance of what the Court pleased at every audit.

At a General Court held in March of the following year the Company voted a very loyal address to the King, which was duly drawn up. The Court of Assistants, with such other gentlemen as pleased, all dressed in black, with swords, went in gentlemen's coaches (at their own expense) to present the address. The Beadle was directed to take the Vellum Book for His Majesty's signature, but something seems to have prevented this and the signature of George I does not appear on the roll.

The Address was as follows :—

" TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

" The humble Address of the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Court of Assistants, and Body of the Artillery Company of London, at their General Court, held at Guildhall, March 23rd, 1715.

" With Joyfull hearts we adore that Almighty Providence which placed your Majesty on the Imperiall throne of Great

Brittain, and with the greatest Sincerity we dutyfully own and acknowledge your Majesty to be our only rightfull and Lawfull King.

"We strenuously asserted and were resolved to maintaine to the utmost of our power yo^r Majesty's undoubted right, and the Legall Establishment of your Succession to these Realms at a time when, by many, it was deemed a Crime to be zealous for it, but now (blessed be God) we enjoy the end of our prayers and wishes, and feel ye happy influences of yo^r Majesty's Just Government.

"We in great humility beg Leave to assure yo^r Majesty yt we will chearfully concur with our fellow-Citizens, and all other your faithfull Subjects, in defence of your sacred person and Royall family (as the greatest securitys of our Religion & Libertys) against all pretenders and their open and secret abettors.

"We are Religiously determined to pay a constant obedience to your Majesty, and Humbly hope you will be gratiously pleased to appoint to us a Captaine-Generall as has been done by your Royale Predecessors.

"We most devoutly pray that your Majesty's reign may be long & glorious, and that the Crown may descend to your Royall Issue, & Continue in your Most Illustrious Family for Ever."

The King thanked the Company for their dutiful and loyal sentiments, and appointed his son, the Prince of Wales, Captain-General of the Company. Shortly afterwards the Prince very graciously declared his acceptance of the post and signed the Vellum Roll. It is recorded that all the members of the deputation had the honour to kiss His Highness's hand.

Many officers of the City Trained Bands still neglected to enrol themselves as members of the Artillery Company, so the Court of Lieutenancy issued further orders in July, 1719, to the effect that all officers and sergeants of the Trained Bands not already members of the Company should be obliged to enter themselves as such and perform their exercises at all convenient times. As an encouragement to obedience of this order an annual payment of £78 was authorised, to be divided among those officers who paid their subscriptions to the Company and made their appearances on parade "either in person or by a fit and proper person or persons in his or their room or stead."

This practice of drilling by proxy is one of the most remarkable customs of the period. It was evidently nothing new, for in 1709 Isaac Bickerstaff wrote in "The Tatler": "The Chief Citizens, like the noble Italians, hire Mercenaries to carry Arms in their stead; and you shall have a Fellow of a desperate Fortune, for the Gain of one Half Crown, go through all the dangers of *Tuttle-Field* or the *Artillery-Ground*, clap his Right Jaw within two Inches of the Touch-Hole of a Musquet, fire it off, and Huzza, with as little Concern as he tears a Pullet." Another instance of this curious practice, this time attended with unfortunate results, is thus recorded in "The Daily Journal" of 1731:—

> "Mr. Longworth, who was stabbed in the Artillery Ground on Tuesday last, by a Centinel, was alive Yesterday, but in a dangerous Condition, his Wound bleeding inwardly. The Person who stabbed him, is an Apprentice in Red-Cross Street, of a good Character, *who march'd for his Master*. When the Arms were grounded in the Artillery Ground, he was placed Centinel over them, and then Mr. Longworth insulted and treated him in a very rough manner, and unhappily provoked the young Man so far as to stab him with his Bayonet."

In addition to the officers' allowance, the Lieutenancy voted a yearly grant of £72 to the Company towards the expenses of arms, powder, etc., and in consideration of the Sergeants of the Trained Bands being admitted members without any expense other than the usual fees on entrance of one shilling to the Clerk and sixpence to the Beadle.

This income, combined with the increase of membership, the rents from the building leases and the excellent management of Blackwell, so improved the financial position of the Company that, for the first time for many years, the debts were paid off and the question of the provision of more adequate accommodation began to invite consideration.

The Court of Assistants, after accepting the handsome offer of the Court of Lieutenancy, agreed to the following orders :—

" 1. That all the Staff Officers in the Trained Bands of this City be admitted members of the Artillery Company gratis, only the payment of the Clerk and Beadle's fees upon entrance, and free from the payment of any Quarterage so long as they continue sergeants, and do march in buff on the three General Marches of the said Company, or else to have no right of voting on any election.

" 2. That Twenty Shillings on a Public Lead in the Artillery Ground, and Ten Shillings on a Private Lead be allowed by the said Company over and above the usual expenses of the Respective Leaders for the time being (which sum the Clerk is hereby directed to lay out on the Company's account) for the better entertainment of the Gentlemen in Arms, but always on this proviso, that there be not less than twenty-four Members in Arms on a public night, and sixteen on a private night, besides Officers.

" 3. That no person (members or others) be permitted (except Gentlemen of the Court of Assistants) to be at any entertainment at night after the exercise is over, but such only as have been under arms the whole time of exercise ; and that the names in writing of all such be taken by the Beadle. And to take their seats at table according to their seniority of membership, except Gentlemen of the Court of Assistants and Captains in Commission.

" 4. That it be a standing Order and Rule—That a Public or General Lead in the Artillery Ground be not made with a less number than twenty-four Members under Arms besides Officers ; and that none but Members duly qualified be permitted to Exercise on any General or Private Nights on any pretence whatsoever.

" 5. That four Gentlemen of the Court of Assistants on Public Leads and two on Private Leads be desired to attend in the Artillery Ground, and to go on successively according to the rotation on the Roll. The Beadle to underwrite on their summons to give them notice.

"6. That no other pikes be made use of for the future in the Artillery Company, on either of their three General Marches, but half-pikes.

"7. That no Marshal, 'nor any other person in mean habitt,' be permitted to march with a half-pike in the said Company on any of the said General Marches.

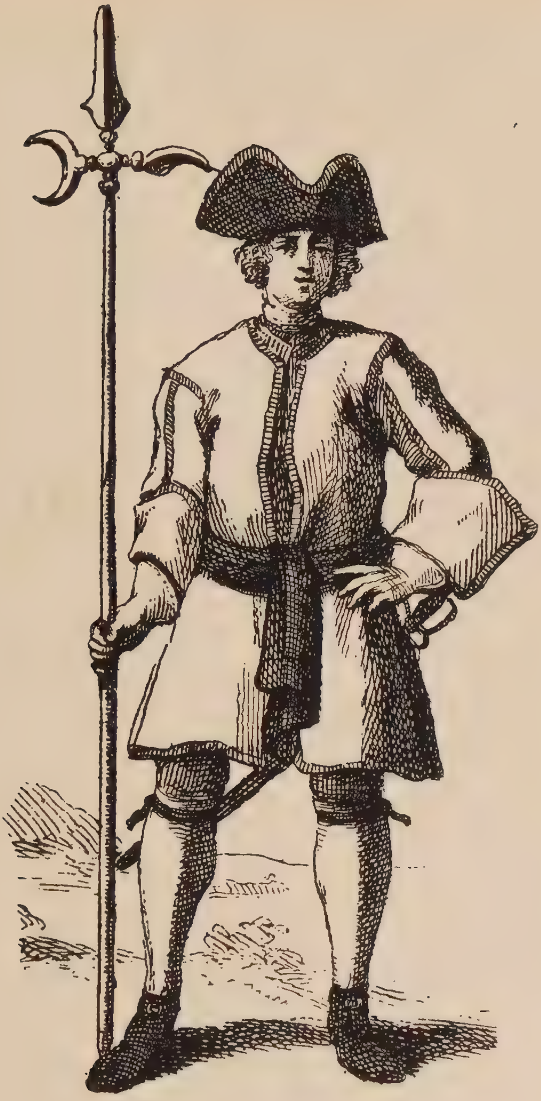
"8. That one shilling and sixpence per man be paid to all the Members under Arms marching, on any of the said three General Marches of the said Company, for their entertainment.

"9. That from and after the 11th of September next no member of this Company shall be allowed to re-enter by paying less than his full quarterage then due, except he lose his seniority of membership, and take it only from such times as he doth so re-enter. This order not to extend to such Gentlemen that go out of the Land beyond the Seas, provided they conform to the 30th Order on the Roll of General Orders."

The Clerk had to certify that the Officers of the Trained Bands from time to time were members, and also such gentlemen as were to have commissions from the Lieutenancy were also members; but only those who paid their quarterage were to be so certified, the Clerk receiving *6d.* for each certificate for his trouble.

The excellent Blackwell, Clerk of the Company, took over in 1719 the additional duties of Adjutant. In that capacity he prepared the schemes for field exercises and acted as "Leader" at Public Leads in the Artillery Ground in the absence of any member of the Court of Assistants. There can be little doubt that he knew his job on the military side, for in 1726 he published a military drill book entitled "A Compendium of Military Discipline as it is practised by the Honourable the Artillery Company of the City of *London*, for the Initiating and Instructing the Officers of the Trained-Bands of the said City."

The greater part of this work is devoted to the exercise of the firelock and bayonet "as improved and practised by the



A Sergeant of the Artillery Company, 1726.
From a drawing by Hogarth.

Artillery Company." There are two fine plates by Hogarth, illustrating the salutes with the halbert and the half-pike, which are also fully detailed; and the letterpress includes the rules for the drawing up of regiments, with notes on the handling of colours and the various beats of the drum. But the most valuable part from an historical point of view is the short treatise on the history of the Company, which forms the preface.

The Company possesses one copy of this book, which is presumably rare, as no copy is to be found in the British Museum. There is a note on the flyleaf to the effect that the same author published a quarto volume on Military Publishments, but the writer has been unable to trace an existent copy.[1]

Perhaps the outstanding events in the history of the Company during this reign were the occasions on which the battalion passed in review before the King in St. James's Park. This occurred in 1722 and again five years later. On the first occasion the Company was given but two days' notice of His Majesty's pleasure and the news caused no little stir. The Court elected the usual officers and issued a series of special orders. All officers and those members armed with the half-pike were ordered to wear scarlet coats (for the first time since the Civil War), with white stockings and black garters. The Fusiliers were to be dressed in buff, with laced hats, wigs in black bags, white stockings or spatterdashes, and black garters. Members appearing with foul arms or habit were not to be permitted to march.

It was also ordered that the Commissioned Officers should wear white feathers, and the Flankers red or none at all, further that all mounted officers should dismount while in the Park and march past on foot. Whether this last order was an additional mark of respect to His Majesty or merely a wise precaution does not transpire. Another innovation was the abolition of all regard to seniority of membership in drawing up the files. The officers were authorised to post every man to the best advantage, regardless of his "antiquity or dignity."

---

[1] A short treatise on Guards and Night Duty as practised by the Officers of the Trained Bands, dedicated to the Court of Assistants of the Artillery Company, was published by Blackwell in 1735.—A copy was recently discovered at Armoury House.

On the same day as the review the Company presented to the King the following Address:—

> "To the King's Most Excellent Majesty.
>
> "The Humble Address of the President, Vice-President, Treasurer, Court of Assistants, and Body of the Artillery Company of the City of London.
>
> "Most Gracious Sovereign,
>
> "Your Majesty's Goodness and Benevolence, Your Tender and paternal Care and protection of the Laws of the Relm, and of the properties of Your Subjects, Are Vertues known to be peculiarly Inherient in Your Majesty.
>
> "But Benevolence and Goodness, and all that tend to make a prince Beloved by honest and Gratefull Subjects, are the very things that makes him Less Feared by those that are Ungreatfull and Wicked.
>
> "Mercy and Lenity, it seems, are now the Causes and Springs of Rebelion, and Sence these are the Causes of Rebelion in Impious Subjects,
>
> "Give us Leave most Excelent Prince to Assure Your Majesty, that We are amongst the Number of Such as Highly Admire those Princelike Qualities which are so naturaly Inherent in Your Sacred Person, that by the Lustre and Excellency of them We are Incited to Assure Your Majesty that We will use Our Arms in the Defence of Your Royal Person, Crown, and Dignity, against all Popish Pretenders, and all other Your Majesty's Enemies, and their Traiterous Abettors."

His Majesty suitably expressed his thanks, and, in addition, as a testimony of his Royal favour and approbation of the good order of the Company when they were reviewed by him, ordered the sum of £500 to be paid into the hands of the Treasurer as a present and gratuity for the use of the Company. This sum was invested in South Sea stock and formed the nucleus of the fund for the building of the present Armoury.

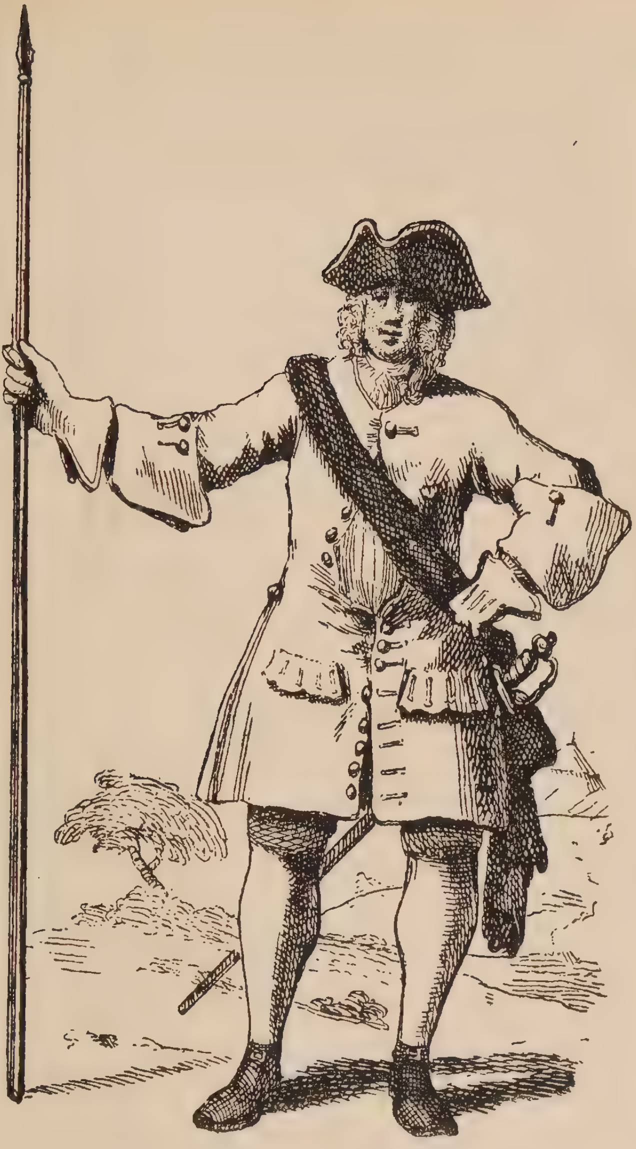
One slight contretemps marred the harmony of this eventful episode. Major Noah Delafontaine, the Captain of the Grenadiers, declared that he would not conform to the orders of the Court, but would march his men when, where and how he pleased. This was rank insubordination, and the Court retorted by issuing instructions that, if this officer attempted to march in any way but that ordered by the Court, the Company's caps and accoutrements were to be taken from him and his men. The gallant Major then saw fit to obey orders, but this compliance did not save him from being expelled the Company afterwards for his insolent behaviour to the Court.

Apart from this incident the review appears to have been an unqualified success. In fact, the powers that guarded the destinies of the Company in those days were so pleased with the appearance of the regiment on that occasion that "taking into consideration how handsome and uniform it would look to have all the gentlemen who carried half-pikes dressed in scarlet, and the fusiliers in buff," they ordered that for the future no member should appear otherwise than in the same order as when reviewed by the King, viz. Officers and half-pike men in scarlet, Fusiliers in buff. The grenadiers, both officers and men, were to continue to wear buff.

This decision marks another important step in the standardising of uniforms.

The second review took place on March 2nd, 1727. This time there was more time for preparation and it was suitably employed in instruction in ceremonial. Orders were issued "that the Adjutant do ye utmost he can to instruct all ye Officers and Soldiers in all things necessary for their Compleat Marching and Direct the Several Salutes that they may be perform'd well." Furthermore, the Major General was authorised to order a special parade of the officers for the march, and if any did not appear, or were deficient in the performance, to "put others in their room."

The same regulations held good as to dress as on the former occasion, except that commissioned officers wore laced hats



Officer of the Artillery Company, 1726.

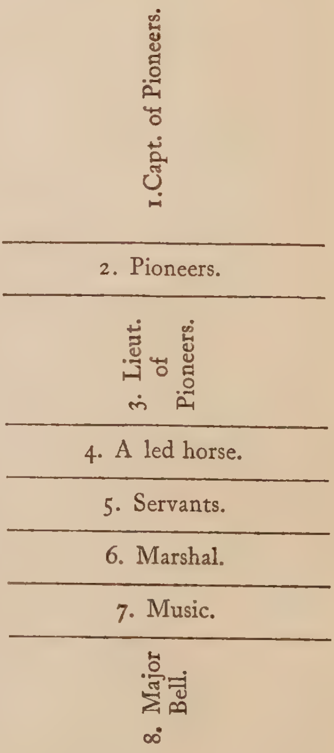
From a drawing by Hogarth.

with black cockades instead of white feathers. The Captain of Pioneers was to carry a "Field Staff," and his Lieutenant a battleaxe, and they were ordered to salute with their hats only. Special notice was given that no children, servants or other persons were to march between the divisions or ranks, and any member who appeared on parade with foul arms or "mean and foul Habitt" was not to be permitted to march.

The Battalion was drawn up in files four deep in Guildhall Yard, whence the members proceeded to the Privy Gardens in coaches or by water, according to taste. The march past was in the following order:—

"*The Order of the March of the Artillery Company before His Majesty, March 2nd,* 1727.

1. The Captain of the Pioneers.
2. The Company of Pioneers, with their proper Accoutrements, to clear the Route.
3. The Lieutenants of the Pioneers.
4. The led Horse belonging to the Captain of the Grenadiers, with a Groom on horseback.
5. The Servants belonging to the Officers of the Grenadiers, in a Rank, bare-headed before the King.
6. The Marshal of the Grenadiers.
7. The Grenadiers' Music, in a Rank.
8. The Captain of the Grenadiers (Major Joseph Bell) on horseback, but dismounts, and marcheth on foot before the King with his Fusil.
9. The two Lieutenants of the Grenadiers (Mr. John Lambe and Mr. Thomas Gregory), abreast, with Fusils.
10. The Company of Grenadiers, in



Buff, three deep in files, with their Flankers on the Angles of the Divisions.

11. The led Horses belonging to the General Officers, with Grooms on horseback.
12. The Servants belonging to the General Officers in a rank, bare-headed, as before.
13. The Marshals belonging to the Commanding Officers, in a rank, with their hats under their left arms, before the King.
14. The Beadle of the Company, with his Staff in his right hand and hat under his left arm, before the King.
15. The Music belonging to the Body, in a rank.
16. The General (Sir William Billers, Kt. and Alderman), on horseback, but dismounts, and marcheth on foot before the King, with his Half-pike.
17. The Lieutenant-General (Lieut.-Colonel Samuel Westall) and the Major-General (viz., Major John Williams, in the room of Major Joseph Bell), on horseback abreast, but dismount, and march before the King with Half-pikes.
18. The three Captains, with the Captain-Lieutenant, in one rank —viz., Captain John Weedon, Captain William Bell, Captain Edward Raybould, and Major John Triquett.
19. The Front Grand Division of Fusiliers in Buff, march four

9. Mr. Gregory.
Mr. Lambe.

10. Grenadiers.—Lt. Carter.

Grenadiers.—Capt. Tame.

Lt. Gilbert.—Grenadiers.

11. Led horses.

12. Servants.

13. Marshals.

14. Beadle.

15. Music.

17. { Major Williams.
16. Sir Wm. Billers.
Lt.-Col. Westall. }

18. { Capt. Bell.
Captain Raybould.
Major Triquett.
Capt. Weedon. }

19. Fusiliers.—Lt. Gregory.

deep in files, with the Flankers in Scarlet, and sashes round their waists, march on the Right Angles of the Sub-Divisions with Partisans shouldered.

20. Two Briviates, with the Bringer-up in one rank, bring up to the Front Grand Division of Fusiliers—viz., Captain John Johnson, Captain Nicholas Faulcon, and Lieutenant William George.

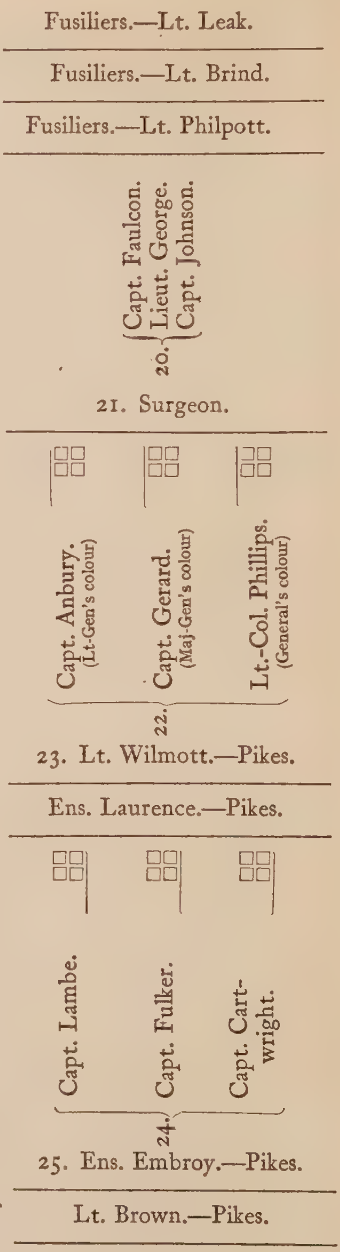
21. The Surgeon, Mr. Henry Middleton, with his Scarf and Arms of the Company, marcheth with his hat under his left arm, as before.

22. The three Ensigns of the General Officers—viz., Lieutenant-Colonel Peregrine Phillips, Captain Robert Anbury, and Captain George Gerrard—march in one rank, Colours flying.

23. The First Grand Division of Pikes, in Scarlet, march four deep in Files, with the Flankers on the right of the Sub-Divisions, march as before.

24. The three Ensigns of the Captains—viz., Captain Thomas Cartwright, Captain Joseph Lambe, and Captain Thomas Fulker—march in one rank, Colours flying.

25. The Second Grand Division of Pikes, in scarlet, march four deep in Files, with the Flankers on the Left Angles of the Sub-Divisions, march as before.


Fusiliers.—Lt. Leak.
Fusiliers.—Lt. Brind.
Fusiliers.—Lt. Philpott.
20.
Capt. Faulcon.
Lieut. George.
Capt. Johnson.
21. Surgeon.
22.
Capt. Anbury. (Lt-Gen's colour)
Capt. Gerard. (Maj-Gen's colour)
Lt.-Col. Phillips. (General's colour)
23. Lt. Wilmott.—Pikes.
Ens. Laurence.—Pikes.
24.
Capt. Lambe.
Capt. Fulker.
Capt. Cartwright.
25. Ens. Embroy.—Pikes.
Lt. Brown.—Pikes.

26. The two youngest Lieutenants, with a Briviate, in one rank, lead the Rear Grand Division of Fusiliers, viz., Captain Walter Sutton, Captain Benjamin Osgood, and Captain Samuel Saunders.

26. Capt. Osgood.
Capt. Saunders.
Capt. Sutton.

27. The Rear Grand Division of Fusiliers, in Buff, march four deep in Files, with the Flankers on the left angles of the Sub-Divisions, march as before.

27. Lt. Hingist. —Fusiliers.
Lt. Woodcock.—Fusiliers.
Ens. Owen. —Fusiliers.
Lt. Shortland. —Fusiliers.

28. The three eldest Lieutenants, with a Briviate, march in one rank, and bring up the Rear, viz., Captain Paul Ferris, Captain William Brind, Captain Charles Thompson, and Captain John Bassindine. John Blackwell, Adjutant and Clerk, and Captain Joseph Willoughby, Assistant-Adjutant, to march at discretion.

28. Capt. Ferris.
Capt. Thompson.
Capt. Bassindine.
Capt. Brind.

N.B.—The Company consists of the Officers of the Trained Bands of the City of London and Suburbs thereof, and other gentlemen who are instructed in the Use and Exercise of Arms.

By approbation of the Major-General,
John Blackwell, *Adjutant and Clerk.*"

It is somewhat strange to find about one-third of the strength of the Battalion still carrying the pike at a time when it had been obsolete as an infantry weapon for nearly twenty years. During and after the Civil War the proportion of pikes to muskets in a regiment had been gradually decreasing until about 1704, by which time the pikemen had dwindled to a small body whose especial duty it was to protect the colours (hence the derivation of the word *picket*).

The reason for the retention of the pike in the Company was probably due to pure conservatism, or possibly to a dislike of handling the musket on the part of some of the worthy freemen and citizens who filled the ranks of the regiment in those days. It is noteworthy that in 1719 the Court ordered that none but half-pikes should be used by the Company, thereby discarding for all time the longer, more cumbersome, but efficient weapon.

Blackwell writes, in 1726, "The Pikes were formerly esteem'd a very useful Weapon, both for Offence and Defence, but now wholly laid aside in the Army; and not us'd any where in this Nation, except at some times in the Honourable the Artillery Company of the City of *London*." He then proceeds to enumerate the various words of command.

It may be surmised, from the above statement, that the pike was used on ceremonial occasions at this date. The last recorded instance of its use by the rank and file of the Company occurs in 1735, when it was left to those gentlemen who marched in scarlet to use a fusee or a half-pike, "as they shall see proper." Of course, the half-pike continued to be the weapon of the officers until a much later date, and a very similar weapon was carried by sergeants, under the name of "spontoon," until mid-Victorian times.

During this period there seems to have been a growing tendency towards the laying down of dress regulations. In 1721 it was reported that some of the Flankers, who were usually Lieutenants of the Trained Bands acting as Sergeants, were wearing their sashes slung over the shoulder, contrary to the custom of the Company. The Court thereupon ordered that any Flanker appearing without a sash, or who wore one otherwise than round his waist, would forfeit his allowance from the Lieutenancy for that march and would not be allowed to attend the entertainment for officers afterwards. The wearing of the sash over the shoulder was, of course, one of the marks of distinction of an officer. It was also found necessary at the same time to order an inspection before each march to ensure that the Fusiliers and Grenadiers had provided themselves with cartridges "sufficient to make good fireings throwout the General Exercises." If any member had too few charges or such as were considered too small to make a good report, he was not to be permitted to march until he had produced a sufficiency. Powder and bullets were always to be had at the Armoury. The sale appears to have been one of the perquisites of the Company's servants.

The Court, in 1722, appointed "an Ingenier to make their Fireworks," but it must not be assumed that this referred to the articles usually associated with the Crystal Palace and the Fifth of November, though it is recorded that the Company organised a display of fireworks within the palisades at the east end of St. Paul's Cathedral on the night of King George the First's entry into London. In the military parlance of the time the word "Fire-work" included various forms of the grenade and petard, as well as the more spectacular article.

In this connection there is the sad tale of Sergeant William Richford. It appears from a contemporary newspaper that this gentleman, a tailor in Rosemary Lane, serving as a Fusilier, met with an accident during a field exercise in honour of the anniversary of the accession of King George. It is reported that "one of the sham Bombs of about a Pound and a half Weight fell upon his Head, and beat him to the Ground, then it burst and left him speechless; he continued so all the Night following; and through the Contusion and Disorder this Accident has given him, it is apprehended he will hardly recover." Apparently the unfortunate fusilier recovered sufficiently to petition the Court for compensation on account of "the Great hurt and Dammage" he had received. In consideration of his "mean circumstances," the Company paid the expenses of his illness.

Very little is heard of the Finsbury Archers during this period, though they were still in existence and usually held an annual meeting in the Artillery Ground. A newsprint of 1721 records a test of skill in the ancient science of archery to be held in the Artillery Ground "between John Smith, Master of

Archery, living near that Ground, and Thomas Polington, a Devonshire Gentleman, for a Bowl of Punch of half a Guinea, where 'tis supposed most of the Proficients in that Art will be to see the Performance; Three Flights in Five are to decide the Matter."

The ground was also used at times for the trial of the latest inventions in death-dealing weapons. On a certain wet Wednesday in 1722 an experiment took place with a contrivance known as "Mr. Puckle's Machine." The exact nature of this invention is doubtful, but the newspaper states that "'tis reported for certain that one Man discharged it 63 times in Seven Minutes, though all the while Raining; and that it throws off either one large or sixteen Musquet Bullets at every Discharge, with very great Force."

CHAPTER VII

1727 TO 1759

THE occasion of the accession of George II on the death of his father was not marked by the usual request for a Royal Warrant by the Company. Possibly it was thought unnecessary to petition the Captain-General of the Regiment for confirmation of the Company's privileges. More probably the matter was allowed to drift, as was the case with the address voted by the Court to congratulate His Majesty upon his accession, which was never presented.

It was in this year (1727) that the Company was finally granted permission to build on the west side of the Ground. It had taken four years for the concession to pass the Court of Aldermen.

On Lord Mayor's Day the King dined at Guildhall. The Court enquired if His Majesty would be pleased to receive the salute of the Company on that occasion and, having received a reply in the affirmative, applied to the Court of Aldermen for the usual grant of £20 payable to the Company when Royalty dined in the City, in addition to the ordinary charge of £30 for their attendance on Lord Mayor's Day.

A letter was received in 1728 asking permission for His Majesty's Guards on duty at the Tower to exercise in the Artillery Ground on Tuesday and Thursday mornings for two or three months. This request was granted on the understanding that the Company's tenant was recompensed for any damage done to the herbage. It is noteworthy as being one of the very few occasions on which the use of the Ground has ever been granted to a unit of the regular army, though similar requests were frequent in later years.

A manuscript in the Bodleian Library describes an exercise of arms performed by the Company on August 1st, 1728, on the occasion of the annual march to Balmes. It will be noticed that the scheme still follows the idea of a "revolting Party."

"THE DESIGN.

"Draw up the files in the Artillery Ground (three deep), extend north and south upon the lines, march the Company out at the little gate, pursue the same into Pest-house Field, and draw up facing westward.

"The Field Officers, having reviewed the Body, and received the salutes of the rest of the Officers in their proper posts, then divide into two battalions, and order the Lieutenant-General into winter quarters; accordingly the Lieutenant-General takes his march northwards, and, finding the country to be barren and incommodious, he draws up his men, and, by an oration he makes to them, engageth them into a revolt.

"The General, by his spies, having received certain intelligence of his said revolt, sends an Officer, with a trumpeter, to know the reason of it.

"The Lieutenant-General sends the Officer back in disgrace, bids defiance to the General, and said that he would give the reasons for his revolt at the point of the sword.

"The General calls a Council of War, in which it was resolved to reduce the Lieutenant-General to obedience by force of arms, and therefore pursueth him with much expedition.

"The Lieutenant-General draws up his forces in ambuscade, and fires upon the General on his march; upon which the General draws up his men, and returns the fire; but, the Lieutenant-General being very advantageously posted, the General could not force him, and therefore pursues his march to gain a more open ground.

"The General, having gained an open country, draws up his forces to give battle to the Lieutenant-General; which the Lieutenant-General perceiving, and not willing to come to a close engagement, draws off, and gains the possession of a strong line drawn across the country, and then draws up his men, in order to defend the same.

"The General marcheth his forces after him (in battalia), and being willing to prevent the effusion of blood that might ensue, sends a second summons to the Lieutenant-General to give the reasons of his revolt, or submit to his mercy at discretion, otherwise he would compel him by force of arms.

"The Lieutenant-General sends word that his revolt was for want of pay, and that, if he did not send all the pay due to him, and provide him better winter quarters, he would stand the utmost extremity.

"The General lets him know that all the pay due to him was ready, but that he must first execute the orders he had given him.

"The Lieutenant-General, not being willing to trust to the honour of the General, fires upon him at a narrow pass in the centre of the lines.

"The General returns the fire, and at last, by springing a mine, makes a breach and mounts the same, which forceth the Lieutenant-General to come to a general engagement; and accordingly both armies draw up in order of battle, which is begun by cannonading, and then to a close fight, in which victory seemed doubtful for some time; till at last the Lieutenant-General was obliged to give way to the superior force of the General, to quit the field, and to make the best retreat he could to a strong pass in his rear, where he stands his ground for some time, until the General, by sending a division, flanks him on the left, which causeth him to retire to a bar at the extremity of the said pass; but finding his army much weakened, springs a mine and throws a shoal of grenades, which disorders the General's forces, and by it gains time to secure his retreat into a strong fortress some distance southward.

"The General being resolved to reduce him, orders several shells to be thrown into the place; but they not having the desired effect, orders his cannon to play (*which the Lieutenant-General answers from his batteries*) and also to scale the walls, but to no purpose; so that, after several firings of small arms on both sides, both parties desist the general fire, and only are for 'birding.'[1]

"The General marcheth his forces down the great road on the east of the fortress, and draws up at the great gate leading towards the entrance of the castle, which at last is forced by him, and then draws up facing the entrance itself; and, after many firings on both sides, the Lieutenant-General's forces being beat into the place, the General prepares for a general assault; which the Lieutenant-General perceiving, and having several mines planted at the entrance of the interior polygon, springs the same with such success that many of the General's forces are slain thereby.

---

[1] *I.e.* Sniping.

"The Lieutenant-General observing the resolution of the General to storm the place, and his ammunition being spent, came to a resolution to try if he could gain an honourable capitulation, and therefore hangs out the White Flag and beats the 'Chamade.'

"The General, not knowing the danger he might expose the rest of his men unto in the storming the place, therefore, upon hostages being exchanged, enters into a treaty, and after some time articles were agreed unto and signed; the Lieutenant-General marcheth out with all the tokens of honour, as drums beating, colours flying, &c.; the General takes possession of this important place; and afterwards both armies join and march into the Artillery Ground, where they fire three volleys and lodge the colours, which concludes the EXERCISE.

"DIRECTIONS FOR PERFORMANCE.

"1*st Firing*.—At the Avenue by Lady Lumley's Almshouses in Ship Field, one round, by single ranks, the Lieutenant-General making the first fire.—N.B. The ranks after their firings to wheel off to the right and left outwards, and post themselves in the rear of their own divisions, after they all have fired; then wheel off the division, that the second may advance. (So of the rest.)

"2*nd Firing*.—At the centre of the line, between Ship Field and Rose and Crown Field (both sides being drawn up in battalia), the Lieutenant-General making the first Fire, fire one round by single ranks of each division, and then wheel off to the rear of their own divisions. Let the firings be from right and left to the centre; then the General throws a shoal of grenades and springs a mine, and forceth the Pass.

"3*rd Firing*.—*The Field Fight*.—Cannonading, three rounds on each side, three rounds by platoons on each side, the General making the first fire. 1. Fire from right to left; 2. From left to right; 3. From right and left into the centre.

"*4th Firing.*—At the Rose and Crown, where fire two rounds by divisions, the Lieutenant-General making the first Fire; the General flanks his left, and throws a shoal of grenades, which causeth the Lieutenant-General to retreat to the Bar, after he has delivered a shoal of grenades.

"*5th Firing.*—At the Bar, where fire one round by divisions, the Lieutenant-General making the first Fire; then the Lieutenant-General throws another shoal of grenades, springs a Mine, and retires into the Castle.

"*6th Firing.—The Siege.*—1. Bombardment (three shells); 2. Cannonading (three rounds); 3. By the Divisions of small shot (three rounds); and then Birding on each side.

"*7th Firing.*—At the Great Gate, one round by divisions, the General making the first Fire; and then the General throws grenades and springs a mine, which forceth the Gate.

"*8th Firing.*—At the Entrance of the Citadel, where fire one round by divisions, the Lieutenant-General making the first Fire; then the Lieutenant-General throws a shoal of grenades; after which the General springs a mine, to force the said entrance; then the Lieutenant-General springs another, to beat off the General's men, whereby many are destroyed; *and then beats the Chamade.*"

The question of a new Armoury, which had been under consideration for many years, was now tackled in earnest. In 1729 a Committee was formed and plans were submitted from Mr. Stibbs and Mr. Dance. The latter gentleman was the architect of the Mansion House. After nearly three years delay Mr. Stibbs's designs were accepted, at an estimated cost of £1,800. Then a subscription list was opened and, as an encouragement to generosity, it was decided that all who subscribed £5 should have their names inscribed in letters of gold on the panels of the Great Room. Subscribers of £10 were, in addition, to be elected to life membership of the Company; while donors of £20 were entitled, in addition to the above benefits, to be admitted honorary members of the Court of Assistants.

The Court of Lieutenancy were then asked for a grant towards the cost of the building. After inspecting the old Armoury and deciding that nothing could be done to improve it, the

Lieutenancy decided on a gift of £500. An attempt was also made, through Sir Robert Walpole, to induce the King to give his practical support to the project; but as nothing further is heard of this, the effort presumably failed.

In 1734 the contract for the building of the Armoury was advertised, and out of six tenders the Court accepted that of Messrs. Harris & Stibbs, who offered to do the work for £1,284. It was then found necessary to cross-plank the foundations at an additional cost of £48, so that the original Armoury actually cost £1,332 to build. It was completed early in 1735 and was insured in the Hand-in-Hand Insurance Office for £1,600.

The names of the subscribers to the building fund were duly inscribed in gold on six panels and set up in the Long Room, whence they have long since disappeared. Highmore states that, in 1803, some of them were to be found at the sides of the stairs leading from the Sutling Room to the Musicians' Gallery.

Much of the decoration of the interior of Armoury House can be traced to this period. The painting of the arms of the Company (showing evidence of Dutch technique) above the fireplace at the western end of the Long Room was presented by Ensign Wardell in 1737. That of the Royal Arms of George I, later changed to those of George III, at the other end of the room formed part of the original scheme. The clock with two dials was presented by a member in 1748. The frame and canvas for the painted frieze in the Court Room was put up in 1751, but the paintings themselves were not completed till eight years later. The iron gates in the entrance hall, magnificent specimens of their kind, were erected by subscriptions among members in January 1746.

As soon as the House was opened it was found necessary to regulate its use, and the following orders were drafted by the Court of Assistants:—

"Ordered that the Table next the Window on the right Hand going in, be for the Use of the Commission Officers for the Day on which they respectively March.

"That the Table on the right Hand at the Back of the Room be for the Use of the Sergeants of the several Regiments (of Trained Bands) as they respectively March.

"That the table on the left Hand next the Window be for the use of the Members of this Company, being Spectators, on any of the Days the Regiments respectively Muster; regard always to be had to such as are Subscribers.

"That the Table on the left Hand at the Back of the Room going in, be for the Use of any Body of Volunteers who do March in the respective Regiments.

"That the Room on the right Hand at the Top of the Stairs, be for the Use of any Body of Grenadiers, if any such March with any of the Regiments.

"That when ever any Gentlemen of the Court of Lieutenancy please to come, they be admitted into the Room at their Pleasure, and to be seated at the Officers Table.

"That no Person, on any Pretence whatsoever do presume to bring into the said great Room, any Person or Persons, not being Members of the said Company, without leave of the Field Officers for the Day first had and obtained.

"That the Beadle, or his Deputy, do attend at the Door, to let in the several Members that shall desire to come in. And that the said Beadle or his Deputy, shall be supported by a good Body of Centinels, to withstand any Person or Persons, who shall forceably endeavour to break any of these Orders.

"That if any Person or Persons shall stir up, or raise, any Riot, Tumult, or Disturbance in the said Room, being Members or not, shall be by the said Field Officers ordered to be turned out of the Room.

"That no Malt Liquors be permitted to be sold, or brought into any Part of the Armoury.

"That the Clerk have the Liberty to sell Wine in the said Armoury, and all other Liquors, (Malt Liquors excepted) on the Six Muster Days only; and then to discontinue selling, and to clear the said Armoury.

"That if any Member of this Company have a desire to erect a Shed or Tent, for the Selling of any Sort of Liquors on the Six Days of the Muster only (Wine excepted), may make Application to the Court of Assistants for Leave for their so doing, and that it be on the West Side of the Ground."

Shortly after this, permission was given to a Mr. Merry, apparently a member, to erect a booth or tent against the west wall of the Ground for the sale of beer, ale, or other liquors, but not wine, during the six days of muster of the Trained Bands only, after which he was to clear the booth away and pay three shillings as an acknowledgment to the Company. His license was renewed the following year, but only on condition that the game of skittles was not to be played. Some years later a member was summoned to appear before the Court on the charge of selling " Geneva " (gin) in the Ground on the day of the Regiment's marching.

The Company became involved in legal proceedings in 1736. It seems that three senior officers of the Company complained to the Court that they were to be tried for alleged assault on a man who had attempted to drive an empty chaise with a pair of horses through the ranks of the Company in Bishopsgate. The Court ordered the case to be defended at the expense of the regiment. Some months later it was reported that the defendants had been found guilty, also that the defending attorney had declined assistance from the Clerk of the Company and had neglected to acquaint the Court with material points in connection with the affair, in view of which the case should have been settled out of Court. It was therefore decided that the Company could not " with regard to their circumstances or honour " take any further action, as the Court had acted in the belief that these officers were innocent of the charge, whereas it appeared that they were guilty. This affair cost the Company £66 in costs, a very considerable sum considering the state of their finances.

The first recorded inventory of arms, armour, etc., was taken in 1738. It includes almost all the armour at present in the possession of the regiment (with a note to the effect that it wanted painting), the old Leading Staff of 1693 and the tilting lance. It was subsequently ordered that the pieces of armour, arms, bayonets, etc., should be set up as ornaments in the Great Room.

In 1739 it was ordered that no person should be given a certificate of membership until he had been formally admitted by a Court of Assistants, and in the following year it was decided that no vintner should be admitted a member until it had been agreed upon at two successive Courts.

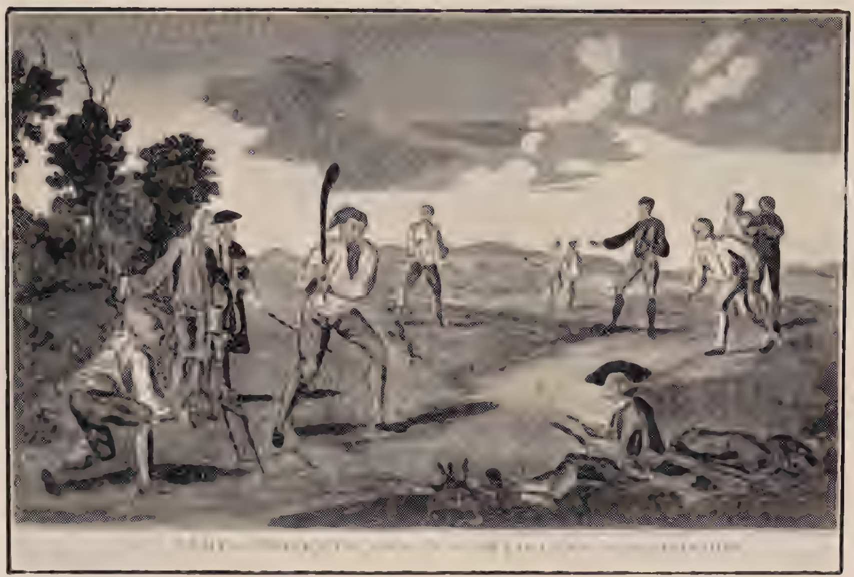
John Gittins, a member of the Company, a Captain in the Blue Regiment of Trained Bands and a Furrier by trade, published a military work in 1735. It bore the elaborate title of "A Compleat System of Military Discipline as it is now used in the British Foot with Explanations. Being a few Military Flowers Collected out of the Artillery Garden of London." The principal dedication, to the King's most excellent Majesty, concluded with the fervent prayer "that we may never want a Prince descended from your Royal Loins to sway the Scepter of Great Britain." A subsidiary dedication to the Lieutenancy of London states that the book was printed "solely for the use of young Gentlemen and Soldiers belonging to the Honourable Artillery Company, and the Trained-Bands of this City; Which Company has always experienced your Honours Goodness towards them; and by your kind Assistance, has once more raised their drooping Heads." The Book opens with a few observations upon war, such as the following: "Peace, Plenty, Pride, and War, are the four Fellies which compound the Wheel that Time turns round on: As Peace produceth Plenty; Plenty, Pride; and Pride, War; so of course, after a long Peace, War mounts the Stage." The remainder of the work consists of the exercises of the firelock and bayonet, the Grenadiers' Exercise, many and complicated evolutions, and the duties of the various ranks in all spheres of military life.

For centuries Finsbury Fields had been one of the chief centres for the national pastime of archery; and now the Artillery Ground was to become the cradle of another great English game. Cricket is heard of as a game for schoolboys as far back as Elizabethan times, but it was not until a much later date that it began to come into prominence as a national game for adults. The celebrated ground at Hambledon, in Hampshire, is usually regarded as the nursery of club cricket, but, in 1725, about fifteen years prior to the earliest records of the Hambledon Club, the game was being played on the Artillery Ground. It did not at first meet with official encouragement. In fact a note appears in the Court Minutes concerning "the abuse done to the herbâge of the ground by cricket players." However, the worthy rulers of the Company soon became reconciled to the game, for a newspaper of 1736 reports a great match between Mr. Heffe's Club of the Artillery Ground and the Gentlemen of Southwark, in which the latter team won "at one Hand, with nine Notches to spare." Here we have authentic record of an actual cricket club connected with the Artillery Company some four years prior to the earliest date claimed for the existence of the club at Hambledon. Again, the *London Evening Post* of July 13/15, 1738, advertises a match in the Artillery Ground between the Gentlemen of London and the Gentlemen of Chislehurst. The wickets were to be pitched at one o'clock precisely "because several large Betts are depending." The Ground was to be roped round as usual and all persons were desired to keep off the wall.

The *Daily Post* of July 24th, 1739, describes a match on the same ground between Kentishmen and Londoners, when the latter, being fifty runs down in the first "Hand," "took occasion to wrangle about a disputed Ball, and break the match off, whereby they saved themselves from being beaten, but at the same time lost their Honour."

Very heavy betting was the rule rather than the exception at this time. At a two-day match played in the Artillery Ground in 1742 between eleven gentlemen of Slendon in Sussex and eleven gentlemen of London, the stakes were £500 a side, with a forfeit of one hundred guineas if the wickets were not pitched by eleven o'clock. Another match on very similar conditions took place between the Gentlemen of London and the Noblemen and Gentlemen of the Duke of Bedford's Club.

The earliest match of which the scores are recorded is that



"THE GAME OF CRICKET AS PLAY'D IN THE ARTILLARY GROUND, LONDON"

Printed for Robert Sayer, at the Golden Buck in Fleet Street. From a line engraving published circa 1750. The original Painting is in the possession of the Marylebone Cricket Club

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

between Kent and All England in 1746. The game was played in the Artillery Ground, Kent winning by one run. One of the representatives of England on this occasion was one Smith, known to cricket history as the "keeper of the Artillery Ground."

The *Lewes Journal* of July 13th, 1747, contains a notice of "a long-talked-of match in the Artillery Ground between the women of Charlton and Singleton in Sussex and the women of West Dean and Chalgrove, of the same County," but there is no record of the result. The "Club of the Artillery Ground" must have flourished for a number of years, as in 1765 a match is recorded between the London Artillery players and the Walworth players. The account adds that the odds were for some time in favour of the Walworth men, but at last the London men came off victorious.

Apparently the use of the ground for cricket matches ultimately became an annoyance to the Company, for in 1773 the Court ordered an advertisement to be inserted in the *Daily Advertiser* to the effect that the Company would not in future allow cricket or any other game in the Artillery Ground. This ban on cricket continued for many years. In 1834 a number of members petitioned the Court for permission to play cricket in the ground, with a view to attracting recruits to the Company, but it was decided that the game was precluded by the terms of the leases. Another application in 1841 drew attention to a recent order emanating from the Horse Guards and directing that cricket grounds should be provided for the use of the Army throughout the kingdom. Again it was decided that a clause in the lease proved an insurmountable obstacle. Finally, in 1846, the Court yielded to pressure and petitioned the Court of Common Council that the covenants in the lease might be altered so as to allow cricket to be played in the Ground. This request was granted and a license to that effect was endorsed on the lease. The whole question was then submitted to the Prince Consort and, on the receipt of his sanction, subject to the necessary regulations for ensuring the general order and discipline of the Corps, a code of stringent rules for the regulation of the game and its players was drawn up. It was laid down (1) That none but Members should be permitted under any circumstances to play cricket in the Ground; (2) That no Member should be entitled to play until he had "passed into line," had paid his regimental subscription, and had obtained certificates from his Battery or Company Officer, countersigned by the Regimental Sergeant Major, to the effect that he had attended a certain number of drills in the previous twelve months; (3) That every expense in connection with the game should be borne by private subscription, such funds to be properly administered by a Treasurer elected for the purpose; and (4) That the days for the playing of cricket should be Mondays and Fridays during the season, but only by special application to the Court and subject to the usual rules for the closing of the House at 9 o'clock.

A most interesting account of the swearing-in of a Lord Mayor at the Tower in 1741 is to be found in the official diary of Lieutenant-General Adam Williamson, then Deputy Lieutenant of the Tower. He relates that the Lord Mayor elect had made a demand or request "to have the Liberty of being preceded by the Artillery Company, who are a body of about three hundred Men at arms well disciplined and uniformly accouter'd with a Company of Grenadiers of their owne body at their head, drums beating &c."

General Williamson goes on to say that "it was thought by the Brigadier, that when they came to the Tower ground the Militia of the Hamlets or the Warders was sufficient for his Lordships guard, and that he would be pleased to let them come no farther than Crutchet Fryers Bar, but these mermidons it seems allwais march before the Lord Mayor even to the Bar in Westminster Hall; so on the score of the Warrants saying the Mayr. 'Should be sworen in before the Constable in the same manner as he is at Westminster,' this was acquiesd with."

Then follows a description of the preparations made by the authorities at the Tower for the reception of the Lord Mayor. "At length," continues the diary, "the Lord Mayor came in his Coach preceded by the Artillery Company as I sayd before. . . . The Artillery Company when it came to the steps of the Court wheeld to their right and as was agreed, marchd through an opening the Militia made for them, and drew up behind them streaching in to Tower Street to receive the Lord Mayor as he went home and march before him."

The account of the formalities of the ceremony, with its carefully graded scale of compliments and courtesies, is then set forth. Before leaving, the Lord Mayor inspected the Militia, the two regiments making a street for this purpose, "but should have opened it wider, for the officers had scarce room to drop the spears of their Pikes."

The threat of invasion by the Young Pretender, assisted by a French fleet, formed the subject of an address to the throne drawn up in 1744 in the following terms:—

"Most Gracious Sovereign,

"When we reflect on the Wisdom, Equity, and Mildness of your Majesty's Government, and the known Constancy, Firmness, and Resolution, of Your Royal Mind, we could scarce have thought that any Persons either could desire or would Dare to give you any Domestic Disturbance.

"But since the Eldest Son of the Pretender to your Majesty's Crown is arrived in France, and since they who have long aimed at Universal Monarchy, forgetfull of the late Glorious Victory obtained in the Fields of Dettingen by the Bravery of your Majesty's Troops Animated by your Royal Presence and Example, have now the Insolence to make preparations to invade this Kingdom, in Concert with Disaffected Persons here, wicked and Senceless enough to assist the Enemies of their Country, of their Religion, and of their Lawfull Sovereign:

"We humbly beg leave with the rest of your Faithfull subjects, to approach your Throne, and, from the highest Sentiments of Duty and Gratitude, to express our just Detestation of so daring and desperate an attempt, and to assure Your Majesty That we are fully determined to sacrifice our lives in the cause of Liberty, in the Defence of your Majesty's Sacred Person, Crown, and Dignity, and in Support of the Protestant Succession in your Royal Line."

Members were invited to proceed to St. James's in coaches at their own expense to attend the presentation of this address. They were to appear in coloured coats, plain hats with a cockade, swords and white stockings.

In July, 1745, the great guns in the Ground were ordered to be fired in honour of the taking of Cape Breton Island. This refers to the capture of the great French fortress of Louisburg by a hastily-raised force of colonial irregulars from New England, after a most amazingly unconventional siege.

And now, for the first time for close on a century, the old Company was to have an opportunity for showing its real worth as a military unit.

Choosing a time when almost the whole of the regular army was with Cumberland in Flanders, where it had just sustained at Fontenoy the most glorious defeat in history, the Jacobite party, urged on by the French, seized the opportunity for an attempt to restore the Stuarts. Prince Charles and his Highland levies, after defeating several detachments of regular troops, were marching on London. The capital was in a state bordering on panic. Trade was at a standstill; shops were closed; and there was a run on the Bank of England. Cumberland's battalions were recalled from Flanders; Dutch and Hessian troops were summoned; and desperate attempts were made, by the offer of generous bounties, to fill the depleted ranks of the few regiments in garrison at home. By the time the rebels had reached Derby the City was in a ferment of excitement. The Trained Bands of London and Middlesex were in readiness to march; watches were posted at the City gates; companies of volunteers were springing up everywhere; and the King in person raised his standard on Finchley Common and reviewed the Trained Bands and Volunteers.

And what of the Artillery Company? Many of its members were doubtless serving with the Trained Bands, but one would naturally expect a leading part in these warlike preparations to be taken by the ancient military body whose members had so often protested their readiness to shed their blood in defence of the King and Constitution. With shame it must be recorded that the only action taken by the leaders of the Company in this hour of trial was to order the removal of the Company's arms to the Tower for safe custody. If any other action was taken, it remains unrecorded in the archives, an almost incredible omission.

A squandered opportunity and a black page in the history of the Company! Possibly many of its members were over military age; its leaders, being Aldermen, Sheriffs, etc., were almost certainly within that category. But there seems to have been no attempt at recruiting in face of the emergency. Either vigorous leadership was sadly lacking, or the fighting spirit of the citizen soldiers had degenerated sadly since the days of Newbury.

When the trouble was over and the rebellion had been crushed, rockets to the value of £2 16*s*. were fired in the Ground on the Duke of Cumberland's birthday to celebrate the victory of Culloden.

The Company gained a certain accession of strength during these troubles. A company of gentlemen volunteers applied for permission to join as members on the understanding that they might act as a separate division. They were allowed to do so on condition that they found their own arms and powder, and, from the colour of their uniform, they became known as the " Loyal Blue Fuzileers " of the Artillery Company. At the same time several " gentlemen of great worth exercising arms in Leathersellers' Hall " were allowed the use of the House and Ground for training purposes. This corps was afterwards disbanded, the members probably joining the Company. Later in the year it was ordered that fourteen drummers should be provided with new red coats, with wings, similar to those of the Drummers of the late Gentlemen Volunteers of Leathersellers' Hall.

The following summons was issued to members for the swearing in of the Lord Mayor in 1753:—

"You as a member of the said (Artillery) Company, are desired to Appear on that day at the Armoury in the Artillery Ground, in your Millitary Habit, Completely Arm'd, Agreeable to the Character you are Appointed to March in.

"The Books will be Oppened at 9 o'Clock in the forenoon and peremptorily Closed at half an hour after ten, and no Person will be Mustered after that time on any pretence Whatsoever.

"Willm. Harris, Clerk.

"By Order

"Those Gentlemen, who March with the Hanover Grenadiers, are desired to meet their Officers, at Sergeant Humphrey's, the Blue Post, in Bunhill Row, Punctually at Nine o'Clock."

The Company assembled in imposing force, having included in their ranks a body of Cripplegate Grenadiers, who acted as Fusiliers. They marched to Guildhall, where the Field Officers drew their swords and received the Lord Mayor. The procession then moved off, headed by Pioneers to clear the way, and marched to the steps of the booth on Tower Hill, where the swearing in was performed by Earl Cornwallis, the Lieutenant of the Tower. After the ceremony the Company escorted the Lord Mayor back to the Mansion House, and "after having properly lodged his Lordship and Attendants there," returned to the Armoury and dined at about four o'clock.

Not the least important feature of the Company's military exercises was the entertainment which followed, and which every member who had appeared under arms was entitled to attend. On several occasions it was found necessary to issue orders to prevent members who had not performed the exercise from sitting down to an unauthorised dinner, but an exception was made to the rule in the case of members of the Court.

It was, of course, the privilege of the Leader and other officers chosen for each particular occasion to pay for the entertainment, which accounts no doubt for a certain disinclination for high rank which occasionally asserted itself. And the Court saw to it that members received proper value on these occasions. In 1754 a special order was promulgated "to prevent the meanness that had been acted by some members of this Company." The gentlemen referred to, instead of entertaining those members who appeared under arms in the traditional manner, had apparently formed the habit of doling out a mere twenty shillings for a Public, or five shillings for a Private Lead. The remedy was simple. The Court agreed upon a scale of fines for Leaders who did not take upon themselves the proper entertainment of the members. Thus a Member of the Court was mulcted in the sum of two guineas, and proportionate prices were fixed for Captains in Commission, Subaltern Officers, and Gentlemen Members, while a Sergeant was let off with ten shillings. In order to make quite sure that the alleged "meanness" did not continue, it was clearly laid down that no entertainment of less value than the prescribed rate of fines would be accepted.

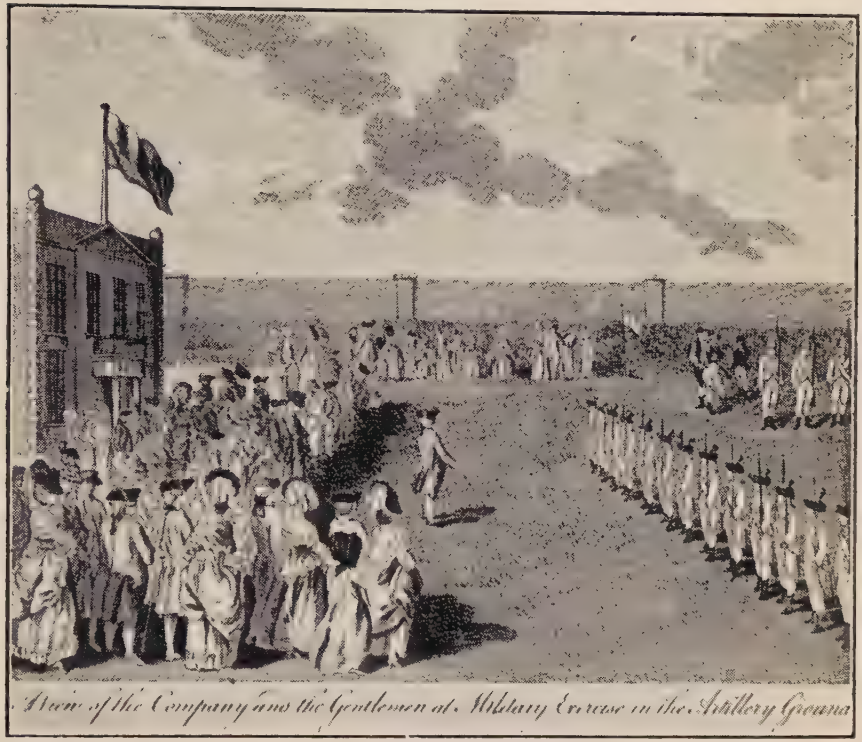
A few years later the Company found itself once more in financial difficulties owing to the failure of several Aldermen and Sheriffs to pay their proportions of the expenses of Public Marches. It became necessary to retrench, wherefore the Court decided (1) not to have wine at any future Court of Assistants, (2) that the breakfast at future Public Marches be Rolls, Butter and Cheese, and the Wine not to exceed one dozen, and (3) that the Entertainment afterwards be Roast Beef, without any other provision except the customary sauce, the allowance of wine not to exceed one pint to each gentleman. Then it was voted that the Grenadiers' music was an unnecessary expense and that for the future they would have to be contented with two fifes "in the Leiu thereof." On another occasion the Court ordered "that it be an Instruction to the Maj^{r} Gen^{l} to provide Beef, mutton, or pork, according to his Discret^{n} with 8 Boil'd Plumb puddings for Lord Mayor's Day next." Another effort at economy resulted in an order that the firing of the Cannon at the expense of the Company be discontinued, also that the Engineer's salary be discontinued during the silence of the Cannon. It had long been the custom to fire a salute when either of the Civil Chiefs (President, Vice-President and Treasurer) arrived in the Ground; salutes were also fired at the marching in of a regiment of Trained Bands. But perhaps the palm for rigorous economy should be awarded for the order that the lanterns and windows of Armoury House should be cleaned but once a year, "and that to be against a General Court."

On September 19th, 1757, the use of Armoury House was granted to the "Association of Antigallicans, at the Crown and Magpie, in Aldgate High Street," for the purpose of entertaining "the Hon. Lord Blakeney, a worthy member of this Company, it being his Lordship's birthday."

War had again broken out with France in the previous year and Blakeney had become the hero of the hour by reason of his stout defence of the Island of Minorca, of which he was Governor. Though past eighty and crippled with gout, the gallant old man had borne all the rigours of a ten weeks' siege in an ill-provided, under-manned fortress, and, after causing immense loss to the enemy, had capitulated with the honours of war. For this service he was given an Irish peerage, while Admiral Byng, who had failed to relieve him, was shot—the scapegoat of a criminally inept ministry.

It is not clear how Blakeney became associated with the Artillery Company. It may be that he was admitted an honorary member in the hour of his popularity. If so, there is no record to that effect.

In the following year a form of drill known as the "Prussian Exercise" was adopted, and a drill sergeant was employed to instruct members in the intricacies of this new system, which was stated to be that employed by the Foot Guards. However, in the following year this order was cancelled, as it appeared that the King had issued no order abolishing "the old English exercise," which was therefore restored.


View of the Company and the Gentlemen at Military Exercise in the Artillery Ground

A PARADE, CIRCA 1760

The engraving, of which the above is a reproduction, has been recently acquired by the Regiment. Its origin is unknown, but it gives us the earliest known picture of Armoury House and the Company on parade in the ground. Note the Grenadier Company in the distance with their drummer and fifer. This print shows the high wall, built in 1641, which enclosed the ground before any houses were built on the east side.

BALDWIN PUBLIC LIBRARY

The Court now gave leave to a Mr. Ladd to use the Ground for testing a machine which he had invented to travel without horses and which he could not try in any field or public place without risk of its being injured by the crowd. Unfortunately details of this invention are lacking.

The Ground does not appear to have been exclusively devoted to military purposes at this time, for complaint was made to the Court in 1758 that " Horse and Foot Races were frequent in the Artillery Ground to the great Detriment of the Gates and other Buildings by Persons climbing over to see the same." At the same Court an application from the keeper of the Pied Horse, in Chiswell Street (a tavern which still exists under the same name), for leave to give an " Exhibition of Horsemanship " in the Ground, was refused.

The Court had always been decidedly averse to allowing horses in the Ground. As early as 1673 orders were issued that horses should not be " suffered to bee ridd " in the Artillery Garden. Again in 1725 it was decided that the conduct of the person who rented the herbage in allowing horses " to ride and breathe (exercise) around the Ground " was decidedly " prejudicial to the Herbage thereof and dishonourable to this Company." One exception was made in favour of the Civic Official known as " The Common Hunt," who was permitted to graze his charger in the Ground as a special favour.

In spite of complaints, the practice of foot-racing in the Ground continued. A daily paper of 1765 records that a race was run in the Artillery Ground " by a remarkable little Gentleman, not quite four Feet high, against three blooming young Ladies; three Heats from the Gate in Bunhill-Row, to the Gate in Bunhill-Fields; the Odds at starting were five to three against the Gentlemen: The first Heat was won by one of the Ladies, with great Ease, on which the Odds were doubled; the second Heat was in favour of the Gentleman, for above Half the Course, when a Chimney Sweeper's Boy happened to fall down in the Gentleman's Way, which occasioned the Umpires to declare it foul; the third Heat the Gentleman was distanced. The Race was performed before a vast Number of Spectators and afforded uncommon Diversion." A few years later we find that "William Lodwick, of the Isle of Ely, hopp'd four miles in the Artillery Ground, for a wager of thirty guineas; he had an hour allowed him, but performed it in fifty-eight minutes!"

Even the prize ring was not considered out of place on our premises. It is recorded that, in 1772, "a severe battle was fought in the Artillery-ground, between two young men, for fifty guineas a side, when, after fighting for some time, one of them had his collar-bone broke."

It is not clear whether these events were a source of revenue to the Company, or if they were organised for the amusement of members. Apparently the general public were admitted, and it is probable that the gentleman who leased the herbage of the ground was responsible for these most unmilitary spectacles.

CHAPTER VIII

1760 TO 1779

WHEN their Captain-General died in October, 1760, the Company decided to present their loyal felicitations to his grandson, who succeeded him as George III. An address was drawn up which, after appropriate condolences and congratulations, requested the King to appoint a new Captain-General according to custom, and concluded with the usual protestations of loyalty. It was ordered that no member should accompany the President at the presentation of this address unless dressed in black, with weepers, plain hats with crape hat-bands and cockades, major or queue wigs, and black swords. Furthermore, not more than two were to ride in each private coach or chariot.

Owing to almost inconceivable dilatoriness on the part of the President in making an appointment with the Lord Chamberlain, this address was never presented, in spite of the repeated efforts of the Court to bring it about. Accordingly the subject matter was incorporated in a fresh address on the occasion of the King's marriage in 1761. This second attempt, after long delay, reached His Majesty. Three years passed without any sign of a reply and the Company again approached the throne with a request for the appointment of a Captain-General. Finally, in 1766, King George issued the usual Warrant confirming all the ancient privileges of the Company and appointing George Augustus Frederick, Prince of Wales, then a child of three, to be Captain-General, a position which he was to retain for the next sixty-three years. In the previous year the Company had celebrated the birthday of their future Commander by firing the cannon in the Ground and by the consumption of a ham and two fillets of veal, "to be eat cold in the evening and two currant tarts 4*s*. each."

One of the results of the long delay in the appointment of a Captain-General was that the Clerk complained that he had been for several years deprived of his usual bounty of ten guineas on rendering to His Majesty the return of the annual elections.

The early years of this reign were disgraced by a shocking act of vandalism on the part of the Court. By their order the old pattern Grenadiers' caps and slings were burned for the sake of the silver, which was sold (at 6*s*. 4*d*. per oz.) for £15 15*s*. 7*d*. The silver heads of the old Leading Staves were also sold and realised just over £4. It would seem that the Regiment is fortunate in the possession of the few remaining relics of its early history.

The Colours of the Company in 1771 consisted of a Union flag, charged with the Rose and Thistle, the Prince of Wales' Plume and the motto "Ich Dien," and a crimson flag embroidered with the Company's arms. Apparently by this time the number of Colours carried had been definitely reduced to two. The field of the Regimental Colour was changed from red to blue, to correspond with the colour of the facings, in 1783.

It was in 1768 that the Corporation, anxious to do honour to the King of Denmark, requested the Company to furnish a Guard of Honour at Westminster, where His Danish Majesty embarked, and another Guard and an Escort at Temple Stairs, where he landed on his way to dine at Mansion House. It is recorded that the Company performed the duty required of them in such a manner as added greatly to the dignity of the metropolis, but the occasion has the added interest of being the first instance of what has for long been a cherished privilege of the regiment,—the provision of a Guard of Honour on every occasion of the visit of foreign monarchs to the City.

An episode which took place in the following year has a bearing upon another of the Company's especial privileges, that of marching under arms through the City of London. The Lord Mayor wrote to the Secretary for War complaining that a detachment of Guards, returning to the Tower after suppressing a riot at Spitalfields, had marched through the City with drums beating, fifes playing, and generally making "a very war-like appearance, which raised in the minds of peaceable citizens the idea of a town garrisoned by regular troops." This does not appear to the modern idea a very terrible crime, but it must be remembered that in those days the army was exceedingly unpopular with the general public; civil authorities were particularly prone to annoy the military whenever possible; and the City of London in particular was very jealous of anything which might partake of the nature of a recruiting campaign. His Lordship therefore demanded to know by whose orders this unusual procedure took place. In reply the Secretary for War gave it as his opinion that no troops should march through the City in the manner described without previous notice to the Lord Mayor. He promised to deal with the officer of the offending party and to prevent any just offence being given to the City or its Chief Magistrate for the future.

This is not, however, the first instance of the City's assertion of its rights in this direction. In 1746 a detachment of soldiers marching along Cheapside to beat of drum were stopped by an Alderman and desired to desist. The Captain replied, "Sir, we are Marines." "I beg pardon," replied the Alderman. "I did not know. Pray continue your march as you please."

The derivation of the City's authority to forbid the beating of drums, etc., is a matter for some doubt, and the origin of the exercise of the privilege by certain regiments is almost equally obscure. There never seems to have been any dispute as to the rights of the The Buffs, the Grenadier Guards, the Royal Marines and the 7th (Militia) Battalion of the Royal Fusiliers. The last-named are, of course, the lineal descendants of the City Trained Bands themselves. The Buffs were also originally recruited from the Trained Bands for service in Holland in the reign of Elizabeth. But it is probable that the first three regiments mentioned above derived their right to this privilege by ancient usage following on Royal Warrants issued by

Charles II, which gave authority to these regiments to raise recruits by beat of drum all over the country, with a proviso that if their drums were beaten in the City of London the Warrant must first be shown to the Lord Mayor.

The Honourable Artillery Company has never doubted its ancient and prescriptive right to this privilege. Every year for upwards of three hundred years, as its records show, it has marched through the City under arms, with drums beating, colours flying, fifes or hautboys playing, and (since the introduction of that weapon) with bayonets fixed. This has always been a matter of universal knowledge and no objection has ever been raised. The tacit consent of the City to this practice in former years is understandable, since the Company was for centuries a regiment composed of citizens and freemen of London under the practical control of the City authorities, and, when that connection ceased, ancient usage had been established. Consequently it was surprising to find, when the question arose recently, that the archives of Guildhall furnished no official record of the privilege ever having been granted to the Company. The omission is probably accounted for by the fact that none had ever questioned our rights in this matter. However, formal application to the Lord Mayor received favourable consideration, and this long-cherished privilege of the Company was officially placed on record in 1924.

An unusual form of parade took place in 1768. Parliament had been dissolved and a general election was imminent. It was debated at a Court of Assistants as to " whether it was eligible for this Company to go in a Body in their military uniform to vote for such gentlemen whom they should think proper to represent this City in Parliament." The question was decided in the affirmative, and all the members who were Liverymen, and therefore entitled to vote, paraded at Armoury House and marched to the Poll at Guildhall, headed by a band of music.

The engagement of a drill sergeant from the Regular Army marked a new departure for the Company. This occurred in 1770, a " Mr. Osbourn, Drill Serjeant to the First Regiment of Guards " (Grenadiers) being engaged to attend on three days a week for three hours at a time, his duties being to instruct the Company in the exercise then in use by all His Majesty's forces. He received four shillings for each drill. Eight years later we find two Sergeants and two Corporals of the same regiment employed to drill recruits.

The first recorded regimental ball took place in 1771. From that date onwards it became an annual event and was usually held at Armoury House, though occasionally at such places as The Pantheon, in Oxford Road, or The London Tavern. The Company possesses several original copies of notices of these regimental balls, the earliest being dated 1777. It was usually laid down that " each Member be particularly attentive to the Character of the Persons he introduces, as he will be considered responsible for their Conduct," and it was invariably the rule that " no Lady be admitted in an Undress." Quite recently a Ball Ticket dated 1796 was discovered in an unopened envelope among some old papers at Armoury House.

The year 1771 was memorable in the annals of the City for the fact that the Lord Mayor and one of the Aldermen were incarcerated in the Tower for breach of privilege. The Government being the reverse of popular, they at once became the heroes of the moment. During their six weeks' confinement they were lavishly supplied with creature comforts by the Corporation and received innumerable visits, addresses and letters of thanks from their supporters in the City and elsewhere.

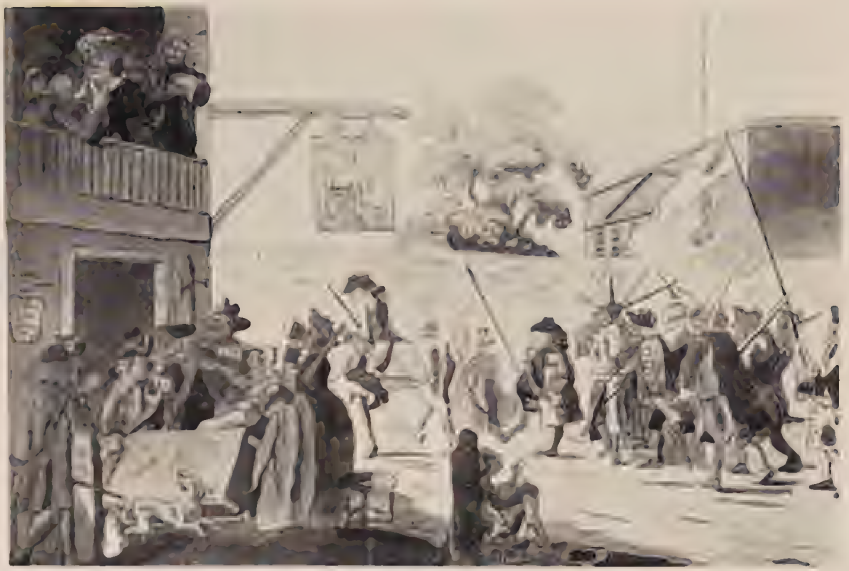
It was proposed at a Court of Assistants of the Artillery Company that an address of thanks should be sent to these gentlemen from the Company " for their steady and upright conduct in defence of the rights of Englishmen," but after a long debate the motion was negatived. However, when the prisoners were finally released, the Artillery Company, in full uniform, welcomed them with a salute from twenty-one field pieces and headed the procession that escorted his Lordship from the gates of the Tower to his residence.

The famous John Wilkes was another of the popular heroes of the day, due to his strenuous assertion of the people's right to have debates in the House of Commons reported in the Press. Shortly after his election as an Alderman in 1770 he was appointed one of the Generals of the Artillery Company, but does not appear to have taken much active interest in his military duties. His exclusion by the Court of Aldermen from the Mayoralty after a tie at the polls in 1772 led to a riot at Guildhall. The Artillery Company was sent for and remained on duty there all night, for which they received a vote of thanks from the Court of Aldermen.

The scene at Guildhall on this occasion is thus described in the diary of the Duchess of Northumberland :—

> "On the Lord Mayors Day the Mob insulted the Procession very much but it was much worse in the Evening when a number of Fellows, headed by some sailors with short Bludgeons, assembled about the Guildhall threatening all who came near them.
>
> "Many Gentlemen and Ladys going to the Ball were grossly insulted; The populace in order to get into the Hall, pull'd down the temporary works before the Portico, & set the Rails on Fire, an Engine being sent for to extinguish it, they threw that into the Flames. The Constables after a great Scuffle were obliged to take Refuge in the Hall. The populace forced open the Iron Gates, & then made an attempt upon the Door. A number of Gentlemen sallied forth with their Swords drawn but were obliged to return.
>
> "After some Time Mr. Sheriff Lewis, with several other Gentlemen with drawn Swords came to the Door & order'd it to be thrown open, then he exhorted the people to become appeas'd; otherwise he intimated that the Riot Act must be read, & the Consequences would be dreadful. The Sheriff by his conciliating words pretty well abated the Storm; & the Artillery Company soon arriving all became calm."

When Wilkes finally became Lord Mayor in 1774, a deputation from the Company waited on him with the usual offer of service, which was declined. The Lord Mayor evidently preferred to be attended by the Cripplegate Grenadiers, as at a



"THE VICTORIOUS RETURN OF THE CITY MILITIA AFTER STORMING THE DUNGHILL AT BUNHILL FIELDS AND OBLIGING THE GARRISON TO SURRENDER AT DISCRETION."

From the original drawing by Rowlandson, dated 1772, in the possession of the Company. Showing Armoury House in the background.

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

subsequent Court of Assistants eight Sergeants of the Trained Bands were dismissed the Company for marching in that body on Lord Mayor's Day.

A curious entry occurs in the records of 1773, when four dozen "hatt pins" were ordered to be purchased for the use of the Company. It is probable that these were used to secure the mitre-shaped head-dresses of the Grenadier Company. The Grenadiers were still considered the *corps d'élite* of the regiment. Only a few years before it had been decided that none but Commissioned Officers (of the Trained Bands) were to be admitted to their ranks.

In 1774 the Rules and Orders of 1658 were repealed in favour of a new code. The old orders were closely followed, but there were several important alterations. After setting forth the constitution and the list of officials of the Company, who were to be chosen by ballot "according to ancient custom," they proceeded to lay down regulations for the election of the Field Officers for each year. These consisted of the Generals, Lieutenant-Generals and Major-Generals, two or more of each rank, who performed their various duties in rotation at the various grand marches, etc. The office of General was to be confined to members of the Court of Aldermen; while the two Sheriffs elect were to be appointed Lieutenant-Generals. On election to their respective ranks these gentlemen paid £10 each to the funds of the Company. It was further ordered that the Company should not attend any gentleman who became Lord Mayor unless he had paid these sums when due, as well as a further payment of £40 10*s*. for the attendance of the Company in arms on Lord Mayor's Day. Major-Generals were to be elected from the senior Commissioned Officers, and to pay £5 on their advancement to that rank.

The Rules enacted that any gentleman elected to the Court of Assistants and declining to accept office should be fined a guinea, plus 2*s*. 6*d*. to the "Poor's Box." Refusal to pay the fine was to be punished by expulsion.

Every Member of the Court in rotation was obliged to take command of a Public or Private "Lead" and to provide an entertainment afterwards, but to safeguard the Leader from undue expense it was laid down that not more than 24 members should parade on a private, or 48 on a public lead, unless at the invitation of the commander for the evening. Further, no member was to be permitted to share in the entertainment who had not appeared under arms. A scale of fines was fixed for members of the Court who declined to take their turns to lead. Gentlemen were required to be silent and attentive when on parade, under penalty of being reported to the Court of Assistants; and anyone breaking off before being regularly dismissed was mulcted of one shilling to the Poor Box.

Article 29 provided that the Company should attend in arms the funeral of any member on payment of two guineas. It is noteworthy that, while the injunctions against quarrelling, profane cursing and swearing remained in force, the old rules against drunkenness and gambling were omitted.

The question of the renewal of the Company's lease of the Artillery Ground arose in 1775. After prolonged discussion it was agreed that the Company should give up the strip of land along the east side of the ground in return for the renewal of the leases for the remainder. The western half of the ground, which is the freehold of the Corporation of London, was then let to the Company for 61 years, at the expiration of which it was to be renewable every 14 years for ever. The eastern half, which the Corporation holds on lease from the Prebendary of Finsbury, was leased to the Company for 83 years, commencing from 1780, and renewable without fine for all future leases taken by the City.

The year 1776 is chiefly notable for the fact that a blue uniform was ordered for the Sergeant Major, in order that he might "appear in character as Sergeant Major of this Company." It was also enacted that no gentleman should be admitted a member unless he produced a copy of his freedom of the City and was recommended by two members of the Court. The playing of cards in Armoury House was forbidden, except on the day of the annual regimental ball, under penalty of one guinea.

In July, 1778, a company of about fifty gentlemen, who for some time previously had met for military exercise in Fishmongers' Hall, applied for leave to use the Artillery Ground. They declared themselves ready to become members of the Company if that were necessary. After consideration the Court decided that those who were freemen of the City should be admitted members, being eligible, and that those who were not freemen should be allowed the use of the ground for training for three months. This company afterwards became known as The London Association.

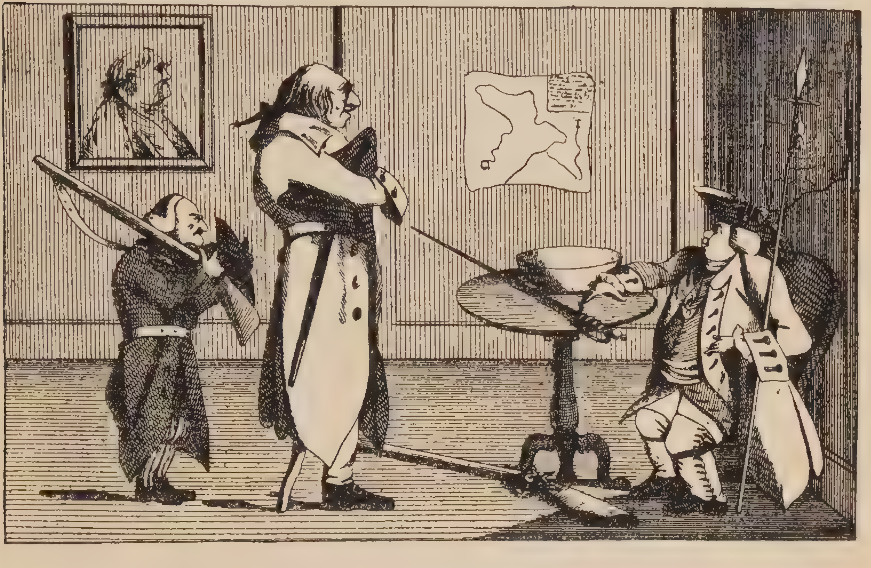
For many years it had been the custom for newly-elected members of the Court of Assistants to give a dinner to the remainder of the Court. This was called the Colts' Feast, or, latterly, the Stewards' Feast. In 1779 the Colts were severely censured at a subsequent Court for having, contrary to ancient custom, provided " a very coarse and indifferent entertainment," so that many members quitted the room and regaled themselves at a neighbouring tavern. However, at the next General Court this accusation was declared to be malicious and unjust and the motion ordered to be rescinded.

It was becoming not uncommon for the Company to be called upon to quell riots and disturbances in the City. In fact we are now entering upon a new phase in the history of the corps, in which its main sphere of usefulness lay in the policing of the City at a time when no other force was available to keep in check the unruly element. In 1777 the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs, fearing a disturbance on Lord Mayor's Day, again requested the Company to mount guard at Guildhall. Accordingly the members assembled. Their officers were ordered to pay the strictest attention to the dress and conduct of their men, " as a considerable share of the future fame of the Company depended on the spirited execution of the guard at Guildhall." They remained on duty all night, for which they received an honorarium of £10 from the Corporation.

Whatever may have been the value of the Company as a corps of military police, it is fairly obvious that their efficiency as a combatant unit must have been seriously open to question at this stage of their existence. This appears to have been realised by the Court in 1778, at a time when all Europe was preparing for war, for it was resolved that "as it appeared by the Charter of Henry VIII and the Patents of James I and Charles I that the Company was in those times deemed useful for the maintenance, defence and safety of the realm, and *as it might be made so again* by a proper execution of the power reposed in them by His Majesty's Warrant," it was the duty of the Company to take speedy and effectual means to encourage recruiting and to promote and enforce military exercises among its members, "as it was only by numbers and discipline that a Military Corps could be rendered formidable and respectable."

Shortly afterwards a "plan for restoring the Artillery Company to its ancient splendour and making it a most respectable Military Association" was put forward by a member. His chief suggestions were that all ranks and titles should be laid aside except such as related to the Company; that all members should be united in a body with a uniform peculiar to itself; and that non-Freemen should be admitted as members. These proposals were negatived at a General Court, but the seed was to bear fruit three years later.

The close connection which had existed for centuries between the Company and the London Trained Bands was now to be broken. For the past sixty years the Court of Lieutenancy had voted to the Company annual training grants of £78 for the Officers and £72 for the Sergeants of the Trained Bands. In 1769 the latter allowance was withdrawn at the request of the Militia Officers, who objected to the Sergeants claiming equality with them as members of the Artillery Company. This action had not the desired effect, as the Sergeants were still retained as members of the Company at reduced rates of subscription. The Lieutenancy therefore issued an order that no member of the Artillery Company should at the same time be a Sergeant in the Militia, but, in order not to deprive the Company of their services, directed that the Sergeants should do duty with the Company on all grand marches and public exercises. This order carried with it an allowance of £100 per annum to the Company for training expenses, an arrangement which only lasted for ten years.



"THE CITY TRAIN'D BANDS RECRUITING SERJEANT."

A Caricature published in 1773. An Officer of the Trained Bands, wearing his gorget and clasping his half pike, apparently fails to see the diminutive recruit brought in by the one-legged sergeant.

Then came the cleavage. In 1778, the Lord Mayor elect, Sir John Esdale, somewhat rudely rejected the offer of the Company's services as an escort, saying that there were very many bad customs belonging to the office of Mayor "which ought to be broke." On being reminded that former Mayors had been censured for not accepting this service, he said he did not mind censure. However, the Company furnished a Guard on Lord Mayor's Day and remained on duty at Guildhall all night. It was ordered that any member convicted of being disguised in liquor, or behaving in a riotous manner at the

Lord Mayor's ball, being in regimentals, should be fined half a guinea.

The blank refusal of their services was a set-back to the Company, but worse was to come. In the following year Alderman Brackley Kennett, Treasurer of the Company, was chosen Lord Mayor. The Company tendered their services as usual. The Lord Mayor not only declined them but refused to entertain the Company, as was customary. This decision, it would appear, was not due to meanness, as he afterwards paid £50 to the Company's funds in lieu of the entertainments. The reason lay in a desire that another military body, which included certain members of the Company, should act as the Mayoral escort on the day of the procession. The Court of Assistants were aware of the proposal and took great offence. Copies of their former orders, which were also the orders of the Lieutenancy, were printed and sent to every member drawing attention to the penalty of expulsion to which any member was liable who presumed to march with any other military body on such an occasion. In addition, the following advertisement was inserted in the newspapers :—

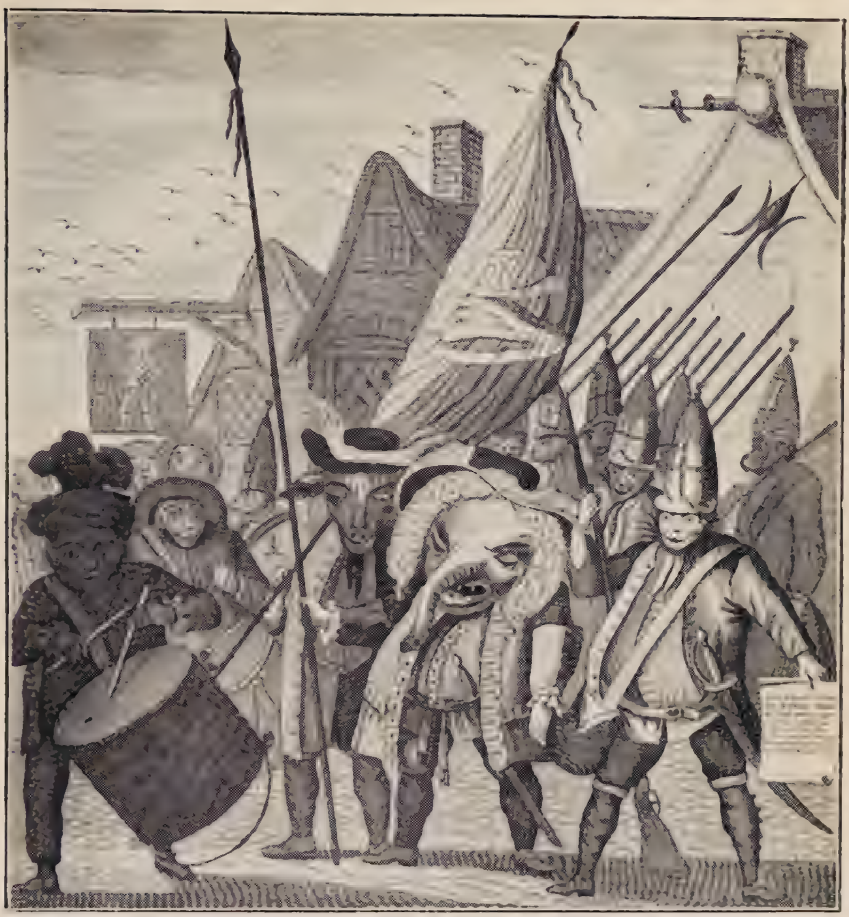
"HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY.

"*Armoury House*, *6th November*, 1779.

"The Court of Assistants of the said Company acquaint the Public, that the Lord Mayor elect having HIRED a Number of Persons to attend him as a Military Body on Lord Mayor's day, hope that if any censure should be thrown on them, for Misconduct or otherways, it will not be imputed to the Artillery Company, they having no concern in the Management of the Business on that day.

"Signed, by order of the Court,
"PETER LONGES, *Clerk*."

This action had no effect. The Lord Mayor had his private bodyguard, and at the next meeting of the Court a dozen members of the Company were expelled, including the



RECRUITING FOR THE CITY TRAINED BANDS, AS SEEN BY A CARICATURIST, CIRCA 1770

An inscription below the print runs thus:—

See Valiant Captain Snout appears,
The Drum beats up for Volunteers
You that are weary of your wives
And willing to lead merry lives
Who from the Tally man would run
And clutches of the Bailiff shun
List under him without delay
And enter into present pay.

The wording on the scroll held by the leading grenadier is as follows:—

Come Taylors & Weavers, And sly Penny Shavers
All haste and repair to ye Hog in Rag Fair
To list in the Pay of the Captain to-day
And you shall have Cheer, Beef Pudding and Beer.

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

Lord Mayor himself and several officers of the Orange Regiment, of which he was Colonel. The Lord Mayor promptly laid a complaint before the Lieutenancy and this unfortunate business resulted in the withdrawal of all grants and an order that no Officer or Sergeant of the Trained Bands should in future do duty with the Artillery Company without leave of the Court of Lieutenancy or the Lord Mayor. The Company countered with a request to His Lordship for payment of his overdue fines of £10 on election to Lieutenant-General of the Company in 1766 and £10 on attaining the rank of General in 1769, informing him that it was customary to pay when in office. The Lord Mayor replied that he did not care what was customary, but would consider it.

This undignified squabble led to a practically complete severance between the military authorities of the City of London and the Company. From that day to the present time the regiment has pursued its existence entirely independent of financial support from the Corporation of London. Furthermore, it put an end to the immemorial custom of acting as escort to the Lord Mayor on the occasion now known as "Lord Mayor's Day."

These were not the only changes in the customs of the Company that were brought about in the year 1779, which marks, as it were, a turning-point in the history of the regiment. The celebrated march to Balmes (or Baums) took place for the last time in that year; the drills known as "Publick and Private Leads," which had been held in the Artillery Ground as far back as the records of the Company extend, were also held for the last time, both these ancient customs being discontinued after the re-organisation of the following year. Even the uniform was altered. An order laid down that members should appear on Grand Marches in plain scarlet coats, blue facings and white edging, with white waistcoats and breeches, white stockings, black knee-garters, and black half-gaiters. This is the first mention of blue facings in the dress of the regiment.

Several copies of regimental orders for the Balmes March survive. The earliest relates to the march of 1773 and runs as follows:—

"*London*, *August* 4, 1773.

"SIR

"On *Thursday*, the 12th Instant, 1773, the Honourable the *Artillery Company* are to march to *Baums*, or the Fields leading thereto.

"You, as a Member of the said Company, are desired to appear at the *Armory*, in the *Artillery-Ground*, on that Day, in your military Uniform, completely armed, agreeable to the Character to which you are appointed.

"The Books will be opened at Twelve o'Clock, and the Muster peremptorily closed at Two; and no Person will be mustered after that Time, on any Pretence whatsoever.

"Those, who march as Fuzileers, will not be mustered, unless they are furnished with at least sixteen Charges of Powder, a Pouch, and a Bayonet.

"Ordered, by the Court of Assistants, that no Officer [1] shall be mustered, on any Pretence whatsoever, but such only as appear in the same military Uniform as they are obliged to do with their respective Regiments.

"Those Gentlemen, who act as Sergeants, are to wear Swords, and Sashes round their Waists, but no Croslets, and march with Halberts, on the Angles of their respective Divisions.

"*At a Court of Assistants, held at the* Armory, *in the* Artillery-Ground, November 2, 1762.

"Whereas, it appears to this Court, that several Members of this Company have taken the Liberty to act as *commissioned* and *staff Officers*, on the *public Marches*, without being appointed such by any of the *commanding Officers*, who have a Right to nominate:

"Ordered, to prevent the like for the Future, that whoever shall presume to march as an Officer, unless regularly appointed, shall not only lose the Benefit of his Muster,[2] but pay Two Shillings and Six-pence into the Poor's-Box.

"And it is also ordered, that every Member, whose Appearance is marked in the Muster-Book, and who doth not do the whole Duty required to be done by him, shall also not only be deprived of any Benefit from his said Muster, but likewise pay Five Shillings into the Poor's-Box.

---

[1] *I.e.* of the Trained Bands.

[2] *I.e.* his proportion of the Lieutenancy grant.

"And whereas some Members of this Company have refused, and others neglected, to pay their respective Quarterage[1]:

"Notice is hereby given, that no Gentleman, who owes one Year at *Lady-Day* last, will be permitted to act as an Officer on a Public-March, or bear Arms at any Lead in the *Artillery-Ground*, agreeable to an Order, confirmed by a General-Court, held at the *Guildhall*, *London*, the 14th Day of *April*, 1720.

"Neither will they be admitted to any Entertainment, either of the Company or after any Exercise, till the said Arrears are paid.

"And it is ordered, that the Adjutant do make a Return, in Writing, to the next Court of Assistants, of all those who act contrary to these or such other Orders as they shall receive from the superior Officers, appointed for the Duty of the Day.

"*By Order of the Court of Assistants*,
"JOHN CROCKER, *Clerk*.

"*Those Majors, who have any Alteration of their Officers, in their respective Regiments, since the last March, are desired to send an Account thereof to the Clerk of the Company in Time, that the* Muster-Books *may be made complete.*

"N.B. A Court of Assistants at One o'Clock.

"*Note.* No Servants or Children will be permitted to come into the Room where the Officers sup."

An order dated 1778, addressed to the Sergeants of the Trained Bands and relating to the Baums March for that year, concludes with the following warning:—

"If any Serjeant or Serjeants quit his or their Post (without proper Leave) before the Company is regularly discharged, or are guilty of any Misbehaviour, or shall break their Ranks on their March, or fire their Piece, or fire, fling, or throw, any Squib, Cracker, or other Fire-works, (without an Order from the proper Officer so to do,) such Person, so offending, shall entirely forfeit and lose all Advantages he may be entitled to for that Day's Duty."

---

[1] *I.e.* subscription.

It should be understood that the Sergeants of the Trained Bands marched in the ranks of the Company as Private soldiers. They must not be confused with the Members appointed Sergeants for each particular march, who marched on the angles of the divisions, as shown above. The squibs and crackers were evidently used to take the place of grenades in the sham fights which invariably concluded the day's exercise.

On the occasion of the last march to Balmes, in 1779, all members of the Company not Officers or Sergeants of the Trained Bands were required to parade in the newly adopted regulation uniform for the Company, viz. "A scarlet Coat, lined with white and faced with blue, the Lining to be set over the Edges, The Breadth of the Lappels to be two Inches and a Half, to reach down to the Waist, and not to be wider at Top than at Bottom. The Sleeves of the Coat to have a small round Cuff turned up, to be three Inches deep. The Cape of the Coat to be two Inches deep, and the Buttons to be set on in Twos: Viz. Ten on each Lappel one to button through the Corner of the Cape; four on the Cuffs; four on the Pocket-flaps; and two worked Holes behind; with white Waistcoat and Breeches; white Stockings; black Knee-garters; and black Half-gaters."

The Company still followed its ancient practice of electing all officials yearly at a General Court, and it seems that those offices which carried emoluments were eagerly sought after by members. Consequently it was the custom, before the Annual General Court or whenever a vacancy occurred through death or resignation, for the candidates for appointments to canvass their fellow members for votes. For instance, Captain John Crocker puts forward his claim to be continued in the office of Adjutant in the following terms:—

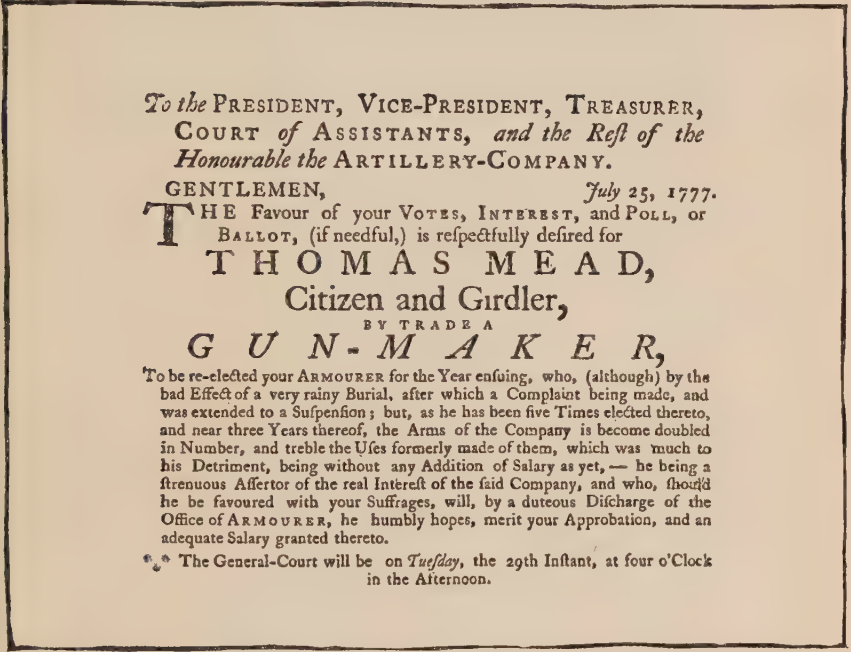
"GENTLEMEN,

"Having had the Honour of being elected ADJUTANT of your Company (at several General Courts), I beg Leave to solicit the Favour of your Interest and Poll, to be continued in the said Office.

"Should I be so happy as to meet with your Approbation, it shall be my constant Care and Endeavour to discharge the Duties of that Office with the greatest Fidelity.

"*I have the Honour to be,*
"GENTLEMEN,
"*Your obedient humble servant,*
"September 10, 1778. "JOHN CROCKER.

"N.B. I have been a Member of the said Company upwards of Twenty three years."



To the PRESIDENT, VICE-PRESIDENT, TREASURER, COURT *of* ASSISTANTS, *and the Reſt of the Honourable the* ARTILLERY-COMPANY.

GENTLEMEN, *July* 25, 1777.

THE Favour of your VOTES, INTEREST, and POLL, or BALLOT, (if needful,) is reſpectfully deſired for

THOMAS MEAD,

Citizen and Girdler,

BY TRADE A

GUN-MAKER,

To be re-elected your ARMOURER for the Year enſuing, who, (although) by the bad Effect of a very rainy Burial, after which a Complaint being made, and was extended to a Suſpenſion; but, as he has been five Times elected thereto, and near three Years thereof, the Arms of the Company is become doubled in Number, and treble the Uſes formerly made of them, which was much to his Detriment, being without any Addition of Salary as yet,— he being a ſtrenuous Aſſertor of the real Intereſt of the ſaid Company, and who, ſhould he be favoured with your Suffrages, will, by a duteous Diſcharge of the Office of ARMOURER, he humbly hopes, merit your Approbation, and an adequate Salary granted thereto.

⁂ The General-Court will be on *Tueſday*, the 29th Inſtant, at four o'Clock in the Afternoon.

FACSIMILE OF A CIRCULAR SOLICITING VOTES FOR THE POST OF ARMOURER TO THE COMPANY, 1777.

When the Company's Messenger died in the following year there were several applications for this very subordinate position, including one from a member of the Court of Assistants, whose circular was couched in the following terms:—

"GENTLEMEN,

"With humble Submission, I presume to solicit the Favour of your Votes and Interest, to succeed Mr. James

Hannan, your late Messenger to your Company, having been a Member Thirty-nine Years, and been on the Elective and Honorary Court of Assistants Thirty-eight Years; have served, or fined, for all Offices of the said Company: but having had very great Losses in Trade, and a Family to provide for, makes me more earnestly solicit your Suffrages for the above Office, having no Place or Emolument whatever.

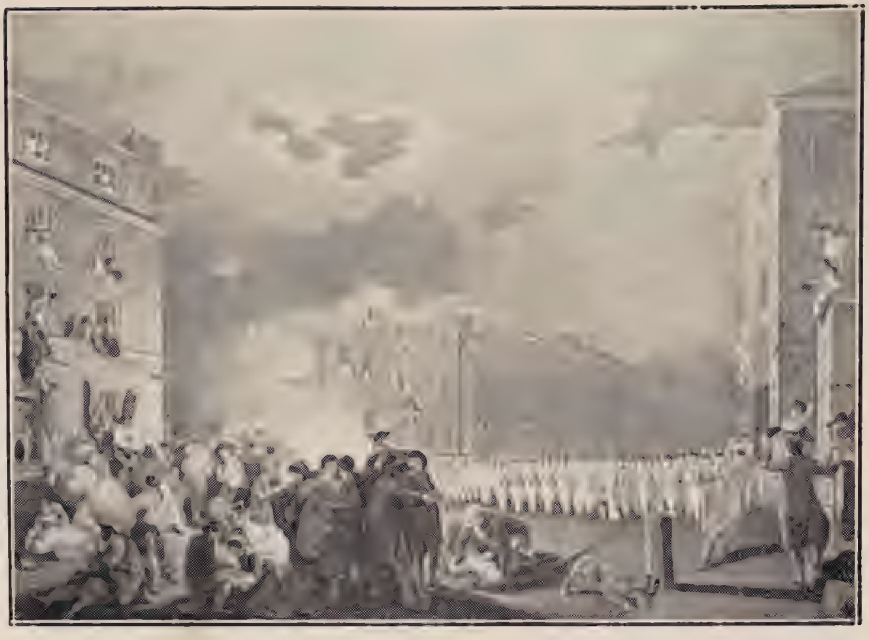
" Therefore, if the Promise of Assiduity and unremitting Application to the Company's Concerns, claims your Countenance and Support on the Day of Election, I shall then have cause to hope for Success, which if so happy as to obtain, the Remainder of my Life shall be devoted to the Service of your Company; and will leave an Impression of Gratitude, which Time only can erase, on him, who, with great Respect, subscribes himself,

" GENTLEMEN,
" *Your most obedient and humble servant,*
" July 7, 1779. " ISAAC DUPREE.

" No. 5, King's-Head-Court,
" St. Martin's Le Grand.

" N.B. The oldest Member but Three."

The above application was unsuccessful, the appointment being given to another member, Mr. John Roake, who described himself as being " reduced by the Vicissitudes of Fortune, and the General Stagnation of Trade, from the Situation he once stood in Life."



THE RIOT IN BROAD STREET ON THE 7TH JUNE, 1780

From the line engraving by James Heath after Francis Wheatley. Showing the London Military Foot Association (afterwards incorporated with the Company) firing on the mob at the command of Major Barnard Turner.

WALTHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

CHAPTER IX

1780 TO 1799

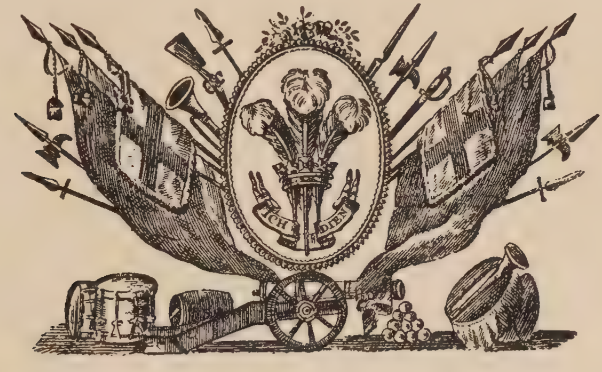
THE disturbances known as the Gordon Riots—a result of the repeal of certain penal statutes directed against Roman Catholics—kept the Artillery Company fully occupied during the month of June, 1780. Some fifty or sixty thousand zealous Protestants, wearing blue cockades, assembled at St. George's Fields under Lord George Gordon, raised the cry of "No Popery," and marched to the Houses of Parliament to deliver a monster petition. They were soon joined by all the scum of London, and in a few hours a mob 100,000 strong was engaged in attacks upon the residences of leading statesmen and the chapels of foreign ministers, a form of warfare which soon degenerated into indiscriminate burning and looting. Rioting continued for six days. Attacks on the Bank of England and the Tower of London were repulsed by the Guards, but the prisons of King's Bench, Newgate, Clerkenwell and others, were forced, the prisoners released and the premises partly burned. Loads of chains and fetters were drawn in triumph through the streets by stolen brewers' dray-horses; fires were started in scores of places; and in every street houses were forced open and the furniture was thrown from the windows into the roadway. The religious zeal of some of the rioters led them to attack a distillery in Holborn, where many of them perished in the flames after stupefying themselves with the spirit which was set running down the gutters from broken casks.

Martial law was at once proclaimed; military were drafted into the City; and the Artillery Company and the London Association, a body of gentlemen volunteers, were called out. The Lord Mayor (Brackley Kennett) seems to have shown a remarkably poor spirit in the face of this emergency. So feeble, not to say cowardly, was his conduct, that he kept a large party of the Artillery Company, with some of the Guards, for his personal protection, instead of employing them to suppress the tumult and safeguard the lives and property of the citizens. However, parties of the Company encountered the rioters at Broad Street, the Poultry and Blackfriars Bridge, and tranquillity was at last restored. A well-known engraving shows the London Association firing on the rioters in Broad Street, on which occasion they were ably led by Captain Barnard Turner. It was estimated that over 240 persons were killed or wounded during the riots.

During the disturbances the Prince of Wales' Dragoon Guards were quartered at Armoury House, a precedent which has been followed on more than one occasion of much more recent date. On this occasion the Company made the troops very welcome, allowing them the use of the House as well as that of the Ground. Before they went the Court entertained the officers to "an elegant dinner," but, the riots being over, they refused to admit a detachment of Foot Guards which had been sent to relieve the Dragoons.

Immediately after the riots, the cellars of Armoury House were used as a prison, and the Justices of Middlesex held their Rotation Office in the House for several days. This, however, was done without the consent of the Court of Assistants, who promptly met and gave orders to prevent a recurrence of this unauthorised use of the premises.

No sooner had complete tranquillity been restored than an order was issued to the Officer Commanding the forces in the City to disarm all persons who did not belong to the Militia. This was taken to apply to the Armed Associations of citizens and caused grave dissatisfaction. The London Association, in particular, had been on duty all through the period of unrest until after the execution of some of the rioters, and they resented most strongly this order for their disarming. They assembled at the Mansion House, decided that they were entitled to retain their arms under that clause of the Bill of Rights which laid down that "Protestants may bear arms for their defence," and refused to surrender them. Their officers, Major Henry Smith and Captain Barnard Turner, were ordered to appear before the Privy Council, where they repeated their refusal to comply with the order and also declined suggestions of compensation in the form of rank, honours or cash. Finally, to secure themselves against any further action on the part of the Government, it was decided that all the members of the London Association should join the Artillery Company in a body. This was done, Barnard Turner himself, in recognition of his "spirited and active part in suppressing the late dangerous riots," being admitted an Honorary Member, free of the usual fees, any former order to the contrary notwithstanding.



An Engraving from the List of Chiefs, Officers, etc. of the Company for 1780. Showing the Prince's Plume, then the Regimental Badge, surrounded by trophies of arms, etc.

The complete re-organisation of the Company, which had been impending for some years, was now undertaken in earnest. It was first decided to cancel all previous rules as to qualifications for membership and manner of admission, and in future to admit any person of fair, unblemished character (being a Protestant), well affected to the King and Constitution, able to bear the expense and willing to conform to the Rules of the Company.

The only stipulation was to be that the candidate must not be under age, or an apprentice or covenant servant. The subscription was fixed at ten shillings per annum, with entrance fees of two guineas to the regiment, three shillings to the Clerk, two to the Messenger, and two to the Poor Box.

Every candidate was to be proposed by two members at one Court for admission at the next, and the names, addresses and occupations of all candidates were to be circulated to members of the Court in advance. Any member so elected who was not a Freeman of London was ineligible to vote at elections or to become a member of the Court. Some months later a rule was added that candidates should appear in person before the Court at the time of their admission. This was a new departure and the custom survives to the present day. Another qualification was that no one should be admitted who was under five feet two inches in height, or " from his situation in life, and make, not calculated to assume a Military appearance."

So much for the recruiting regulations. On admission each member was expected to provide himself with arms, uniform and accoutrements. In January, 1781, the Court approved of a new pattern of uniform, which followed closely the lines of that of the Regular Army of the period. The cost of the arms and accoutrements was £4 *9s. 6d.*, and that of the uniform £5 8*s.* 0*d.* The price of the white kerseymere waistcoat and breeches was not included in the above, as these articles, being similar to those worn in civilian attire, " could be used at any time."

Then came questions of organisation. For the first time the Company was organised into a Battalion on the most up-to-date lines. This consisted of a Grenadier Company, four " Hat " or Battalion Companies (so called because they wore the ordinary three-cornered hat, as opposed to the Grenadier head-dress), and a Light Infantry Company. These latter carried a shorter musket and wore a jacket instead of a coat, and a small round hat, cocked up on one side with a black cockade, a silver cord round the crown (with a tassel) and a black feather. They were selected from the most active and intelligent of the members.

The Grenadiers were selected by the Adjutant for their size, no gentleman being admitted to that Company who stood under five feet nine inches in height. They were distinguished by wings, ornamented by loops of lace, on their shoulders, and a black feather in their hats.

Membership of the Hat Companies was decided by dividing the City and Liberties of London into four divisions by lines drawn through St. Paul's to the four points of the compass, the members residing in each district forming a Company. These were known as the North-West, North-East, South-West and South-East Companies or Divisions. Members living outside the City were posted to the weakest Companies. When a minimum of 24 members had been entered on the roll of each Company, they assembled and chose their Company Officers, who afterwards met together and settled the matter of seniority by drawing lots. Companies were also asked to agree upon a scale of fines for non-attendance at parades. Two drummers and two fifers were then enlisted and sworn in. Their pay was five pounds a year, with a new suit of clothes and a hat and feather every two years. Finally, the old titles of General, Lieutenant-General and Major-General were abolished and the Court appointed a Colonel, a Lieutenant-Colonel and a Major. The last-mentioned rank was conferred on Barnard Turner.

At once the Company began to improve in discipline and efficiency. Recruits were made to pass through a drill squad before joining the "New Battalion"; divisions were sized and proved before the Major took command; a scale of fines was instituted for absence from roll-call, appearing on parade improperly dressed, or talking in the ranks; and any member who behaved improperly was turned out of the Ground by the picket. As a crowning achievement the Company started musketry practice, of which nothing had been heard since the time of Queen Anne. On July 21st, 1781, the first of many annual "parties for ball-firing" took place at Sydenham. Each member was provided with eight rounds of ball and twenty-four of "blunt" cartridge. The Battalion paraded at the Obelisk in

St. George's Fields at 5 a.m. and marched to Dulwich. There the arms were grounded on the village green, colours were lodged, sentries posted and the Company breakfasted. At 9 a.m. the drums beat to arms and the Company marched to Sydenham Common, where their Colonel (The Right Hon. Sir Watkin Lewes, Lord Mayor) inspected them. Six targets, one for each Company, were fixed in the deepest ravine on the Common, to the rear of the Wells, and here the Battalion fired eight rounds per man " by files from the right." A spirited sham fight enlivened the march back to Dulwich. A party was sent in advance to form an ambush, complete with a masked battery of nine light cannon and three cohorns. The Battalion marched into the ambush, was attacked, recovered itself, drove back the attackers, captured and dismounted the cannon, and finally drew up on the top of a hill and fired three volleys. Then they marched into Dulwich, where they were billeted for the night. At dinner that evening, after the loyal toasts, they drank " Prosperity to the Honourable Artillery Company, and may their truly loyal and spirited example rouse the younger part of their fellow-citizens from their present indolent, and, in times like these, disgraceful pursuits after trifling pastimes and amusements."

On June 21st of this year the Common Council met and passed the following resolution :—

> " Resolved unanimously that two brass field-pieces, not exceeding the value of £150, be presented to the Honourable Artillery Company, for the signal services done by them and the gentlemen of the London Military Foot Association (now incorporated with that body), in suppressing the dangerous Riots in the month of June, 1780 ; and that the Committee for letting this City's Lands be desired to provide the said two Brass Field Pieces."

In the following August the Committee for City Lands asked the Company to purchase two field guns at a cost not exceeding £150. The Court decided that two brass guns which had already been ordered should be accepted as the gift of the City, and that the resolution of the Common Council should be inscribed on the pieces, which were to be presented on August 13th, being the Captain-General's birthday. On that day the Battalion assembled in the Artillery Ground at 6 a.m. and marched over their ancient shooting grounds to Newington Butts, in order to receive the cannon in one of their furthest fields of exercise. The Lord Mayor presented the guns, as the gift of the City, "in a manly and impressive speech." The answer of the Company "was expressed by three vollies, in token of their grateful acceptance." The guns were then wheeled to the flanks and fired a royal salute in honour of the Prince of Wales, which was followed by three volleys from the line. Then, after a march past, the Company returned to Armoury House to a dinner and a display of fireworks.

It is noteworthy that the Company found it necessary to borrow two Sergeants and eight Matrosses from the Royal Artillery at Woolwich to work the guns on this occasion, also that the horses which drew the field pieces and wagons were kindly lent by Messrs. Whitbread, Calvert, Dickenson and Hale, a firm which, under the first mentioned name, is not unknown to the present generation.

These guns are still in the possession of the Company, and it is believed that they are the only examples in the country of what were known as "Battalion Guns," owned and used by an Infantry Regiment. They are brass 3-pounders, with a bore of 2·77 inches, and are still fitted with the original tangent sights. Unfortunately, when they were recast in 1803 the inscriptions, badges, etc. were omitted. They have recently been mounted on reproductions of the original carriages.

Though the Company had for many years used various forms of light field guns for ceremonial and saluting purposes, there had never been any attempt to train a body of members in the handling of artillery. Now, however, it became necessary to make proper use of the guns given by the City, and on November 22nd, 1781, the "gentlemen practising the field-pieces" obtained the sanction of the Court for the formation of a "Matross" Division to work the new guns. This consisted of two companies, or sections, of sixteen members each, chosen from the Battalion, each Company, on formation, choosing a Captain and a Sergeant. Thus the Artillery Division of the Company came into being, an event which marks an important epoch in the history of the corps. It certainly provides the earliest example of the employment of artillery by the auxiliary forces of the Crown.

A new source of revenue was discovered about this time, and sheep were allowed to be grazed on the ground at a charge of one penny each for twenty-four hours. A little later, advertisements offered grazing for sheep or lambs at one halfpenny per head per night.

The close of the year 1781 must have seemed to Englishmen one of the darkest hours in history. Their country, still chafing over the loss of the American Colonies, was at war with France, Spain, Holland, Sweden, and the newly-formed United States. It was at this critical situation that the Company presented a loyal address to the King offering their services, without pay, in any manner His Majesty might please to command, for the defence of the metropolis. King George was highly pleased to approve of this address, and the training of the Company was carried on with increased zeal. Shortly afterwards the Court wrote to the Commander-in-Chief suggesting that some emergency might require the Company's active services, and asking "what rank His Majesty's Ancient Artillery Company holds in the Forces of the Kingdom." The reply was to the effect that the C.-in-C. was not acquainted with any rule by which a precise rank could be assigned to them, but that no doubt every proper respect and attention due to so Ancient and Honourable a Corps would be shown them.

At a meeting of members of the North-District Division of the Company on June 22nd, 1781, the following resolutions were agreed to:—

"1. That, to render the Knowledge they have acquired of Arms useful to their Fellow-Citizens, they will assist at all Fires that may happen within the District, to protect the Properties of the Unfortunate from the Depredations of the Rabble, and to enable the Firemen and Porters to act with greater Effect.

"II. That, for this Purpose, they will immediately, on Notice of Fire, repair to the following Places of Rendezvous, completely armed and accoutred, with Ammunition, *viz.* if the Fire is in *Wood-Street*, *White-Cross-Street*, or to the Eastward of those Streets, to assemble in *Guildhall-Yard;* if to the Westward of those Streets, to assemble in *Falcon-Square*, *Aldersgate-Street.*

"III. That they will remain at the Place of Rendezvous until six or more are assembled, and then act as their Officer shall direct.

"IV. That the Officer leave a list at each Watch-House, of the Members residing in the respective Wards, for the Information of the Watchmen, who will be rewarded in Proportion to their Assiduity in calling the Gentlemen.

"V. That, presuming an Intention to be serviceable induces Gentlemen to become Members of the Hon. ARTILLERY-COMPANY, it is hoped the Ties of Honour and Calls of Humanity will supersede the Necessity of any pecuniary Fines to compel the Attendance of the Corps on such Occasions."

Many Members in addition to those of the North-District Division, undertook liability for this duty, and for many years a party of the Company attended at every fire in the City and performed the duties of police.

The Company celebrated the King's Birthday in 1782 by a parade in conjunction with the London Light Horse Volunteers. They marched out of Headquarters at seven o'clock in the morning, accompanied by the two field pieces and baggage wagons, and proceeded with music playing, drums beating and colours flying, through the City to Hyde Park, where they were inspected by General Conway. The regimental band at this period consisted of four clarionets, two horns, one trumpet, and two bassoons. There were also a drum-major, eleven drummers and ten fifers.

The following description of a duel fought by a member of the Company is culled from a daily paper dated 1783:—" Yesterday I was present at one of the most valiant or murdering duels that history contains. Captain R., an Officer in the Guards, having advanced some disagreeable reflections on the Artillery Company, Mr. S., a Member, resented it with such spirit, that from my information from one of the seconds, no time was lost in appointing time and place; the back of Montagu-house was fixed on and agreed by both parties, after the usual ceremony. Captain R. fired his pistol in the air; Mr. S. returned and shot him in the arm; Captain R. fired and wounded Mr. S. in the leg; the seconds interfered, but to no purpose, for they were determined to conquer or die; the ground was changed two paces nearer; Mr. S. fired and shot Captain R. in the breast, but as he was falling into his second's arms, he fired, and the ball entered his antagonist's groin, which brought him to the ground, and no hopes of the recovery of either."

This is the only recorded instance of a pre-arranged duel fought by a member of the Company, though probably informal affrays were not unusual in those days. Here is an account of such a dispute, taken from a newspaper of 1782:—"Wednesday evening an affray happened in the Artillery-ground, after the dismissing of the Artillery Company, between two gentlemen, supposed to belong to the marines. The quarrel arose from the parties having some words, in the course of which one gave the other the lye, and called him a f—l; upon which the gentleman who received the insult said to his antagonist, 'Sir, you have a sword; dare you draw it?' They both immediately drew, and after a few lunges at each other, in which one of them received a slight wound on his breast, a gentleman interfered, and put a stop to any further mischief that might have happened. Neither of the gentlemen seemed satisfied when they left the ground."

This was the period of the regiment's greatest activity in the policing of the purlieus and suburbs of the metropolis. Contemporary newspapers are full of the doings of the Company in this direction. The neighbourhood of Finsbury and Moorfields had been for many years a favourite resort of dangerous and disreputable characters, and highway robbery was frequent. In 1773 an Officer of the Company, returning home from Armoury House through Chiswell Street, was knocked down by three ruffians, who made off with his hat, his silver-hilted sword and the contents of his purse. Bunhill Row also had a bad reputation and was known colloquially for years as "Thieving Lane."

The Bury Post of July 11th, 1782, records that "a number of the Honourable Artillery Company, headed by Mr. Alderman Turner, assembled at the Artillery House, and divided themselves into separate parties, to patrole the several roads and bye ways for five or six miles round the metropolis. The party that took the road leading from Hoxton to Newington Green met a man and his wife who had just been robbed by five footpads, armed with cutlasses and horse pistols, and getting a description of their persons and the rout they had taken, immediately pursued them, and made the whole gang prisoners, without any resistance. The party which took the Hackney district seized the notorious Grey, with another villain, who took shelter in a house of ill-fame in Shoreditch. The other parties examined every suspicious person they met, but finding no offensive weapons upon them, suffered them to proceed. Thus, by the spirit and activity of these deserving young citizens, were seven of the most audacious offenders that ever frequented the roads assigned over to public justice, the lives and property of their fellow citizens secured from that danger, which the shameful neglect of the magistrates has exposed them to, and the mischief that must have ensued from such a desperate, armed gang of ruffians, safely prevented. They were all examined at Justice Wilmot's office yesterday morning, when there appeared, that the five men taken near the city road, were the persons who murdered Mr. Hurd about five weeks ago in Islington fields."

On another occasion members of the Company patrolling in the neighbourhood of "Old Street Road" apprehended "seven very suspicious fellows, all well known in that part of the town, whom they secured in Clerkenwell prison."

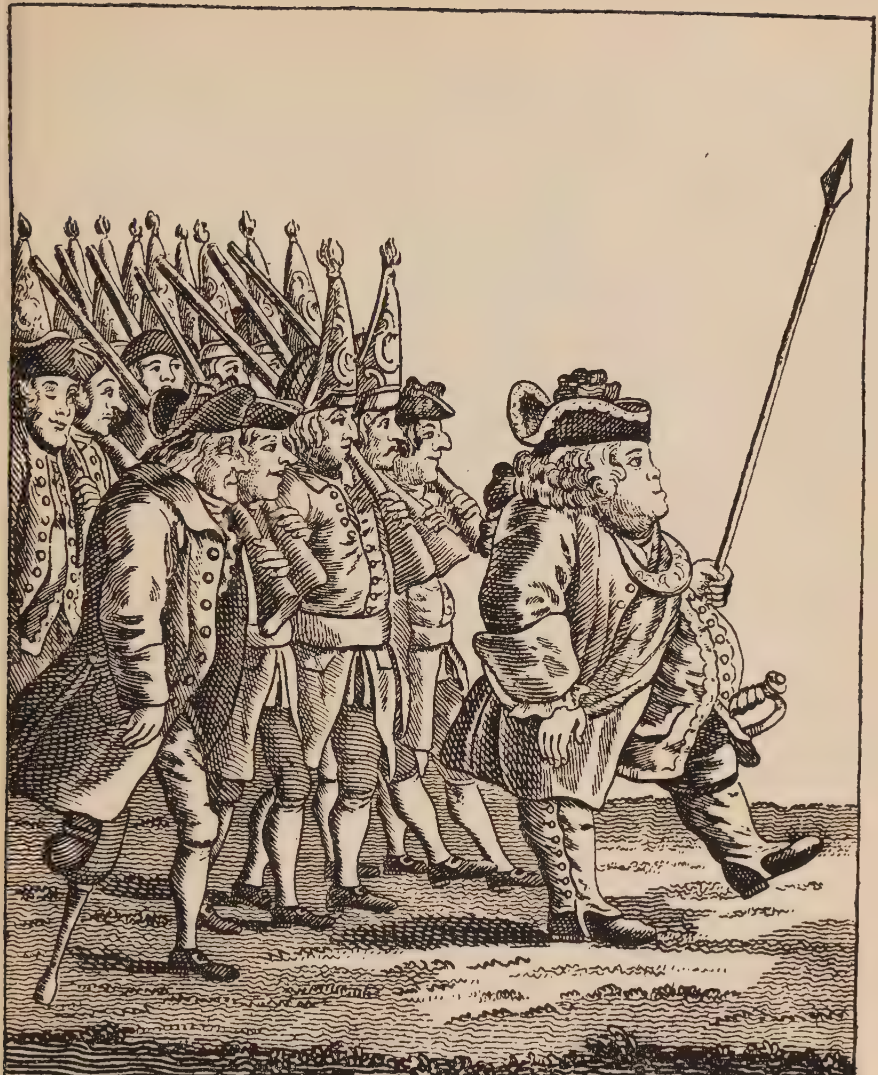
It seems that detachments of the Company acted occasionally as a press-gang for the Navy. On one occasion, in 1782, a detachment of the Light Infantry Company "met privately, and patroled the roads round the metropolis till eleven o'clock, when they proceeded to the neighbourhood of Saffron-Hill; and being joined by some peace officers, made a general search through that neighbourhood, where they apprehended several idle young fellows, whom they sent to serve his Majesty."

About the same time a daily paper records that "fourteen more men were taken up at a public-house, in Kingsland-road, by the Gentlemen of the Artillery Company; yesterday they were examined by the Lord Mayor, when four of them, who could give no account of themselves, were sent on board the tender, the others were discharged, on people of credit appearing to their characters."

That this work was not without its risks is evidenced by the fact that a member of the Company, Mr. Denham, was mortally wounded while on patrol duty to protect inhabitants and wayfarers from the depredations of a very daring band of footpads who infested the fields near Kingsland.

On another occasion the Company was called upon by the Sheriffs to assist in the recapture of escaped convicts who had taken refuge in Gravel Lane, Houndsditch. In fact, the calls upon members at this period became so frequent that it was found necessary to lay down definite instructions as to the occasions on which the Company might properly assist the civil power. It was decided that great fires were suitable occasions, "as also congregations of robbers and other lawless or desperate men, rendering their apprehension dangerous to the unarmed civil power; or gangs of ruffians committing acts of extraordinary villainy or cruelty; but that no members should assemble in uniform except by order of the Court, and under the command of proper officers."

One other duty was performed by the Company as occasion required. It being the custom to withdraw all regular troops from the City during election times, the Company was fre-



The Victorious Return of the **CITY MILITIA**, after ſtorming the Dunghill
at Bunhill Fields, *and obliging the* Garriſon *to surrender at discretion*
Printed for & Sold by CARINGTON BOWLES. N°69 in S^t. Pauls Church Yard
London. Publish'd as the Act directs. 24 June 1779.

AN ENGRAVING AFTER ROWLANDSON'S "STORMING THE DUNGHILL."
Published in 1779.

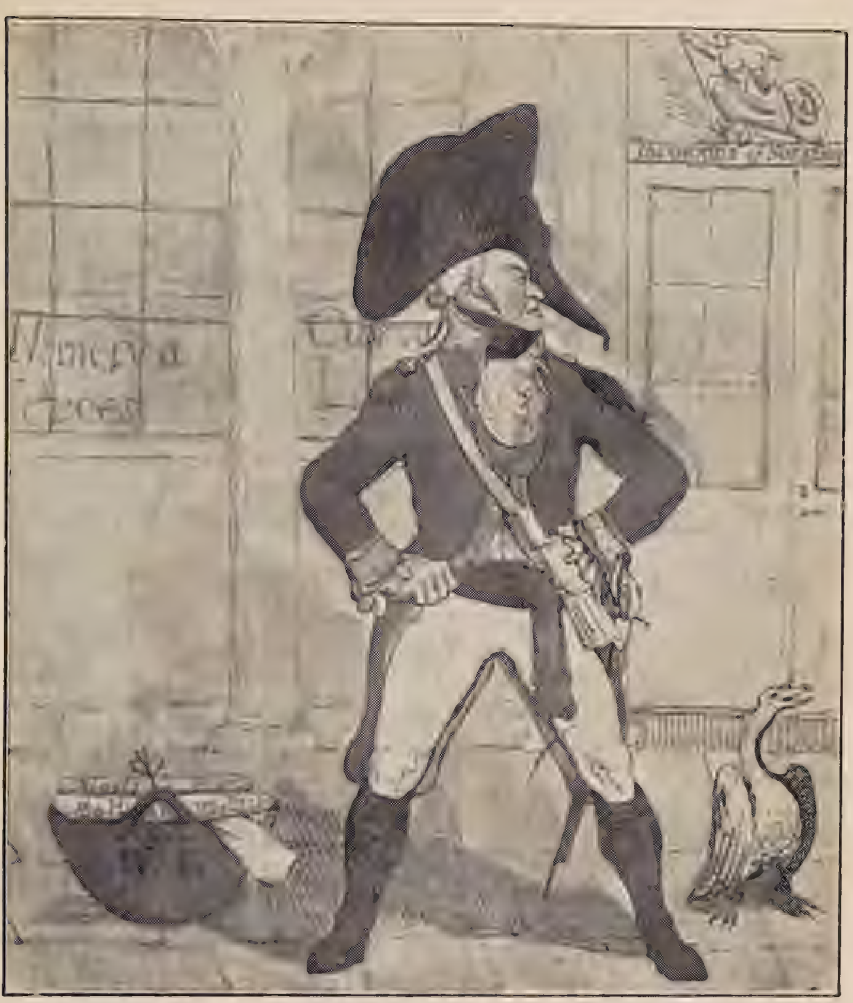
quently asked to relieve the Guards on duty at the Bank of England and to furnish a guard there, sometimes for as long as ten days at a time.

In common with Volunteers at all times and the rest of the Army at this particular period, the Company did not escape the attention of cartoonists and satirists. The Trained Bands or Militia were especially favourite butts for the shafts of these humorists, and many cartoons survive as examples of the sort of uncouth wit that passed for humour in the good old days. A particularly fine sample is Rowlandson's "Storming of the Dunghill at Bunhill Fields." It is dated 1772, and shows a regiment of City Militia marching down City Road past Armoury House. The leading Company of Grenadiers is composed of one-eyed or one-legged rapscallions, one of whom is picking a comrade's pocket as he marches; the officers (who would, as such, be members of the Artillery Company) are ridiculous figures and most of them are shown drinking and brawling in a tavern instead of marching with the regiment. This must have been a popular picture, as several mezzotint and line engravings were made and printed from the original drawing now in the possession of the Company.

Another specimen of contemporary humour is culled from the Press of 1784. It runs as follows:—

> "The Artillery Company and the City Volunteers have sent their old uniforms to be scoured, and interest is making with the City to let them have fire-arms. Proper corporals and sergeants will attend to take care they don't singe one another's eye-brows, or overload their guns. They already march to the dead march in Saul in wonderful good time. It would have frightened the French to see how highly, how widely, how boldly, and terrifically they stepped to the tune of this same march, last Monday, among the tomb-stones in Pancras. Scarce forty of them broke their shins, and not more than twenty fell over the graves."

Here is another example of topical wit, taken from the pages of a newspaper dated 1789:—



CARICATURE OF AN OFFICER OF THE COMPANY, 1798, ENTITLED "BASHAW (?PASHA) COUNT BOUNCE, THE LEADENHALL CAPTAIN"

Written on the margin of the original is the following couplet—

"To Printing Poulterers the fates how kind,—
A Rag Fair Chariot & a Black Behind."

BALDWIN PUBLIC LIBRARY

"Yesterday the City Trained Bands made a martial appearance preparatory to the Grand Procession. . . . When they were drawn up rank and file, there appeared an indiscriminate mixture of men of all sizes, with firelocks in various positions and their accoutrements equally descriptive of military uniformity. . . . On the word, 'to the right face,' being given, some went to the right, some to the left, and some to the left about, and others, more prudent than the rest, went home. The word march was unfortunately the next; of course a violent bumping of heads ensued, whilst some retreated and others advanced, but not without feeling the unfriendly effects of bayonet points in those parts most susceptible of perforation."

A still more scurrilous libel at the expense of the City Militia survives in the form of a doggerel ballad set to music for the "German Flute or Guittar." As not only a printed copy but the original manuscript draft survives among the archives of the regiment, it is possible that a member of the Company was the perpetrator of the following:—

"THE CITY MILITIA

"You've certainly heard of that gallant Commander,
That wonderful Hero, the fam'd Alexander;
And you've certainly heard too what wonders abound
In that famous Field call'd the Artillery Ground.
Derry down down down derry down.

"Where are Soldiers whose Courage the great Globe surprizes
Of all sorts of Colours, Complections and Sizes;
Bold daring old Watchmen and wooden legg'd Sailors,
Butchers, Barbers, and Tinkers, Tomturdmen, and Taylors.
Derry down down down derry down.

"Marches, counter Marches, and grand Evolutions,
Fine Captains parading with great Resolutions,
Cannons roaring, Drums beating, and long Streamers flying,
Black-Puddings, Potatoes, and Sausages frying.
Derry down down down derry down.

" In the midst of this grand, this magnificent Muster,
Says the brave Capt. Bladderem to the bold Capt. Bluster,
' A fine Body of Troops ! no Flinchers or Failers ;
Turn your Backsides before ye you Gentlemen Taylors.'
Derry down down down derry down.

" The Troops all in Order, how glorious the sight,
The pride of this Nation, its Joy and Delight ;
Some Smoaking and drinking their Spirits to keep,
Some running away and some fast-asleep.
Derry down down down derry down.

" Once in three Years for the Good of this Nation,
To save and protect us from foreign Invasion,
This martial Spectacle is to be found,
Shooting, Drinking and Spewing in the Artillery-Ground.
Derry down down down derry down.
" P. H."

The ancient society known as the Finsbury Archers had existed in close connection with the Artillery Company for close on two centuries. Little is known of their early history, but a list of the Company's archery marks or " rovers," giving the distances in scores of yards, was published in 1594 under the title of " Ayme for Finsburie Archers." The Society was revived after the Civil War in the same year as the Artillery Company ; they were frequently allowed the use of the Artillery Ground to shoot in, and many members of the Company were also archers. As late as 1738 the Court of Assistants gave permission to this body to erect two archery butts in the ground, but little more is heard of them and they appear to have become extinct as a Society round about 1770. The few survivors probably became members of a new body of archers formed in 1780 and which still exists as the Royal Toxophilite Society. This would account for the last-named Society having in its possession some of the ancient trophies of their predecessors. These trophies include two silver arrows, dated 1663 and 1751 respectively, given by the " Stewards in Finsbury " as prizes in those years, and the Braganza Shield, a magnificent piece of plate presented by Catherine of Braganza (consort of Charles II.) to the Finsbury Archers in 1676, and formerly worn as a badge of rank on the breast of the Marshall of that Society.

In May, 1784, the Toxophilite Society, headed by the Earl of Effingham, asked for permission to shoot in the Artillery Ground. After discussion, it was decided that these gentlemen should all become members of the Company, retaining their uniform as archers, and forming a flank division with all the privileges of membership, including the right to elect their own officers. A special set of regulations was drawn up for their guidance; among other things it was decided that they should wear "a bayonet and gaiters" when on duty. The Archers' Division apparently attended all Field Days and other exercises, as well as ceremonial occasions, but they had their special meetings or "Targets" in the Artillery Ground for the practice of archery.

A grand meeting of Societies of Archers was held at Blackheath in 1792 and was attended by "The Honourable the Artillery Company, in two divisions," the Surrey Bowmen, Hainault Foresters, Kentish Bowmen, Woodmen of Arden, and others. It is related that they were all dressed in green with half boots and that two persons were slightly wounded through standing too near the targets. Another account runs as follows:—"Amongst those who especially distinguished themselves by gallant attention to their fair visiters, I will not omit to name the Royal Artillery Archers, whose tent was lined throughout with green silk. Their uniform also attracted universal attention, as being the most elegant and appropriate in the whole field. The honours of the day fell thick upon this society; since, out of the four prizes, they became entitled to three."

The Archers' Division of the Company lasted for twenty years, after which the members continued a separate existence and resumed their original name of the Toxophilite Society. The connection between the two bodies was resumed after a lapse of over a century, for in the year 1922, when the Archers were compelled to surrender the lease of their shooting grounds in

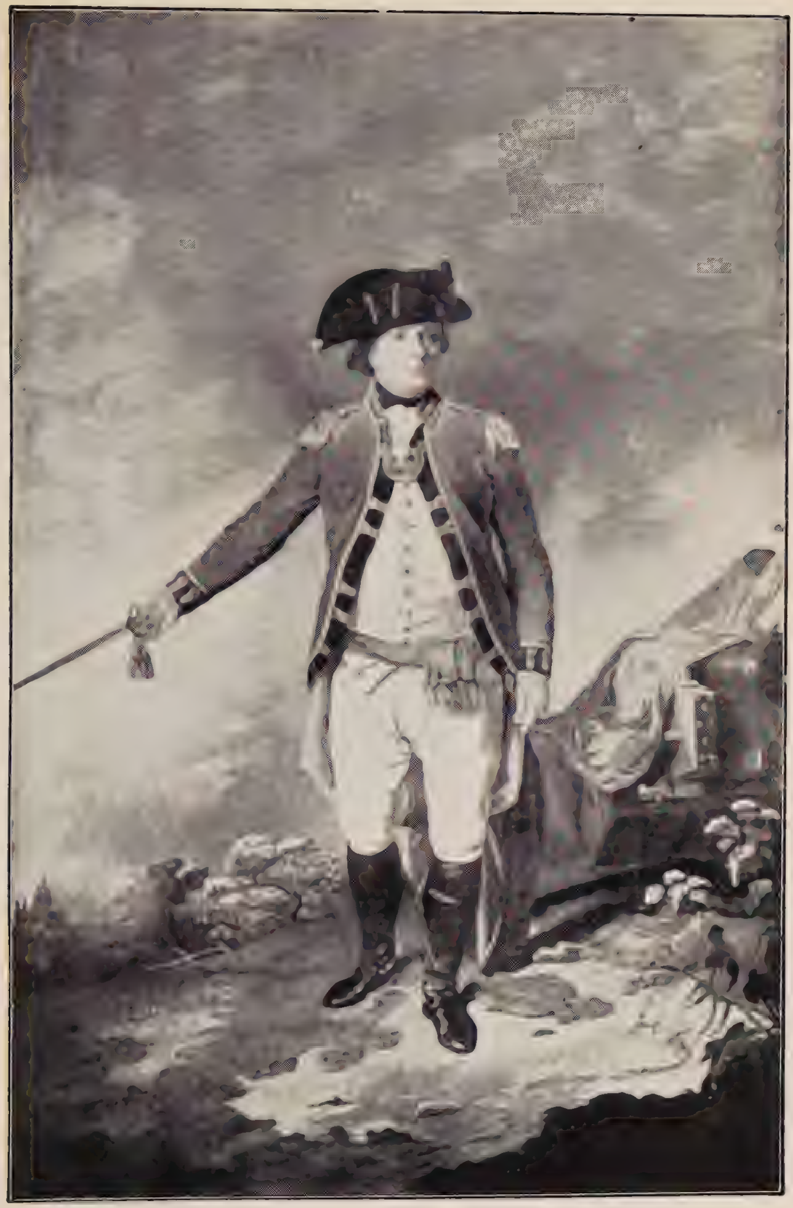
Regent's Park, they accepted the hospitality of the H.A.C. for a season, and held their shooting meetings in the Artillery Ground, that ancient home of the longbow.

The death of Major Sir Barnard Turner in June, 1784, as the result of a riding accident, deprived the Company of a most popular and energetic officer, to whom is ascribed a considerable share in the recent re-organisation and consequent increased efficiency of the Regiment. The deceased officer had acquired a high reputation for courage and energy during the Gordon Riots, and his funeral was attended by a prodigious concourse of spectators, who are said to have gathered from more than thirty miles round. The tragic nature of his death was recorded in doggerel verse in a popular broadsheet entitled "The sorrowful Account of Sir Barnard Turner, Knight; one of the Sheriffs of the City of London; Parliament Man for the Borough; who unfortunately lost his Life by a Fall from his Horse, June 12th, 1784." This poem is too long to quote in full, but the following is a fair sample:—

"As Sir Barnard Turner was regailing
   Himself with three more gentlemen,
But on the road as they return'd,
   Now comes on my dismal tale;
His horse took fright all of a sudden,
   And run with such a force and might,
That by no means he could not stop him,
   Foul of a chaise he run outright.

"The chaise it tore his thigh quite open,
   And broke his leg quite short in two,
What a shocking sight it was then,
   For those that were with him to view;
His wound immediately was dressed,
   His friends they all assistance gave,
But alas! it proved quite mortal,
   None on this earth his life could save."

The Company attended the burial of their comrade (which was interrupted by the arrest of the corpse for debt), erected a



BARNARD TURNER, ESQ., ALDERMAN AND SHERIFF OF LONDON, COLONEL OF THE RED REGIMENT OF CITY MILITIA, MAJOR OF THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY, AND COMMANDANT OF THE LONDON MILITARY FOOT ASSOCIATION DURING THE RIOTS IN 1780

From the Engraving by James Walker after F. Wheatley

EALING PUBLIC LIBRARY

tombstone to his memory, and opened a subscription list for the benefit of the bereaved family. Quite recently a presentation sword that had belonged to Sir Bernard was put up for auction, but, in spite of the efforts of one of our members to secure it for the Regiment, it found its way to the London Museum. However, the Company possesses a suitable memorial of a notable member of the Regiment in the shape of a very fine mezzotint, engraved by James Walker after Wheatley.

A special meeting of the Court of Assistants was held in August, 1784, to consider an application from a gentleman named Vincent Lunardi, Secretary to the Neapolitan Ambassador, for the use of the Ground for an experiment in aeronautics. This is not the first instance in the records of the Company of the practice of this science. In 1721 three "boloons" were provided for use at an exercise, but the nature of these appliances is a matter for considerable doubt, as even fire balloons were not invented until 1782. In 1763 an advertisement appeared in the newspapers to the effect that a "machine to sail against the wind," invented by a Mr. Higgins, was to be tried in the Artillery Ground, and the public admitted at sixpence per head. Unfortunately the Court refused permission for this experiment to take place, and ordered the machine to be removed within fourteen days, thus possibly depriving us of some interesting information on an early attempt at the conquest of the air.

Montgolfier ascended in a heated air balloon in 1782, and the first ascent in a gas-filled balloon was made in August of the following year. In November the use of the Artillery Ground was granted for the exhibition of an "Aerostatic Globe," and the following advertisement appeared in the Press:—

> "By Permission of the Court of Assistants of the
> Honourable Artillery Company.
>
> "On Tuesday, the 25th inst., at one o'clock precisely
> "(If fine weather)
>
> "Mr. Biaggini will let off his Grand Air Balloon, under the direction of Chevalier Zambeccari, from the Artillery Ground,

and no person will be admitted without tickets, which are to be had of Mr. Biaggini *only* at the Lyceum near Exeter Change, Strand, and at his house No. 33, Noble Street, at the bottom of Foster Lane, Cheapside.

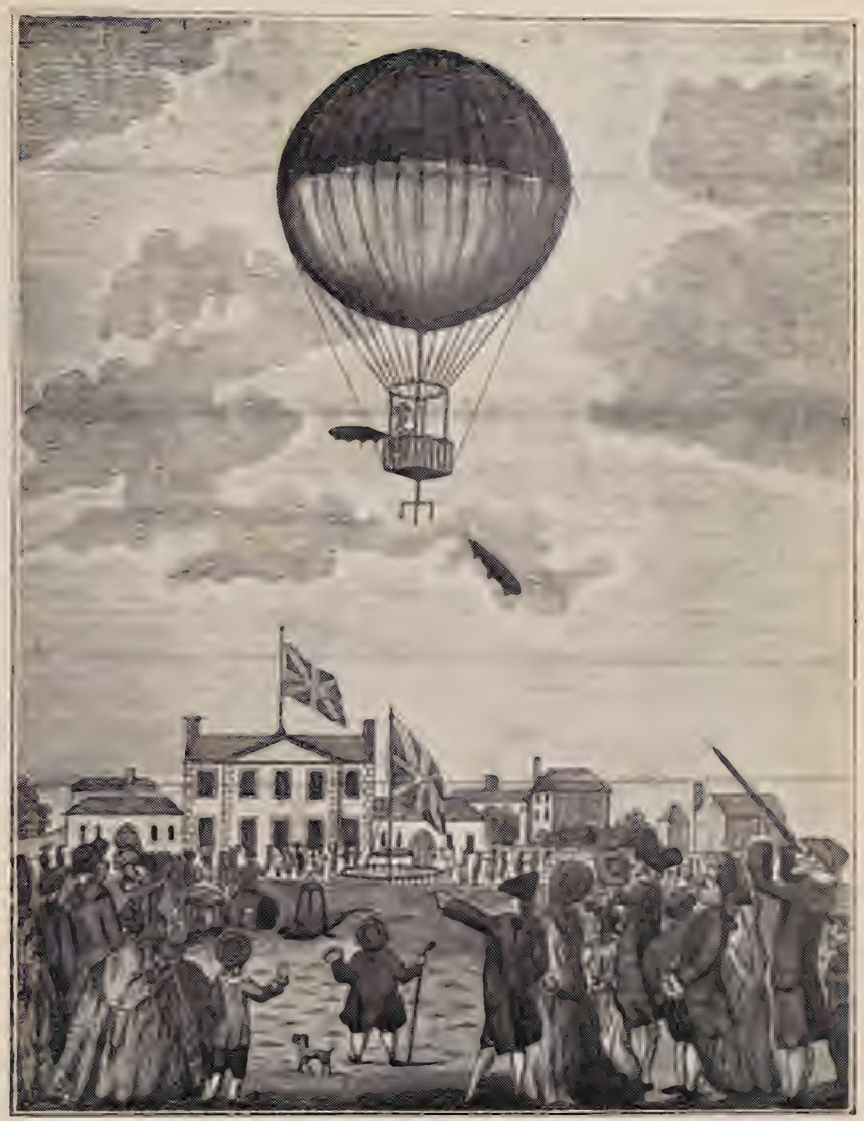
"N.B.—The Air Balloon continues to be exhibited at the Lyceum this day and to-morrow and no longer."

This balloon was of fine silk, gilded, globular in form, and about eight feet in diameter, but carried no aeronaut. The experiment was successful, the balloon disappearing in a southerly direction, witnessed from the Ground by a vast concourse of spectators.

A Mr. Morel applied in June, 1784, for permission to let off from the Artillery Ground "the largest balloon ever made in this country," it being forty-five feet in diameter. His request was refused on the plea that to employ the Ground for any other than a military purpose tended to divert individuals from their useful labour, and might interrupt the public peace.

After a violent debate, the Court abandoned this principle in favour of Mr. Lunardi, granting him the use of the Ground on condition that he gave security for £500 against damage to the Ground and also subscribed a hundred guineas to the fund for Sir Barnard Turner's family. The ascent took place on September 15th, 1784, in the presence of the Prince of Wales and a large assembly. It is notable for being the first ascent of the "first aerial traveller in the English atmosphere," as Lunardi describes himself. The balloon, 32½ feet in diameter, was made of oiled silk in strips of red and blue, filled with "inflammable air" provided by the action of vitriolic acid on zinc. The assemblage was smaller than might have been expected, owing to the fear of mob violence in the event of the failure of the experiment. Only a few weeks before this, a Frenchman had tried to forestall Lunardi by launching a balloon at Chelsea. His balloon had refused to take the air and was thereupon torn to pieces by the infuriated rabble, who then proceeded to wreak their disappointment on the surrounding buildings.

On this occasion everything went off according to schedule,



VIEW OF THE ASCENT OF MR. LUNARDI'S CELEBRATED AIR BALLOON FROM THE ARTILLERY GROUND, SEPTEMBER 15TH, 1784

From a contemporary print published in the "European Magazine" and recently acquired by the Company

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

except that one of the oars, with which Lunardi hoped to be able to steer his balloon, broke off and fell to earth almost at once. Also the balloon was found incapable of carrying the second passenger, who was to have accompanied Lunardi, who had therefore to be content with the company of a dog, a cat and a pigeon, which last escaped. The balloon ascended "amid the most unfeigned acclamations and applause," and Lunardi landed safely in a cornfield in North Minns. Rising again, he finally descended near Ware (where some farm labourers mistook him for the Devil), coming to the ground with such violence as to break up his car and shake nine and a half guineas out of his pocket.

The aeronaut became at once the hero of the hour. The Court of Assistants, in recognition of his "ingenuity and laudable intrepidity," made him a member of the Company, on condition that he took the oath of allegiance and paid the usual fees. They also granted him the use of the Ground for any future experiment. He was then presented to the King, on which occasion he wore the uniform of the Company, and he also dined with the Lord Mayor.

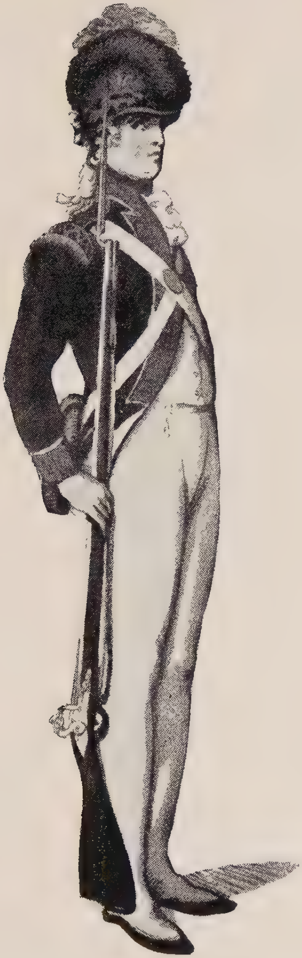
It is related that one old lady was so affected when she saw the oar drop from the balloon, mistaking it for the aeronaut, that she expired. On the other hand, the ascent probably saved the life of a man who was being tried at the Old Bailey, for so anxious were the jurymen not to miss the unusual sight, that they acquitted the accused without waiting for the evidence.

Among the archives of the Company are several records of wagers among members as to the success of Lunardi's venture. The stakes were held by the Secretary, and the bets invariably took the form of bottles of wine. For instance, the following wagers were entered upon at the Paul's Head Tavern on the Wednesday preceding the ascent:—"Mr. Biggs Betts Mr. Banks Three Bottles to One that Mr. Lunardi is Landed and Safe at ½ past 8 o'clock on Wednesday evening, the 15th of Sep. 1784. Do. Do. between Mr. Bond and Mr. Clark. Hooper Betts White two Bottles to One that Mr. Lunardi lands one hundred miles from the Artillery Ground," etc. The gentlemen concerned met at the Paul's Head at a later date and paid their bets " to the amount of Ten Bottles."

Lunardi made a further ascent from the Artillery Ground in May of the following year. This time his balloon resembled in shape a Seville orange and was painted to resemble the Union Flag of England. He came down in Tottenham Court Road owing to a breach in the silk. Some years later two gentlemen who had " been at some pains and expense in preparing for an experiment in natural philosophy " applied for the use of the Ground to let off two air balloons, but the Court decided that the request could not properly be complied with.

For some years concern had been felt on account of the encroachments of buildings and enclosures on the Company's fields of exercise in Finsbury and Islington. In 1776 the Court caused a plate to be engraved showing the positions and names of the stone archery marks which defined their ancient shooting grounds, and at the same time orders were issued to several landholders to replace certain stones which had been removed. On the occasion of the Balmes March in 1782, the Company had found a large field enclosing one of these marks, with gates locked and chained, and four men placed there to object to the passage of the regiment. The gates were forthwith forced open and the Company marched through. Two years later the Company again marched to the different marks, removing obstructions and encroachments, and this time they re-named after prominent officers of the Company several of the stones whose original names had apparently been forgotten. This was excusable, even appropriate, but it is difficult to forgive our predecessors for re-christening as " Major Smith " a mark bearing the quaint old name of " Egg Pye."

The encroachments continued, and two years later the Court caused advertisements to be inserted in the newspapers calling upon occupiers of land between Peerless Pool in the south, Balmes Pond in the north, Hoxton in the east, and Islington in the west, to remove all obstructions between the ancient marks of



PRIVATE, H.A.C. INFANTRY, 1798.

From a coloured aquatint by Rowlandson, published by Ackerman.

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

the Company. During the Balmes March that year (1786) the pioneers pulled down several fences, but afterwards found themselves confronted by a brick wall. The Company were persuaded to refrain from making a breach in the wall on the promise of the proprietors to come to terms, but a member of the Archers' Division was ordered to shoot an arrow over the wall as an assertion of the Company's rights. The gentleman whose fences had been demolished professed his regret and explained that he was unaware when he took the lease of his land (in Hoxton Fields, behind the "Shepherd and Shepherdess") that the Company claimed the right of "perambulating their marks in the said fields." He then offered to leave passages ten feet wide across his ground in a direct line between the old marks and to pay an annual rent of £5 to the Company. This offer was accepted, and the rent was paid for twelve years.

The Estate Committee inspected the marks in 1791 and reported that the Castle Stone was nearly enclosed by a row of houses then being built "in the road leading from Old Street to the City Road." Other marks had been removed, loosened or destroyed, one in particular having been demolished by roadmakers digging for gravel on Islington Common. On the Prince of Wales's birthday in the following year the Company marched to their old marks for the last time. At each mark they halted, placed the Company's Colours upon the stone and fired a volley. Then, finding that the Castle Stone had been greatly encroached upon by new buildings and gardens, they levelled several fences. The marks were then painted, restored or renewed, as necessary. Each stone had originally been surmounted by a device in carved wood, of geometric or heraldic design, to distinguish it, but these had all disappeared by this time. They all bore the arms of the Company on a cast-iron plate and many of them had the letters A.C. inscribed on the face of the stone.

The Company never marched to their marks again. Their fields of exercise were gradually built over and the marks destroyed. The Court appointed a Committee in 1820 to inspect and report on the condition of the marks, but nothing was done, and so the ancient rights of the Company, which had lasted from time immemorial, were extinguished. Two of the marks were still in position in 1858, and two others,—one bearing the date 1679 and formerly known as "Jehu," the other marked "A.C. 1683"—had then been recently destroyed. Only one stone has survived. It bears the inscription "Scarlet," and was for many years built into the brickwork of the Canal Bridge in the New North Road. It was removed thence to Armoury House in 1888, and still stands in the entrance hall—a solitary reminder of the days when the Company practised archery.

In 1788 the Company held a special church parade at St. Paul's Cathedral to commemorate the 100th anniversary of the "glorious revolution" of 1688.

Certain repairs to the Armoury were now necessary, the front wall showing signs of settlement and the roof being affected with dry rot. The front wall was taken down as far as the windows and rebuilt; and the ceiling of the Long Room was raised, the walls wainscoted and the musicians' gallery added.

The 23rd of April, 1789, was appointed to be a Day of General Thanksgiving for the King's restoration to health. The Company sent a loyal address, and prepared to carry out their part in the ceremony at St. Paul's. The Court of Lieutenancy enquired if the Company would be prepared to form a "gallery" from the west gate of St. Paul's Churchyard to the church door for His Majesty to pass through, and if they expected to be sufficiently numerous to prevent the crowd forcing their way into the churchyard. The Court replied that, as it was the ancient custom of the Company to provide a bodyguard for the Sovereign when he visited the City, and, as such, to precede the Lord Mayor in the procession, they were unable to waive their claim to that honour by accepting any other duty. Accordingly the Company acted as a bodyguard. The members paraded at 7 a.m., their hair dressed without side curls, that of the Grenadiers plaited and that of the Light Infantry and Hat Companies clubbed. Six pioneers marched at the head of the Battalion in blue coats faced with red, bearskin caps, and armed with "grapling balls."[1]

In August, 1794, the Company was called upon to aid the civil power in suppressing riots in Shoe Lane and Whitecross Street, where mobs had collected with the intention of destroying public houses where recruits were being enlisted for the army. Members paraded with twelve rounds of ball cartridge, proceeded to the disturbed areas and remained on duty for several successive nights. The Lord Mayor, in writing to the Court of Assistants, said that the services they had rendered during the late riots were such as to command his warmest thanks, and to call for the grateful acknowledgment of the public. By their prompt appearance in Whitecross Street on Wednesday night they had prevented a lawless mob from destroying the houses and properties of the inhabitants, and effectually protected that part of the City from riot and destruction. His thanks were equally due for their service in repelling the mob in Shoe Lane on Thursday night, which was the last effort made by the abandoned miscreants who sought to renew the terrible riots of 1780. The Court of Common Council passed a vote of thanks to the "Gentlemen of the Honourable Artillery Company," for their readiness in assisting to suppress the late tumultuous assemblies; "assuring them that the Corporation of London will ever retain a due and grateful sense of their truly patriotic and meritorious services."

Later in the same year some disorder attended the trials of certain leaders of the Corresponding Society, a body which professed sympathy with the French Revolutionaries. Crowds assembled round the Old Bailey and insulted the judges and magistrates on their arrival and departure. The Company were called out on several occasions and were stationed in the London Coffee House in London Wall, ready for any emergency. On several later occasions the Company paraded for riot duty, and for several weeks a guard of thirty-two men was mounted nightly at Headquarters. A contemporary newspaper states that "the expense of the mess supper on these occasions did not exceed 2/- per man, "which is cheerfully paid by the members of the corps."

---

[1] These were iron-spiked balls suspended by short chains from wooden staves. It was an ancient custom of the Company to have these implements carried before them on the march by pioneers. Possibly their original use was to clear a way through crowded streets.

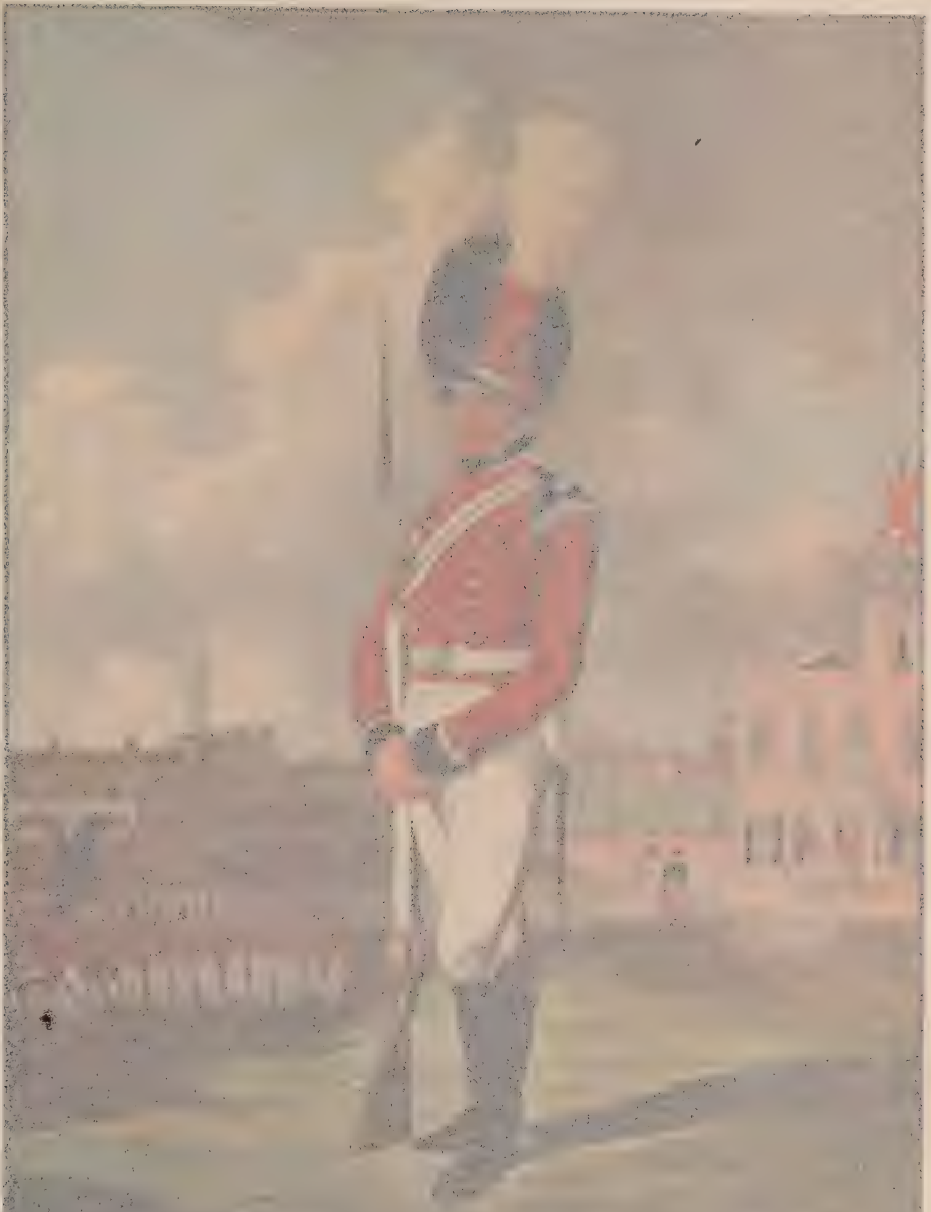
It is interesting to note that this year and for some time afterwards it was considered inadvisable to print the names and addresses of members of the Company in the annual "List of Chiefs, Officers, etc." The reason for this decision was that it would be impolitic to let the public know the strength of the Company, also that in times of tumult members might suffer inconvenience if their addresses were known.

White drill jackets with blue facings and white waistcoats were adopted about this time. An undress uniform consisting of a royal blue frock coat, with black velvet collar and yellow uniform buttons, was also authorised. It was thought that this latter departure would be calculated to make the Corps more generally known, to maintain a proper confidence and zeal in the members, to inspire spirit in young citizens, induce many to join the Corps, and to impress an awe upon the minds of persons disposed to disturb the public peace.

The title of Secretary was now substituted for that of Clerk, as being more suitable to the military character and dignity of the Company.

The 19th of December, 1797, was a day of Thanksgiving for the naval victories of St. Vincent and Camperdown. The King attended service at St. Paul's and was received at Temple Bar by the Lord Mayor and the Honourable Artillery Company, who preceded the royal carriage and lined the entrance to the Cathedral. In the following year a scheme for the defence of London against the threatened invasion was drawn up. The posts allotted to the Company were Armoury House (with patrols in Chiswell Street, Curtain Road, London Wall and Worship Street), and the New River Head.

Every effort was being made to increase the numbers of the Company, and the Court of Assistants issued an address to the



H.A.C. INFANTRY, 1803

From a coloured engraving by E. Walker. The building on the left is the old West

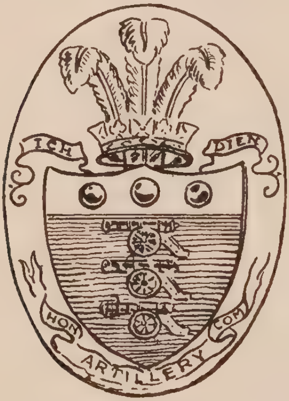
BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

inhabitants of London, calling for suitable recruits. The address, a very lengthy one, concluded in the following terms :—" At this momentous aera every zealous friend to his country is called upon to make an election of associates, with whom he can act on the spur of public emergency; and thus to discharge an immediate duty, by demonstrating a power ready to repel any danger. The Artillery-Company lifts its constitutional Banner to the observation of Merchants, Manufacturers, Persons in Office, Professional Men, and all other descriptions of good Citizens, for whose convenience, subserviently to the public-weal, its laws and regulations are ordained." The Regiment was at this time only 300 strong; but recruiting propaganda was bearing fruit, and within a few weeks nearly 200 new members were admitted. A subscription list was opened at Headquarters, and a voluntary contribution of £1,000 for the defence of the country was paid into the Treasury.

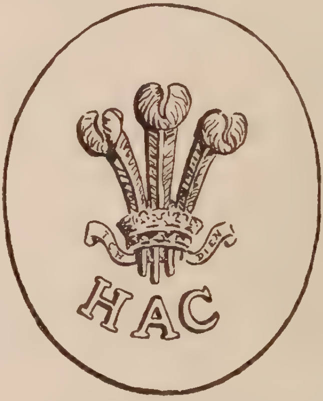
The Matross Division appear to have carried out occasional firing practice on Sydenham Common, and it was the custom to invite members of the Battalion to act as an escort to the guns on these occasions and to attend the dinner in the evening, at the rate of 10/6 per head.

The six regiments of City Trained Bands or Militia were abolished in 1794 and re-organised in two regiments, the East and the West. Subsequently the Lieutenancy applied for the use of the Artillery Ground and Armoury for the training of the new force and the Company complied with this request on certain conditions. But the Lieutenancy claimed the privilege as a right, and this led to a legal struggle lasting five years. It is unnecessary to enter into the details of this long and bitter controversy, which at one time reached such a pitch that the two regiments of Militia were ordered to march to the Ground with drums beating and bayonets fixed and to demand admittance. However, they found the gates locked and the Company drawn up within, determined to resist any attempt at forcible entry. Finally, after the matter had been taken up in Parliament, with the usual procedure of petitions and counter-petitions, an agreement was arrived at whereby the Company retained their right to the Ground, subject to its use by the Militia on certain days while they were embodied. Instead of granting the use of the Armoury, the Company gave up a plot of ground in the north-west corner for the erection of a Militia Barracks. Each party paid its own costs.

The Company, now nearly 500 strong, was reviewed in Hyde Park by the Duke of York, then Commander-in-Chief, in the summer of 1798. His Royal Highness, the subject of the famous quatrain, was pleased to remark on the fine appearance of the "Gentlemen under Arms," and praised the performance of their exercises and evolutions. He commented particularly on the number of fine, tall men in the Grenadier Company and on the "exactness and strength" of the Matross Division. It was in this year that the latter Division applied for and were granted the right to wear on breast-plate and buttons the arms of the Office of Ordnance, as worn by the Royal Artillery at that time. This badge is still worn on the buttons of the Artillery of the Company, a distinction now shared by the Royal Army Ordnance Corps.



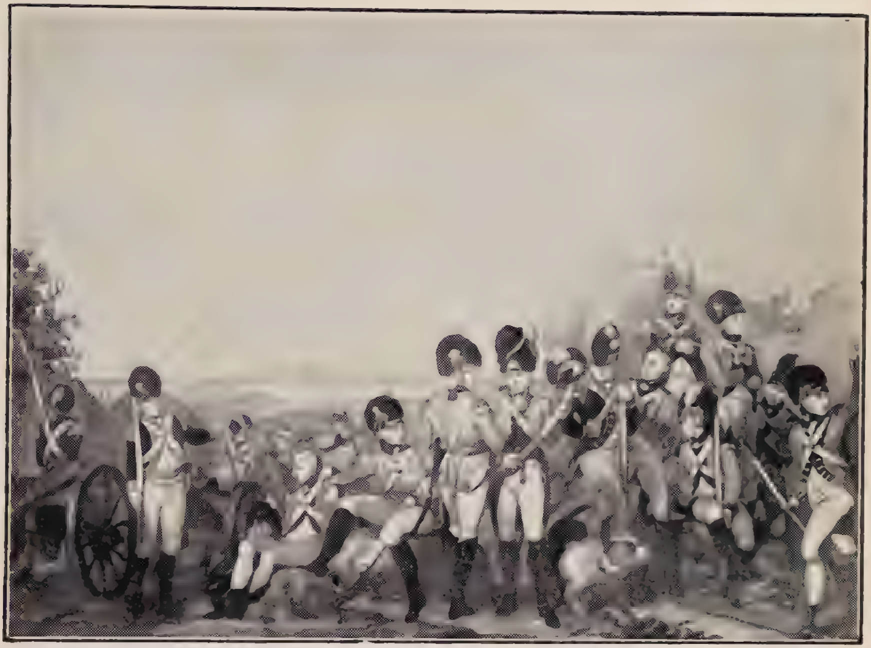
Cross Belt Badge.
H.A.C. Artillery Division, 1799.



Cross Belt Badge.
H.A.C. Infantry, 1799.

From original specimens in the possession of the Regiment.

On November 29th, 1798, the Company attended the



THE LOYAL ASSOCIATED WARD AND VOLUNTEER CORPS OF THE CITY OF LONDON

From a colour print by M. Place after R. K. Porter. The above engraving represents types of the City Volunteer Corps of 1799, and was respectfully dedicated to those Ladies who Honoured them with the presentation of Colours. In the centre of the picture, with his back to the painter, is an Infantry Officer of the Company. He appears to be wearing a "flash" similar to that still worn by the Welch Fusiliers. The group on the left consists of members of the Matross or Artillery Division of the Company. Note the civilian driver in the middle distance applying his whip to the single horse drawing the gun. He wears a grey coat faced with blue and his hat bears the monogram H.A.C. The gun is one of the original 3-pounders presented by the City of London. The bucket slung below the axle bears the Prince's plume, then the badge of the Regiment

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

Thanksgiving Service at St. Paul's for Nelson's victory at the Nile.

On June 4th, 1799, sixty-five Volunteer Corps, containing 8,000 officers and men, passed in review before King George III in Hyde Park. The Company, 421 strong, took up their position on the right of the line and received the King with a salute of twenty-one guns from the field pieces. The whole force then marched past, headed by the Company, and "General Officers of the highest reputation were heard to say that they never saw anything better done." This, the first of all Volunteer Reviews on a large scale, caused no little sensation at the time, and several fine engravings exist in commemoration of the event. For this review the Band was provided with new uniforms of light blue, faced with scarlet, with cocked hats, at a cost of £393.[1]

A few weeks later the same regiments were inspected by the King at their respective posts. The Company was drawn up on the north side of Finsbury Square; the Prince of Wales, as Captain-General, took command and received His Majesty, afterwards signing the parade state and expressing himself as highly gratified to have appeared at the head of so very respectable a Corps. Another big review of Volunteers was held in Hyde Park in June, 1800, at which the Company was commanded by the Prince of Wales in person.

Arrangements were made about this time for members to be instructed in "the Science of the Broad Sword, a Knowledge both useful and necessary to Gentlemen of a Military Profession." The lessons were given under the direction of a Mr. Patterson, "a Man very competent to the Undertaking."

---

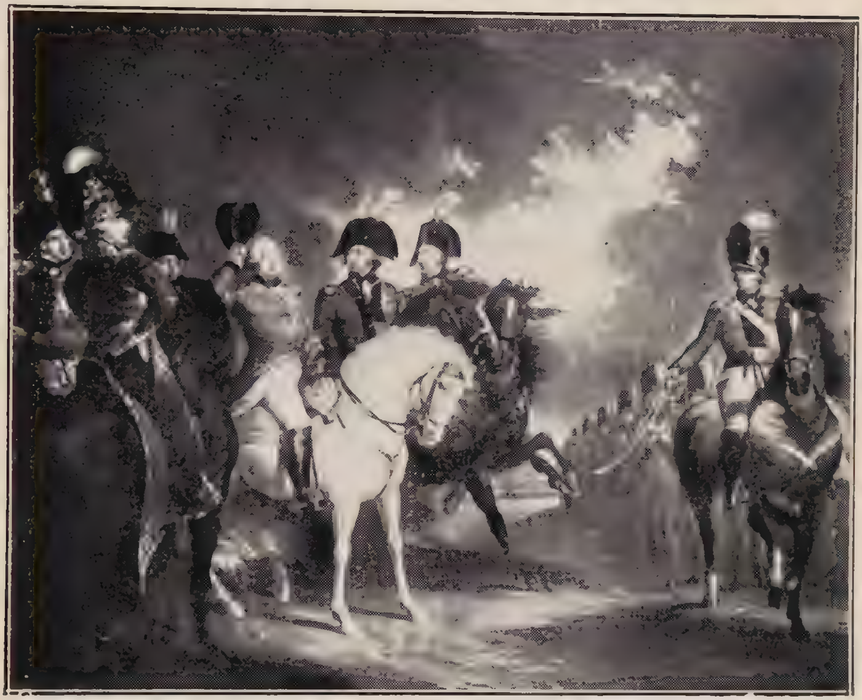
[1] Concerning this and succeeding reviews the Press waxed most enthusiastic. "What," demands *Bell's Weekly Messenger*, "were the raw Conscripts that won the battle of Marengo to a set of men, well fed and clothed, and inspired with a more noble and patriotic courage? What was the militia of Paris, the boasted army of the sons of anarchy and massacre, to a body of brave and enlightened men, like the citizens of London?"

CHAPTER X

1800 TO 1836

IN 1800 Napoleon's scheme of Armed Neutrality against this country was bearing heavily on British trade, with the inevitable result that food prices had risen to unprecedented heights. Consequently food riots in the metropolis were not uncommon, and the Company were frequently called upon to prevent the mob from looting provision stores. In the following year information was received that one of the plans of the disaffected was to seize the arms and ammunition at Armoury House; wherefore a Guard was mounted nightly for some weeks. In July the Company was inspected in the Artillery Ground by the Earl of Harrington, commanding the London District, who expressed his satisfaction with the steadiness and excellent conduct of the members on parade. He said that the firing was very good, the marching excellent, and he could only lament that the weather had been so unfavourable as to deprive him of the opportunity of seeing a greater number of their very handsome corps. The summons to this parade concluded with these words:—"And the Court rely on the Spirit and Feeling of every Member of the Company for a numerous, full, and respectable, Appearance, on an Occasion in which the Honour, Character, and Fame, of the Hon. Artillery-Company are most essentially committed."

A silver-gilt shooting medal recently presented to the Regiment by His Majesty the King bears the inscription: "Honbl. Artillery Comy. South East Division. Adjudged to Mr. Wm. Lyon for the best shot with ball 100 yards distance at Highbury, 24th Sept. 1801." This is not quite the oldest shooting medal in the possession of the Company, two others



KING GEORGE III REVIEWING THE VOLUNTEERS ON THE 4TH JUNE, 1799

From an Engraving by S. W. Reynolds after R. K. Porter, showing the Company marching past. Col. Paul Le Mesurier is seen leading the Grenadier Company of the Regiment past the saluting point. The members of the royal party, from left to right, are:—The Duke of Cumberland; The Prince of Wales (Captain-General of the Company, in the uniform of the 10th Light Dragoons); Lord Harrington; H.M. King George III; The Duke of York (the subject of the famous rhyme); and The Duke of Kent (father of Queen Victoria)

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

bearing the dates 1793 and 1800 respectively. It seems that similar trophies were presented for other forms of efficiency at this period, the Company's collection including one awarded "for services" in 1791 and another "for merit" in 1803.

The Peace of Amiens was signed in 1802 and was proclaimed in the City by the Lord Mayor, who was escorted by the Company and several regiments of City Volunteers. However, war broke out again in the following year, and the Lord Mayor asked the Company to maintain a night guard of fifty men at Armoury House until the attempt at invasion had been abandoned. This guard was continued for nearly two years.

A Volunteer Corps known as the River Fencibles had been organised to deal with the transport of troops and military stores to any threatened point, and the Company carried out several manœuvres in conjunction with this body—practising embarkation and disembarkation at various points on the river. The Company was again inspected by the Earl of Harrington at Headquarters, a review which formed the subject of a well-known engraving.

Two brass six-pounder guns were now presented to the Company by the President, Alderman Sir Henry Curtis, and the strength of the Matross Division was accordingly doubled. These guns, exceedingly handsome pieces, engraved with the Prince's Plume, the arms of the Regiment and those of the donor, are still in the possession of the Company.

Extensive repairs to Armoury House became necessary in 1802. They were carried out at a cost of over £700, and the curious flag tower on the roof was added at this time.

The uniform of the Company was changed in 1803, and the Regiment is fortunate in possessing fine engravings showing both that of the Infantry and the Artillery under the new regulations. In this year the threat of invasion brought about a considerable increase of membership, as many as 117 being admitted at a single Court, while the total for the months of July and August was 639.

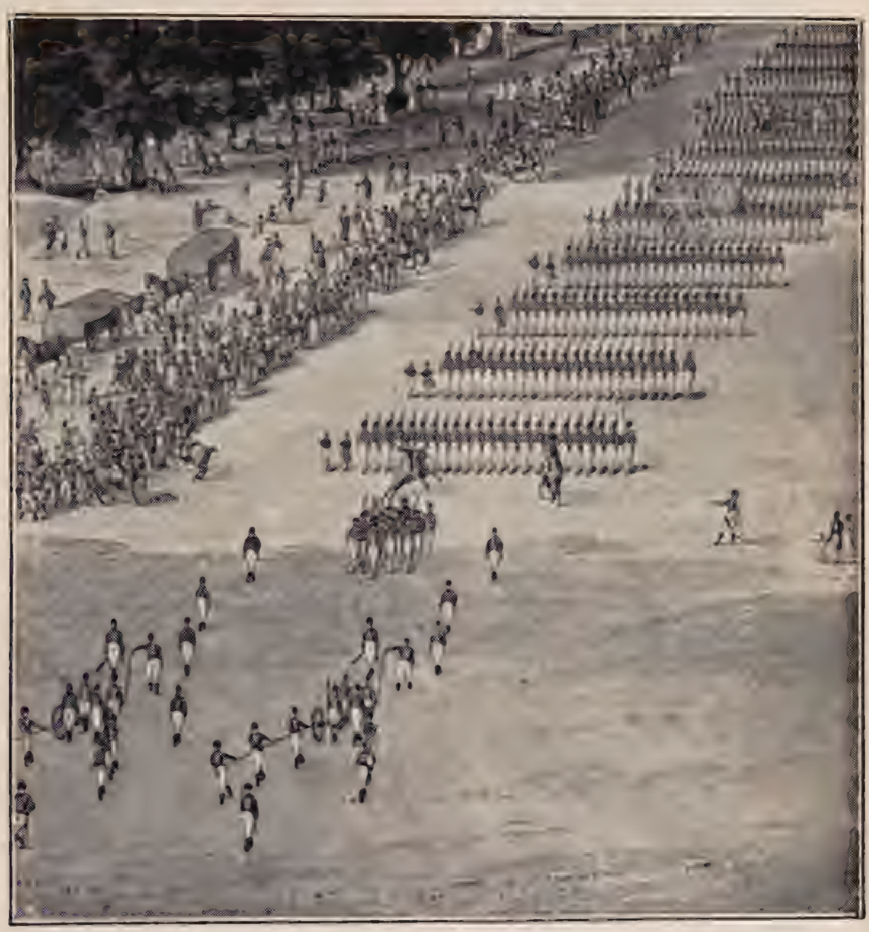
The following interesting account of a field day at Sydenham

Common—a sham fight between the Light Infantry and the South West Division of the Company—occurs in the columns of a contemporary newspaper:

> "Yesterday morning at eight o'clock two Divisions of the City Artillery, viz., the South-west and the Light Infantry, met at the Greyhound, Dulwich, from whence they proceeded with their Ammunition Waggons and Camp Equipages to Sydenham Common. On entering the wood, the Bugle sounded to extend. The Infantry commenced firing on the Battalion, the Battalion halted, and fired several vollies on the Light Infantry; the Bugle sounded for the Infantry to retreat to their encampment, at which time the Battalion, with fixed bayonets, made a charge down the hill on the Infantry, until they received orders to halt, and shoulder their arms, and to retreat to their own camp; after which a target was placed at upwards of 100 feet, as a mark, at which the Divisions fired, by single files, for two most beautiful sabres, which were won by Mr. BURROWES, of Capt. BESSEL'S Company of Light Infantry, and the other by Mr. GWINNELL, of Capt. HATCH'S: the former hit the target three times out of six, and the latter shot through the bull's eye the first shot. After which they grounded their arms, and partook of a cold collation, which each man had provided in his knapsack, and of which several Ladies partook. The day being fine, the whole formed a charming *coup d'oeil*."

It was now decided to add to the Battalion a Rifle Company one hundred strong. The rifled musket was by this time no novelty, though the Army authorities clung to the old smooth bore for another forty years. One or two regiments only had been armed with the new weapon. The 95th, or Rifle Corps, afterwards to become famous in military annals as the Rifle Brigade, had been formed in 1800 as a corps of marksmen, and was at this time undergoing the special course of training at Shorncliffe under Sir John Moore which laid the foundation, in drill and discipline, of the famous Light Division of the Peninsular War, possibly the most efficient troops England has ever produced.

The new Rifle Company of the Regiment was dressed in



ROYAL REVIEW OF VOLUNTEERS IN HYDE PARK, JUNE 4TH, 1799

Panoramic view showing the Company leading the March Past. Drawn and etched by Robt. Smirke, Jun., aquatinted by R. Easton.

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

dark green, with braidings of black mohair. A pelisse was adopted in 1815 and worn over the jacket by all ranks, this constituting the only instance known of the use of the pelisse in the British Army by other than officers. The Company still possesses a complete uniform of this type, including the curious cap—dark green, leather lined, and shaped very like the conventional nightcap. The Rifle Company was originally formed by allowing fifty members of the Light Infantry Company to transfer, the remaining vacancies being filled from the "Hat" and Matross Division. In the following year the new unit became known as the Yager Company, which title it bore until it was disbanded in 1854. It rapidly became a *corps d'élite* in the Regiment, its members paying particular attention to marksmanship, for the encouragement of which the Court provided them with two iron targets at a cost of £50. Apparently a very high standard of shooting was maintained. We read that a trial of skill lasting eight days was held in 1805 between the different Rifle Corps in the neighbourhood of London. "The following," says the *Morning Post*, "is a correct return of the firing, as collected from the minutes of the different umpires :—

Duke of Cumberland's Corps of Sharp Shooters,	81
Hon. Artillery Company's Yagers,	57
Hackney Riflemen,	46.
8th Loyal London Riflemen,	37.
Duke of Sussex's Loyal North Britons,	33.
Loyal Southwark Riflemen,	21."

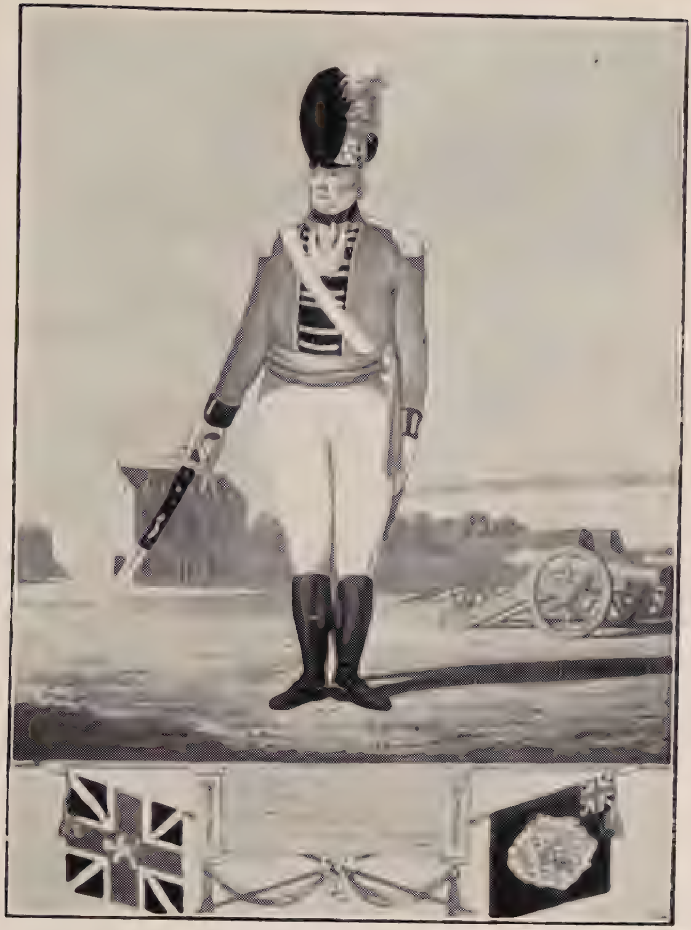
The Yagers also accepted a challenge in 1811 issued to all England by the Nottingham Riflemen, a corps consisting for the most part of gamekeepers. The match took place at Hamford in Lincolnshire. Unfortunately the actual result of this meeting is unknown, but it is recorded that the Yagers, at considerable expense and sacrifice of time, supported the skill and military reputation of the Company.

On another occasion they challenged the 95th Rifle Regiment to a shooting match, which was declined by the officer commanding that regiment on the ground that it was contrary to etiquette for a regular regiment to enter the lists against a volunteer regiment.

The Company possesses a curious engraving showing a detachment of Yagers shooting on the practice ground of the Royal Artillery at Woolwich in 1823, with a diagram of the target. It is recorded that nine men fired at 250 yards' range, and eight at 200, using no cartridges, but loading with loose powder and ball. They fired for thirty minutes, during which time 580 balls struck the target, which was 5′ 6″ high and 15′ long, representing nine files of men. This must have been considered a remarkable feat at the time, or it would hardly have been commemorated by an engraving. An unusual use of the bayonet is to be seen in this picture; one of the marksmen, having stuck his side-arm in the ground, is using the crosspiece of the handle as a rest for the barrel of his musket. The bugler (or "horner") is shown wearing a scarlet jacket, with green sleeves.

The Yager Company appear to have carried colours when on detached duty, a decided departure from the prescribed practice of riflemen.

The City Volunteer Regiments were brigaded for the first time in 1804, and it was agreed that the Honourable Artillery Company was entitled to be the first Battalion of the first Brigade. A Court Martial under the new Volunteer Act was assembled at Armoury House to try a drummer for absence from duty. He was found guilty and sentenced to fifty lashes. The prisoner was marched into the drill shed, stripped and tied to the halberts. He received ten lashes, the remainder of his sentence being remitted at the request of the Commanding Officer. Similar punishments were frequent during the next few years, as many as one hundred lashes being awarded for absence from duty. One drummer got off with twenty lashes on account of his previous good conduct; another was convicted of theft and sentenced to be drummed out of the regiment with a label on his back and breast bearing the words "Notorious Thief." With a halter round his neck, the delinquent was marched down



COLONEL PAUL LE MESURIER, H.A.C. 1799

From a coloured engraving by Charles Tomkins, published as a frontispiece to "The British Volunteer." Served in the ranks of the London Association during the riots of 1780; admitted a member of the Company, 1781; successively Vice-President and President, Major and Lieut-Colonel of the Company; Alderman of London, 1784, and Lord Mayor, 1793. Took an active part in the preparations against threatened French invasions and in the suppression of civil commotions.

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

the line, the band playing "The Rogue's March" before him. There seems to have been considerable slackness in attending drills. In a circular letter to members Col. Le Mesurier remarks: "I am sorry to notice the shamefully bad musters we have had of late, as also many Absentees on the *Night Guard*, and beg you will understand, that from this time I shall cause particular Notice to be taken of those who neglect that very important Part of their Duty." The punishment for members who failed to attend drills was expulsion, their names being read out on parade and posted at Headquarters. This does not appear to have been an effective deterrent in many cases, wherefore, in consequence of several discreditably small musters, the Court ordered that the names of members so expelled should be advertised in the public Press, which was done in many instances.

In 1804 Anthony Highmore, a solicitor by profession and a member of the South East Division of the Company, published "The History of the Honourable Artillery Company of the City of London from its earliest annals to the peace of 1802." This work is the first serious attempt at a complete Regimental record, and it forms one of the corner stones on which the history of the Company can be built up. Highmore's narrative of the period within living memory at the time of writing is especially valuable, but his accounts of earlier times are somewhat distorted by political bias. In his pages he endeavours to connect the history of the Company with current events by quoting long extracts from Hume and Smollett.

The concentration of troops by Napoleon at Boulogne for the invasion of England naturally necessitated active preparations for the defence of the country, and the following special summons was circulated to members of the Company:—

"Sir,

"BEING commanded *in Brigade-Orders* to notify to you the Possibility of the Corps being speedily called upon for Service, 'in Consequence of Intelligence received by Government of the Embarkation of large Bodies of Troops in Holland, of a Fleet of Men of War being ready to sail from thence, and the increased Preparations of the French at Boulogne and its Neighbourhood,' I have to desire that you will appear in the Artillery-Ground, *next Wednesday*, and every succeeding Wednesday, Afternoon, in *marching Order;* viz. with Knapsacs, Havresacs, and Canteens, or with such of those Articles as you are provided with. You will also bring in your Knapsac your Trowsers and Foraging-Cap, in order to ascertain how far you are complete for Military Duty, and you will be acquainted by your Officers with what farther Articles you ought to be furnished with, in Order to be reported for Service.

" I am, Sir,
" Your very faithful Servant,
" Paul le Mesurier.
" Col. Hon. Artillery-Company.

" Armoury-House,
August 12, 1805."

This order was followed by another which laid down the articles required for service, and which is worth reproduction :—

" *Head-Quarters, Armoury-House,*
" 15th August, 1805.

" G.O.

" YOU are desired to appear here in SERVICE ORDER on Wednesday the 21st Instant, at Half past Five o'Clock in the Afternoon, M.T. and to hold yourself in readiness to muster, at any future period, at the shortest Notice, in the same Order, viz.

" *Haversack, *Canteen, and *Knapsack,—the latter to contain,

1 Shirt.
1 Pair of Stockings,
1 Pair of Shoes,
2 Flannel Waistcoats, to cover the Loins.
1 Flannel Nightcap,
1 Black Silk Handkerchief,
1 Pair of Trowsers,
1 Great Coat and Foraging Cap,
1 Pair of Gaiters.

" Pipe Clay, Blacking Ball, Pouch Ball, Oil (in a Tin Case) Tow, Flannel, Rags, and Sponge, Emery and Buff Leather

Sticks, Brushes for Cloaths, Shoes and Buttons, Razor, Combs, Soap, Towel, and Sponge; Knife, Fork, and Spoon, to be packed in as small a Compass as possible, and also a Turnscrew, Brush, and Pricker, and some spare Flints (in the Pouch)—*Marching Order* will be regulated by Circumstances.

" At the present Crisis it will be impossible to dispense with your regular Attendance unless satisfactory Reasons are assigned to me.

" Paul le Mesurier,
" Colonel, Honorable Artillery Company.

" N.B. The Articles marked thus (*) may be had by applying at the Armory-House."

As everyone knows, the attempted invasion was rendered abortive by the victory of Trafalgar, and on December 5th a General Thanksgiving Service for " the late Signal and important Victory obtained by His Majesty's Ships of War, under the Command of the late Vice-Admiral Lord Viscount Nelson, over the Combined Fleets of France and Spain " was held. On this occasion an Anthem was performed before the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Corporation of the City of London, His Royal Highness the Duke of Cambridge and Staff, and the Hon. Artillery Company, " The Music by George Frederick Handel Esq."

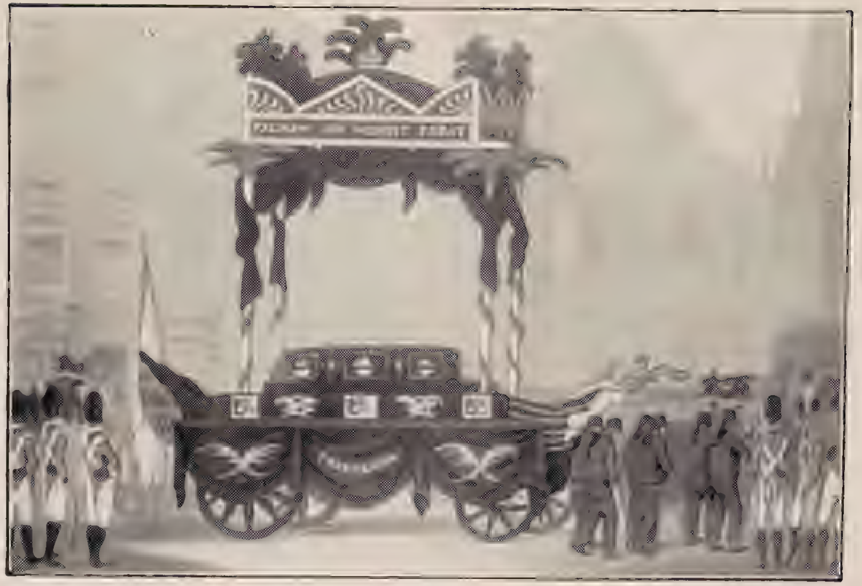
Reviews and inspections were of common occurrence at this period, but in January, 1806, the Company attended on a really historical occasion. This was the funeral of Lord Nelson, when the Company took the right of the line of all troops on parade and lined the south side of Ludgate Hill, with their flank on the Cathedral. Several contemporary prints show the Company in this position with the funeral car, escorted by bluejackets, passing their ranks. A paragraph in the *Morning Post* some days before the event states that the Prince of Wales, " if prevented by *etiquette* from attending the funeral of Lord Nelson as chief mourner, intends taking the command of the Honourable Artillery Company, of which he is Colonel, on the day the remains of his Lordship are to be interred."

The difficulty of persuading members to attend parades is constantly in evidence. In 1807 the Commanding Officer implores members not to allow him, as Colonel, to appear at the head of a Company, instead of being at the head of a Regiment, and adds a promise that the convenience of the Corps, while on duty, will be studied as much as the nature of the Service will admit. In the following year, he adds a rider to a summons to parade to the following effect:—"It grieved me much to be obliged to make a return of the attendance on the last inspection; and, I am sure, those members, who were not present, did not consider the honour of the regiment was at stake, or they would have attended in defiance of the weather."

A scheme for the provision of shooting prizes was inaugurated in 1811. It was laid down that every member attending two-thirds of the field days (or special musters on occasions of public emergency) should be entitled to fire for prizes of the value of £10 each, allotted to each division in proportion to its numbers, but not exceeding ten in all. Under these conditions eighty-seven members made themselves eligible; a prize meeting was held at Hampstead; and four silver cups were given as prizes to the winners. One of these trophies is still in the possession of the Regiment.

The targets fired at were thirty inches in diameter, and the range for Battalion Companies was eighty yards. It was considered that a range of one hundred yards would throw the chance of a prize into the hands of a few—moreover, regular troops only fired up to sixty yards. The winners on this occasion were to be those who put in the greatest number of shots *without reference to the target fired at.*

At the conclusion of hostilities in 1814 all the Volunteer Corps were disbanded. Through an official mistake the Honourable Artillery Company actually received an order from the Office of Ordnance stating that the Home Secretary had directed that the Company was to be discontinued and all arms, accoutrements, etc., sent to the Tower. This matter was quickly adjusted, and the Company soon found itself employed in its time-honoured

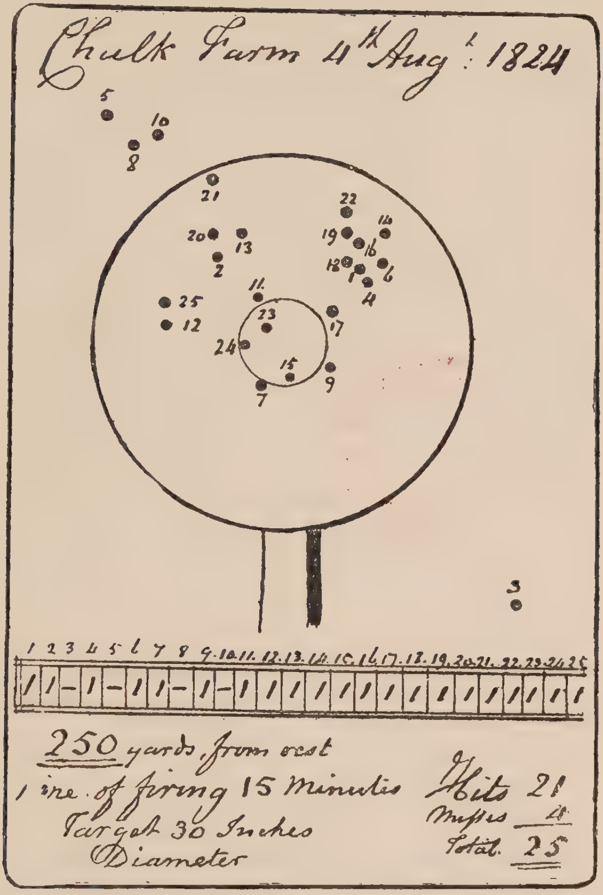


THE H.A.C. (*in right and left foreground*) LINING LUDGATE HILL AT THE FUNERAL OF LORD NELSON

From a contemporary print

PELHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

duty of keeping the peace of the metropolis. For the next few years meetings of distressed artificers, discharged mariners and would-be reformers necessitated the frequent attendance of the Company; one of their duties was to guard the Debtors' Prison in Whitecross Street, presumably in anticipation of an attempt to release the occupants.


5
10
8
21
22
14
20
13
19
16
18
1
6
2
11
4
25
23
17
12
24
15
9
7
3

Chalk Farm 4th Augt: 1824

1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20	21	22	23	24	25
/	/	–	/	–	/	/	–	/	–	/	/	/	/	/	/	/	/	/	/	/	/	/	/	/

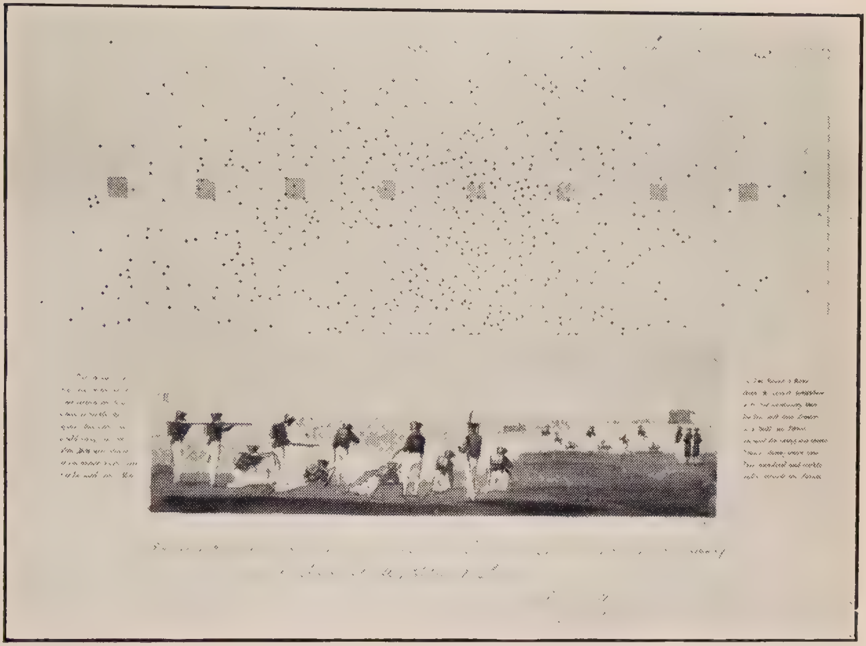
250 yards from rest
Time of firing 15 Minutes
Target 30 Inches
Diameter

Hits 21
Misses 4
Total. 25

Facsimile of Target Fired at by Chas. Baumer, of the Yager Division, H.A.C., 1824.

In connection with a threatened continuation of these disturbances, Colonel Curtis, then commanding the Company, took it upon himself to report to the Home Secretary that he did not consider it safe to leave the Company's arms unprotected. At his request a party of Coldstream Guards was sent from the Tower to act as a guard at Armoury House. The Court of Assistants were highly incensed at this action on the part of the Commanding Officer, considering his application to Government for a guard highly derogatory to the Company and calculated to subject the regiment to the contempt of the public. The Guards were refused admission to Armoury House; a guard of members was established and maintained; and the Court passed a resolution to the effect that it would be better if superior military officers were to consult the Court before communicating with the Government on such matters. The Colonel then wrote stating that "as personal allusions were so much indulged in as to give him, as Colonel, a very unpleasant feeling," he thought it only consistent with his views to resign. His resignation was accepted, and the Court decided to offer the vacant post to the Duke of Sussex, the youngest son of King George III. His Royal Highness was first nominated for admission as an ordinary member, according to immemorial custom; he passed the Court, answering the usual questions; was balloted for; paid his fees; and at the next Court was appointed Colonel.

It was not considered necessary to apply for the usual Royal Warrant on the accession of the Captain General, and an Address to the Throne from a military body was considered unsuitable, despite the numerous precedents. The Court therefore contented itself with recording expressions of sorrow, loyalty and congratulation in the Minute Books. The necessary alterations on the Colours and appointments were authorised and effected, the Prince of Wales's feathers giving place to the Royal crest, which has been borne ever since. It was then decided, in order that the Company might make a good appearance at the Coronation, that every member should have a new uniform at the expense of the general fund, and two hundred members were so equipped at a cost of over £2,000, the buttons, lace, etc., being



"REPRESENTATION OF A TARGET SHOT AT THE PRACTICE GROUND OF THE ROYAL ARTILLERY AT WOOLWICH, THE 10TH DAY OF OCTOBER, 1823, BY A SECTION OF THE JAGER RIFLEMEN OF THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY OF LONDON"

This engraving shows a Section of the Jagers firing "from the spot" (i.e., *at the halt in extended order) at a target 5ft. 6in. high by 15ft. long, which has been well covered. Nine men were stationed at 250 and eight at 200 yards. Every man loaded with loose powder and ball. The period allowed for firing was 30 minutes, during which time 580 balls struck the target.*

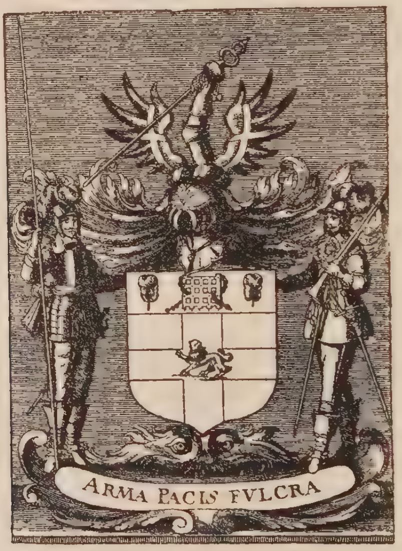
BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

of gold instead of silver. The finances of the Company were now in such a flourishing condition that it became the custom for the dinner after field days to be paid for out of regimental funds.

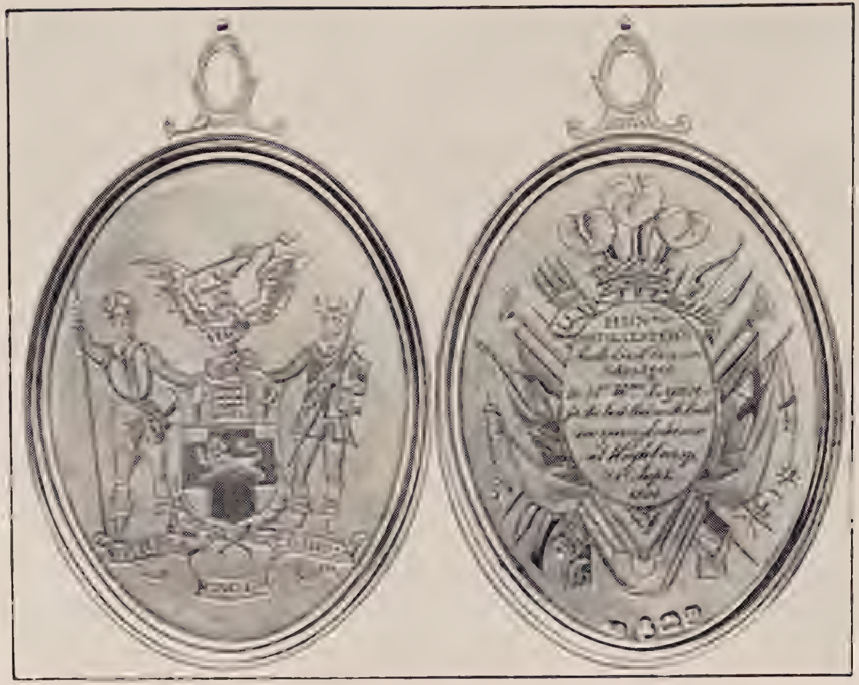
On the day of the Coronation the Company assembled at Armoury House at midnight and marched to the Privy Gardens, where they were due to parade at 3 a.m. They were stationed in Parliament Street with their flank only two paces from the platform on which the actual ceremony took place. It is somewhat surprising to find that on this important occasion the Company could muster only 179 members, of whom 52 were men of the Yager Company.

The Yagers appear to have been the crack company of the Regiment at this period. They frequently went to Woolwich by water and marched to Plumstead for ball practice, and they appear to have reached a very high standard of marksmanship. In 1823 a member of the Yager Company decided a wager made at their mess table "by ascending the Monument steps, 310 in number, in two minutes and a half, which he compleated within the time."

A petition was now presented to the King praying that he would issue a Warrant authorising the use of the Coat of Arms of the Company, of which no record existed in the Herald's College. These arms are stated by Blackwell to have been granted by James I, though there is no actual evidence to support this statement. It is true that the arms were in existence in that reign, for they form the frontispiece to a military work published in 1629 by John Bingham, a Captain of the Company, so that the above is the earliest date that can definitely be assigned to them. They may have been granted much earlier, possibly by Henry VIII to the Guild of St. George. Certainly the chief blazon, a lion of England on the Cross of St. George, would have been singularly appropriate to that body, while the blue "chief" bears the golden portcullis, a favourite badge of the Tudor kings. On the other hand, presuming the arms to have been granted by James I, the portcullis may have been intended to indicate the incorporation of the Guild by Henry VIII, while the Prince's plumes may have signified the interest taken in the Company by the Prince of Wales, afterwards Charles I. It is noteworthy that the Company was allowed the use of "Supporters," an honour usually reserved for Peers of the Realm, Knights of the various Orders, or "Proxies of Princes of the Blood." These "supporters" took the form of a Pikeman and a Musketeer, and their presence throws considerable doubt on the possibility of a grant by Henry VIII, at which period the "supporters" would more probably have included an Archer. However, the coat is a singularly pleasing heraldic composition and a most honourable one, bearing, as it does, the badges of England and various royal devices. The "supporters" and the crest,—an arm in armour, grasping a pike or leading staff, between the dragons' wings of London,—are equally appropriate and significant; indeed the whole "achievement" is one of which the Company may justly be proud.



The Armorial Bearings of the Company.
From an engraving by Wenceslaus Hollar, circa 1640.



SILVER-GILT REGIMENTAL SHOOTING MEDAL

"*Adjudged to Mr. Wm. Lyon for the best shot with ball 100 yards distance at Highbury, 24th Sept., 1801.*"
Recently presented to the Company by His Majesty King George V.

WALTHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

In compliance with the Company's petition, His Majesty issued a Royal Warrant to the College of Arms directing the Heralds to confirm the armorial bearings " for centuries borne " by the Company. Accordingly the ancient arms of the Regiment were duly exemplified according to the laws of Arms and recorded in the Heralds' Office. The official grant of the Arms is dated April 30th, 1821. In it the Arms are described as follows :—" Argent a Cross Gules (being that of St. George) charged with a Lion passant guardant Or (being part of the Royal Arms of England) on a Chief Azure a Portcullis of the Third between two Ostrich Feathers erect of the Field. And the Crest following Vizt. On a Wreath of the Colours A dexter Arm embowed in Armour the gauntlet grasping a Pike in bend Sinister Or between two Dragons Wings Argent each charged with a Cross Gules as the same are in the margin hereof more plainly depicted and I the said Garter do by these Presents exemplify to the said Artillery Company the Supporters following that is to say On the dexter side A Pikeman armed and accoutred supporting with the exterior hand a Pike erect proper And On the sinister side a Musketeer with his Matchlock Bandileers and Rest all proper as also depicted in the margin hereof the said Arms Crest and Supporters together with the Motto " Arma Pacis Fulcra " to be borne and used for ever hereafter by the said Artillery Company of London upon Shields, Banners, Seals, Regimental Colours or otherwise according to the Tenour of His Majesty's said Sign Manual and the Laws of Arms."

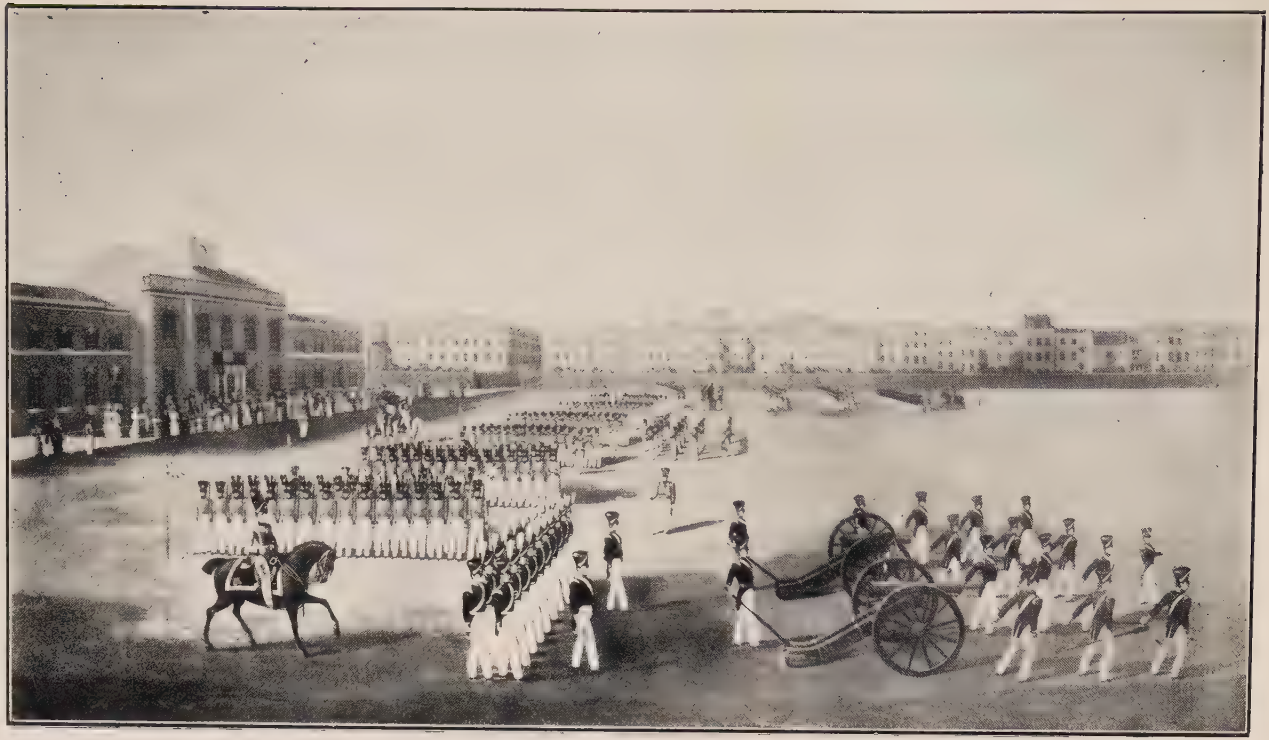
As far back as 1749 a Committee had been formed for the purpose of instituting a search for the Charter of Incorporation and other early records of the Company, but nothing further had been heard of the matter. In 1823 a special Committee was appointed to enquire into the Rights and Privileges of the Company. This Committee inaugurated a search for the Royal Charters and Letters Patent then supposed to have been granted by Henry VIII, James I and Charles I, but of which no enrolments were known to exist. A year later it was reported that none of these documents had been found, but that a large number of grants under the Privy Seal had lately been discovered and that it would take some considerable time to go through this mass of documents. Finally, after a long and patient search, the original Charter of Henry VIII was found in the Rolls Chapel on St. George's Day, 1829. The finder was one Thomas Hart, a member of the Company, to whom the Court passed a vote of thanks and a sum of £50 for his services. On application to the Master of the Rolls, directions were given for the enrolment of the Writ of Privy Seal thus discovered, and for an exemplification to be made, it not having been enrolled in Chancery, as it ought to have been.

Another worthy member of the Company, Quartermaster R. S. Kirby, presented to the Regiment in 1825 an Index to the Court Minute Books from 1657 up to the current year. For this monumental piece of spade work "equally marked by industry and judgment" he received the thanks of the Court and a piece of plate of the value of fifty guineas.

In consequence of the great want of uniformity in the colour of the trousers worn by members on parade, it was decided to issue regulation cloth gratis, but shortly afterwards the old tight pantaloons and long gaiters were abolished and each member was supplied with two pairs of white drill trousers.

The first action of the Company on the accession of William IV. was to approach His Majesty with a petition, dated July 9th, 1830, setting forth that the Company was a military Society of great antiquity, of great use in times of tumult in the Metropolis, and that previous sovereigns had confirmed the privileges of the Company and even declared themselves Captain-Generals; and that his late Majesty had "occasionally condescended in person to take command of the Battalion," wherefore they prayed His Majesty to confirm their ancient rights and privileges, and to honour the Corps by placing himself at their head.

At a Court of Assistants in September, the Duke of Sussex presented the new Royal Warrant, in which the King appointed himself Captain-General. In accordance with the royal wish,



THE DUKE OF SUSSEX REVIEWING THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY, 1828

From a coloured aquatint by R. Havell, Jun., after G. Forster.

MALDEN PUBLIC LIBRARY

the old Vellum Book was to be taken to him for signature. The Duke also produced a letter expressing the King's "entire approbation" of a proposed new uniform for the Company.

This refers to the order of King William that the Company should in future wear a uniform similar to that of the Grenadier Guards, but substituting silver lace for gold. But though the King actually issued the order, as a distinguished mark of royal favour, and was sufficiently interested in the matter to command that a private's coat should be made especially for his inspection, it is without doubt due to the influence of the Duke of Sussex that the change was brought about. This is proved by a letter from H.M.'s private secretary to the Duke, which speaks of the new uniform "which you propose for the Royal (*sic*) Artillery Company."

The King further commanded that the whole corps should be clad in scarlet. This order gave great offence to many of the Yager Company, who were so ill pleased at their uniform being changed from green to scarlet that the Captain, Lieutenant, and seven members resigned. The members of the Artillery Division were also turned into red-coats, and this is probably the only case of any artillery personnel in the world wearing that colour. The Band was now dressed in red, instead of the old blue coats with scarlet facings. A complete issue of the new uniforms was provided at the expense of the Company, the cost being £8 6*s.* 5*d.* per head; but Officers and N.C.O.'s paid the extra cost of their dress over that of a private. In consequence of the great cost of the Officers' coats, they were allowed to follow the example of Officers of the Line and wear blue frock coats, braided with black, on all ordinary musters.

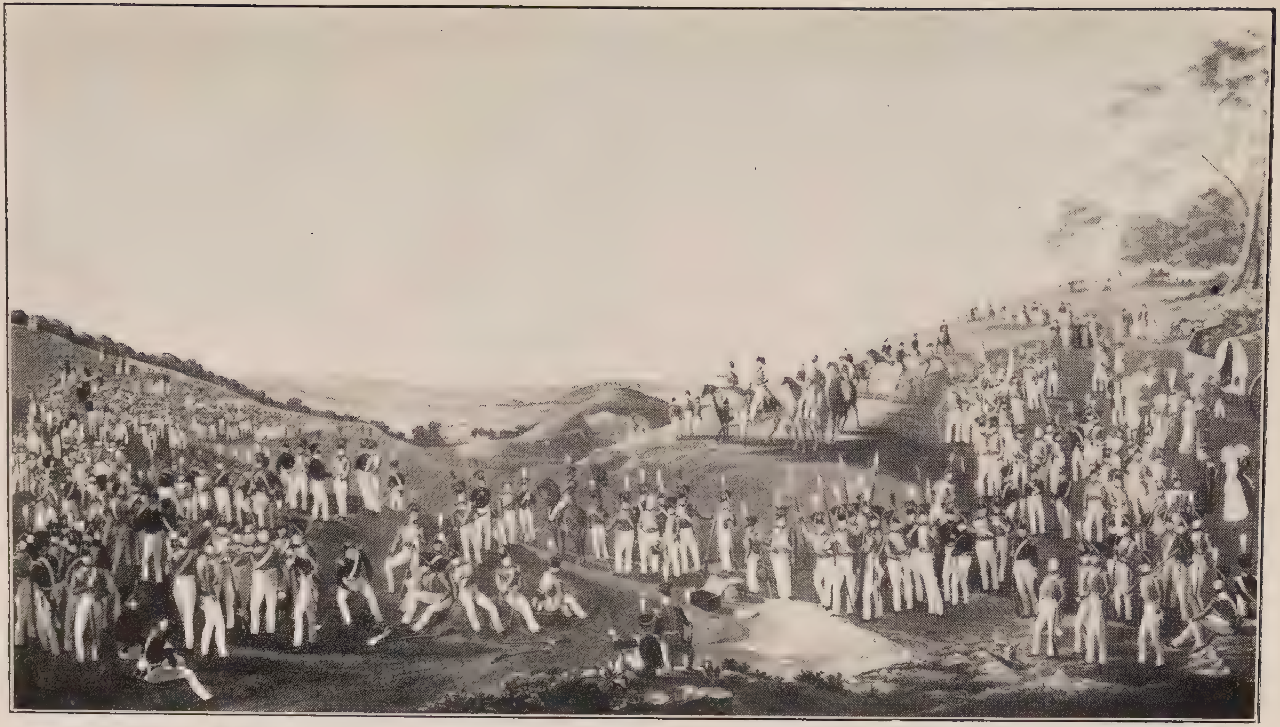
There is no doubt that King William took very considerable interest in the Company and gave them every possible encouragement. Thus we learn from a newspaper cutting dated 1830 that "the King has signified to the Honourable Artillery Company, of which he is the Captain-General, that they are to consider themselves in future his body guard, by whom alone, it is expected, his Majesty will be attended in the City at the civic festival."

A proposed visit of His Majesty to the Guildhall in November, 1830, was postponed at the last minute through fear of a popular tumult. The Company had already paraded as a Guard of Honour, and promptly tendered their services to the Lord Mayor. At his request they remained under arms until two o'clock next morning, when, all being quiet, they were dismissed, though a Guard was maintained at Armoury House for a few days. For this service they received a vote of thanks from the Court of Aldermen "for the very handsome manner in which they tendered their Services in aid of the Civil Power."

The ten dwelling houses belonging to the Company in Bunhill Row, adjoining the west gate, were rebuilt in this year. The yearly subscription for members, which had been reduced to one guinea in 1816, was again raised to two guineas. It was once more reduced to a guinea in 1834 and increased in 1858 to two guineas, at which figure it has remained to the present day.

The date of the Coronation having been fixed, the Duke of Sussex wrote to the Home Secretary, Lord Melbourne, offering the services of "this Ancient Volunteer Body." The offer was accepted, and the Company was stationed in the Churchyard of St. Margaret's, Westminster. The other troops on duty were the Life Guards, Horse Guards, 7th Dragoon Guards, 2nd Royal North British Dragoons (Scots Greys), 9th Lancers, two Batteries of Royal Artillery, 1st and 3rd Grenadiers, Coldstream Guards, and 1st and 2nd Scots Fusilier Guards. Lieut.-Col. Cox, who commanded the Company on this occasion, received a Gold Coronation Medal.

Frequent instances occur about this time of a very ancient privilege of the Company. It was enacted by the Charter of Henry VIII that no member of the Guild of St. George "shall from hensforthe be empanelled, or copelled to be upon any man^{r} of Queste or Jury upon what matter soev^{r} it be wthin o^{r} Citie of London, or other place wthin this o^{r} Realme." Whether



THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY, UNDER THE COMMAND OF THE DUKE OF SUSSEX, ASSEMBLED FOR BALL PRACTICE AT CHILD'S HILL, HAMPSTEAD, 1831

From a coloured aquatint by R. Havell, Jun., after Forster

SALEM PUBLIC LIBRARY

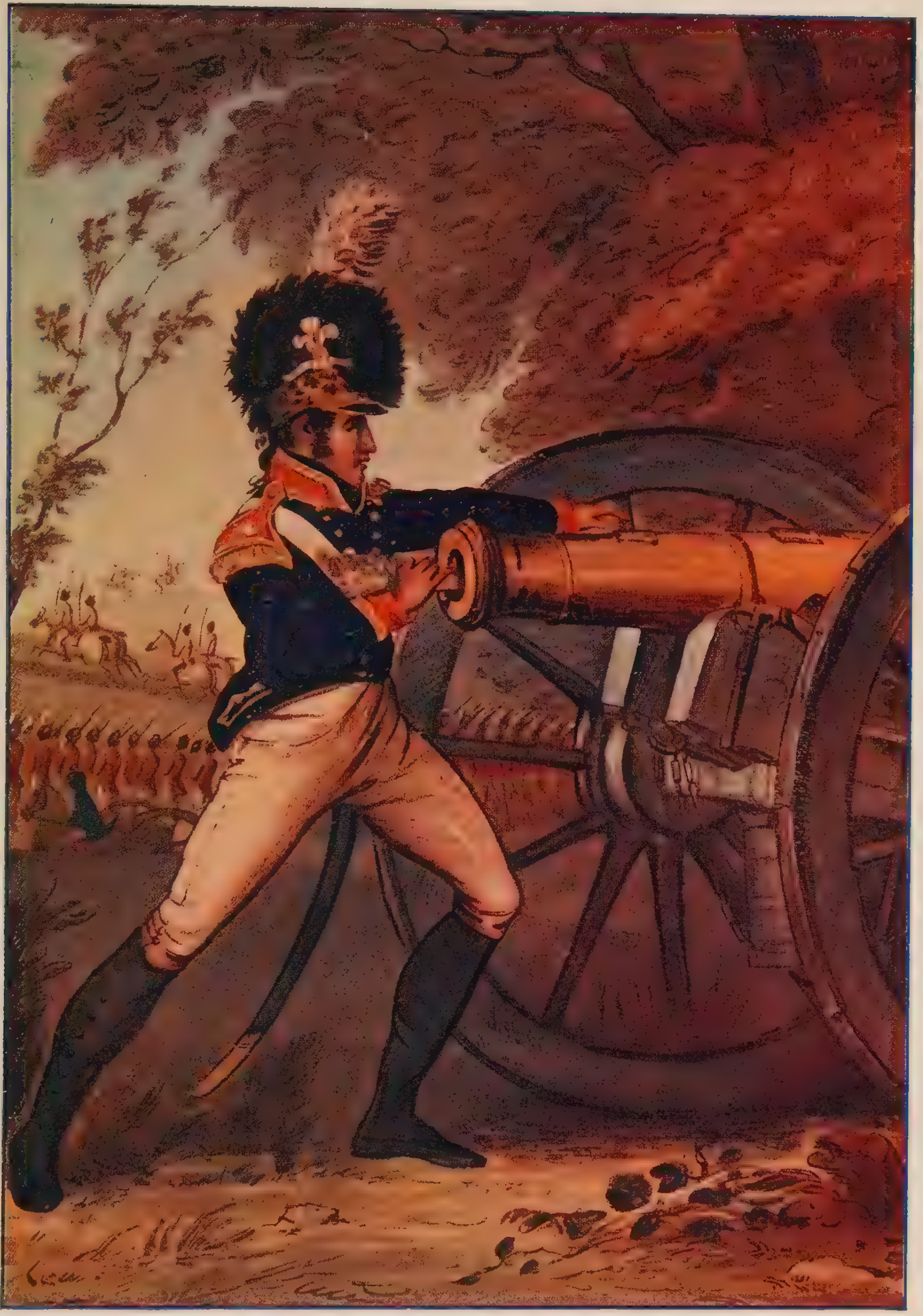
exemption from such service was now claimed by members on the authority of the recently discovered Charter is not clear, but many individuals were certainly discharged from service on all sorts of juries on production of their certificate of membership of the Company. The following is an extract from a certificate of exemption granted to a member :—

> "This is to certify that the Members of the Honourable Artillery Company being liable to be called upon in their Military Capacity at any time, at the shortest notice, to aid the Civil Power in quelling any tumultuous Riots or Disturbances that may take place; they the said Members of the Honourable Artillery Company aforesaid are exempted from serving upon any Jury or Juries, and from serving the Office of Constable, Special Constable, and Head Borough [Constable ?]. And he, the said Joseph Sparrow, is hereby discharged from his attendance at the Old Bailey Sessions accordingly.
>
> "George Potter,
> "*For the Secondary of London.*
>
> "*Dated at the Sessions House in the Old Bailey, London,*
> *this* 1*st of December, in the Year of our Lord,* 1831."

A memorial to revive the practice of archery in the Ground was presented to the Court in 1835, and it was decided to allow those members who had taken part in field days to use the ground for this purpose. However, at a General Court the proposal to adopt the regular practice of archery was negatived.

In 1837 there was a proposal to celebrate the three hundredth anniversary of the Incorporation of the Company by Royal Charter. This suggestion was considered by the Court in the light of existing information, and was negatived, on the ground that it was not possible to identify the Honourable Artillery Company with the Guild of St. George of the twenty-ninth year of King Henry VIII. The report of the Committee of Privileges on this matter states that "although there were many and strong grounds of inference that an Association for the practice of Arms did exist during the reign of Henry VIII (under what precise title did not appear), yet, as the first formal recognition of the Artillery Company which the Committee had been able to discover was the Order in Council of the 3rd of July, 1612, they thought it would be highly inexpedient to make arrangements (as had been proposed) for the celebration of an anniversary with which they were then unable to establish any identity by proof or good evidence."

King William IV died on June 20th, 1837. On the day of his funeral the Artillery Division paraded at Headquarters and fired minute guns from nine to ten p.m.



ARTILLERY DIVISION, H.A.C., 1804

From an engraving by Hill and Hopwood, after James Green

WIGAN PUBLIC LIBRARY

CHAPTER XI

1837 TO 1880

IMMEDIATELY on the accession of Queen Victoria the Company presented a petition on the usual lines setting forth the claims of the Corps to royal recognition, quoting precedents of encouragement by former monarchs, and praying for confirmation of ancient privileges and the appointment of a new Captain-General. The answer was prompt. On August 31st, 1837, the Duke of Sussex laid before the Court a Warrant under the royal signature confirming all former privileges of the Company and appointing him their Captain-General and Colonel. This is the first instance of the combination of these two ranks, an example which has been followed up to the present time.

In September of this year the Court approved the plans of the new church in the north-west corner of the ground, but on the understanding that the windows should not be allowed to grow into ancient lights and so debar the Company from building close to that boundary wall. Later it was decided that the Regiment should pay a sum of £65, being half the cost of facing the south and east sides of the church with stone. The object of this payment was to ensure the erection of an edifice more or less in keeping with the Armoury.

On the first occasion on which the young Queen visited the Guildhall, the Company's privilege of providing the Guard of Honour whenever the City was visited by Royalty was confirmed. It was ordered that the Lieut.-Colonel and Major should wear their gold sashes, King William IV. having granted them that distinction when in attendance on his person. This latter point was the subject of an official letter from the Duke of Sussex, as there appeared to have been no former record in the Court

Minutes of this "act of royal grace." The Company furnished a Guard 250 strong, each man being provided with six rounds of ball cartridge. They were stationed in Guildhall Yard, and it is recorded that the procession took an hour and a half in passing.

By a special alteration in the Rules and Orders, a Veteran Company, limited at first to thirty members, had been established in 1804. In the following year the first member had been admitted to this body; later, a Captain and a Sergeant were elected. It had been decided in 1833 that Veteran Members had the right to appear in uniform, and that they should fall in on parade for the purpose of being included in the returns, being then appointed to such duties as might be required. These duties seem to have included the policing of the ground on the occasion of ceremonial parades.

The regulations regarding admission to the Veteran Company were now amended, and it was resolved that Officers and N.C.O.'s, who had held rank for not less than fifteen years, and been members for not less than thirty years, might be admitted into the Veteran Company, nominally retaining their rank, provided the Military Committee reported to the Court that such member, by a zealous discharge of his duties, had merited such a mark of distinction. These rules were again revised in 1841, the period of service being reduced to twenty years, including ten years in commissioned or non-commissioned rank. In 1854 the period of service necessary for the retention of rank was reduced to five years. Four years later a special uniform of blue faced with red for Veteran Members was suggested, but the recommendations of the Military Committee were not approved and it was decided that members should wear the uniform of their rank at the time of retirement, with a plain cocked hat for officers and a regimental forage cap in the case of other ranks. This headgear was altered in 1860 to a regulation Line chaco.

Prior to the Coronation of Queen Victoria the Duke of Sussex drew the attention of the Home Secretary to the fact that on the occasions of the last two coronations the Company had had the honour of being placed next the Guards in the lining of the streets. He therefore requested that the Regiment might be allowed to render a similar service at the approaching ceremony. This offer was accepted, and the Company was stationed in Parliament Street between the 1st and 3rd Battalions of the Grenadier Guards. They were on duty from 4 a.m. till 6.30 p.m. The Queen afterwards offered knighthood to Lieut.-Col. Cox, who commanded on that occasion, an honour which he felt compelled to decline, somewhat to the disappointment of the members of the Company.

About this time the Company subscribed fifty guineas to the Nelson Memorial and a similar sum towards the statue of the Duke of Wellington.

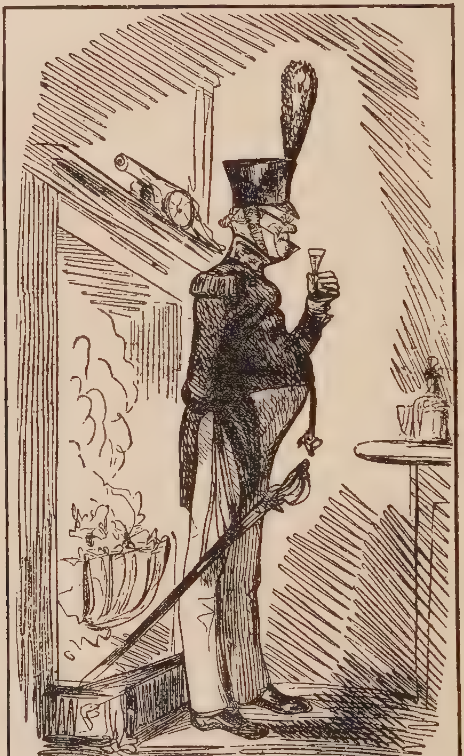
The Company continued to provide a favourite mark for the shafts of satire, and the following extract, from a weekly paper of 1840, not only a fair sample of the wit of the period, but gives an insight into the manners and customs of our predecessors of early Victorian days. After a poem which commences :—

"Hero! renowned in battle's strife,
Horrida bella's on thy brow;"

an illustration shows an officer of the Company, with his sword on the wrong side, taking a glass of wine in front of one of the fireplaces in the Long Room. Then follows a description of the Regiment, some of which is worth quoting and much of which is mere balderdash :—

> "Our pencil this week portrays, in all his martial glory, the officer of the Honourable Artillery Company, who, if he cannot boast of a participation in the deathless fame of the field of Waterloo, can urge many acts of valorous enterprise in checking civil commotions in this vast city. . . . His daring and courage seem oozing from the very interstices of his portentous pantaloons; his visage is adamantine, and the soul of Alexander the Great is buttoned up beneath his belligerent coat. . . .
>
> "The Honourable the Artillery Company was instituted.

many years since, by charter; that charter enables the body to purchase lands in mortmain, and their estates are now of considerable value. His Royal Highness the Duke of Sussex is the captain-general and colonel of this corporation. The uniform (which is red) is the only military costume to which his Royal Highness is entitled. In this dress he appears on state occasions, and wore the same on the recent nuptials of the Queen with Prince Albert. The second in command is denominated the lieutenant-colonel. Charles Cox Esq., the army agent, fills this distinguished post. The third in rank is the major, James William Freshfield, Esq., joint solicitor to the Bank of England and member of parliament for Penryn. The officers and privates are young men of respectability, who are admitted by ballot; they are at the expense of their dresses, and amount



in number to between six and seven hundred. One division of the regiment consists of artillery-men, many of whom are very expert in the management of the engines of war. . . . The company meets every Thursday, at the artillery ground, to drill and take lessons in the art of war; they do not muster very strongly, which, perhaps, arises from their having no pay. . . . The armoury is well worthy the investigation of the curious, as it presents some of the most grotesque habiliments of war that ingenuity could devise or imagine.

"In cases of civil commotion, this corporation is eminently in request; it also is called out on the happenings of great conflagrations, and other momentous occasions; the members likewise display themselves on coronations, and other national events. On any outbreak taking place . . . the corporation meet day and night, and mount guard as regular troops. They have arms and ammunition for nearly a thousand men. In the lamentable riots of 1780, this body of men were called into active service; and in old Broad-street, wherein the mob had evinced a most determined and destructive spirit, eight members of the Artillery Company lost their lives, while mounting guard. . . . Their energies and courage are sustained by a plentiful allowance of brandy and wine, which is of the choicest character, being imported by themselves, and deposited in the cellars beneath the mansion in the artillery ground. . . . On field days, which are now few, but which, in the time of George the Third, were many (that monarch frequently reviewed the company), the troop cut a pretty considerable figure, and, in their indulgencies and tastes, combine very felicitously the *civil* and the *martial* character. They sport the eye-glass, the perfumed handkerchief, and not a few do duty in spectacles. The *regular* troops may smile, perchance, at a soldier carrying an umbrella, and, in the event of a shower of rain, beholding a long continuity of expanded ginghams held up by a company under review. The late Charles Matthews . . . described a field-day perpetrated by this honourable company, and in his sarcastic humour, which probably had less truth about it than imaginativeness, describes many of this company, when the review was over, as depositing their arms in the toll-house at Kilburn, and proceeding homeward by the Paddington stage, confessedly a somewhat novel movement in military tactics.

"The corporation meets frequently in the year, at their house in the artillery grounds, to enjoy the luxury of a good dinner, and to broach the choice wines before alluded to. These *feeds* are paid for out of the revenues of their estates, entailing no expense whatever on the consumers thereof. Once in a year, moreover, the company do the gallant, and the ecstatic, by the celebration of a ball. On these occasions, the members execute the magnificent, shining, like a host of *Marmions*, in the full blaze of a galaxy of beauty. A ball without a military *cove* is as 'flat, stale, and unprofitable' a thing as a 'fish dinner at Blackwall without the fish,' as Sir William Curtis once remarked. . . . But we must conclude by observing that, in the months of summer, an evening promenade is established in the rural grounds of the Artillery Company, in which the fair lasses of our eastern empire are wont to disport their lovely forms. On these occasions, the sons of Mars go through their varied evolutions, looking as fierce as soldiers ought."

Now occurred the first of several serious collisions between the civil and military authorities of the Regiment. Some suggestions for improving the military efficiency of the Company emanated from a private meeting of some forty members; one proposal being that Sergeants of the Line should be appointed as Drill Sergeants. The Court considered these suggestions and approved of some of them. The Duke of Sussex was most indignant at this interference by the Court in purely military affairs, and expressed his opinion at a subsequent meeting of the Court in no measured terms. He styled the meeting of private members to discuss subjects of military discipline as "an irregular, most unmilitary, and even mutinous proceeding," and he censured the Court for having received a deputation and considered their suggestions. His Royal Highness at the same time expressed his warm attachment to the Company, and stated that his whole anxiety was for the maintenance of a state of discipline which should earn for the Regiment the confidence and goodwill of the Sovereign, the esteem of the civil and military authorities and the regard of their fellow citizens.

The Court expressed gratitude at the interest taken in the

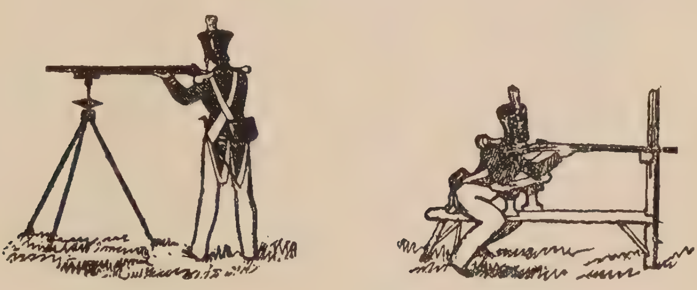
Company by their Captain-General, whose remarks they discussed at a later meeting. Finally a letter was drafted expressing regret at the misunderstanding which had arisen, and assuring His Royal Highness that the suggestions complained of had been received by the Court, not as the resolutions of a body of members, but as suggestions for the improvement of the Company from numerous and respectable individuals (a somewhat ingenuous quibble), it having been the custom from time immemorial for members to submit respectful suggestions to the Court on such matters. They added that members of the Company, being citizens of respectable rank in society, expensively equipped at their own cost, could hardly be governed by the same rigid rules of obedience as were rightly enforced in a regiment of the Line.

Fuel was then added to the fire by a resolution of a General Court to the effect that it was essential that regular non-commissioned officers should be employed in drilling the various branches of the Regiment. On being informed of this, the Duke wrote regretting that, after his expressions to the Court of the necessity for separating the military government of the Company from its civil management, a resolution completely at variance with his opinion should have been passed by a General Court. His Royal Highness added that he now considered it his duty to report the situation to superior powers, but offered to allow sufficient time to elapse before doing so to enable a Special General Court to consider the situation. A Special General Court was called and decided that, under the existing Rules and Orders, it was an undoubted right and privilege of members, when not on military duty, to deliberate individually or collectively upon the affairs of the Company, and to express such opinions to the Military Committee; which Committee had been appointed, and could also be abolished, by vote of the members. In asserting these rights the Court made no pretension whatever to any right to dictate to the military officers of the Company concerning the exercise of their military commands, but unreservedly acknowledged the duty of implicit obedience on all occasions of the Company being under arms or on military duty. The only object they had in view was the improvement of its military discipline, efficiency, and character; and they were deeply mortified and concerned to find His Royal Highness laying upon the Corps the imputation of irregularity, insubordination, and mutinous conduct, and respectfully disclaimed such imputations as injurious and entirely unmerited. The Court also resolved that while they felt it incumbent upon them to adhere to the principle of self-government, conferred on them by so many successive Sovereigns, they were ready to take into consideration any suggestion from His Royal Highness for the revision of any of the rules with a view to improve the efficiency and military discipline of the Company.

Thus the civil and military authorities found themselves at complete variance on a question of discipline. The former, it is clear, were acting in perfect accordance with the Rules and Orders of the Company, but the military side had stronger backing than that afforded by those time-honoured regulations. The Duke sent in a report, and the Chairman of the Court was requested to attend at the Home Office. There he was informed by the Home Secretary that a serious view was taken of the fact that a civil court had attempted to control a military body; that the opinion of law officers of the Crown had been taken; and that if it was found necessary to lay the matter before the Crown, he (the Home Secretary) would have no alternative but to advise the breaking up of a Corps where such improper notions and feelings were entertained. At the same time he expressed his readiness to afford an opportunity to the Company to consider its irregularity and to endeavour to place itself on such a footing as would prevent a recurrence of the trouble.

The Court of Assistants had now no alternative but to assure their Captain-General of their desire to give the fullest effect to his recommendations. A conference followed, which had the result of bringing about certain alterations in the Rules and Orders, by which the separation of the civil and military concerns of the Company was effected. Shortly afterwards, in 1842, the appointment of the Field Officers and Adjutant was reserved to the Crown, and so the matter ended for the time. This constituted the first serious breach between the civil and military sides of the Company. We shall see later how history repeated itself.

The flint-lock musket, with which the Company had been armed for nearly 150 years, now became obsolete, and, in 1840, percussion muskets were provided, similar to those in use by regiments of the Line. About the same time it was ordered that no members should wear spectacles when under arms.



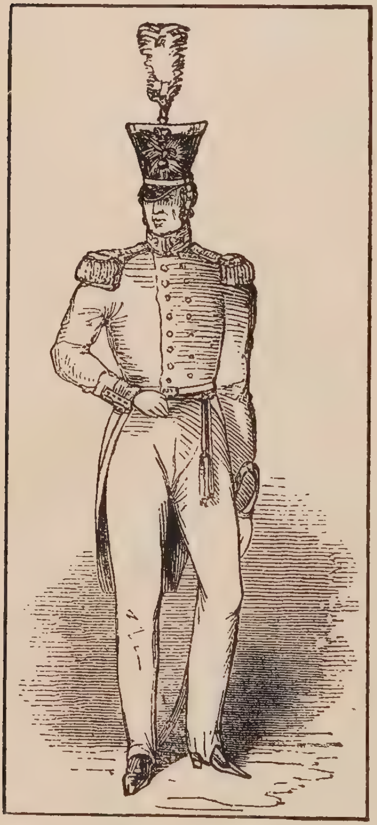
Shooting with the Rest. Shooting Sitting with Rest

Yager Company, H.A.C., 1843.

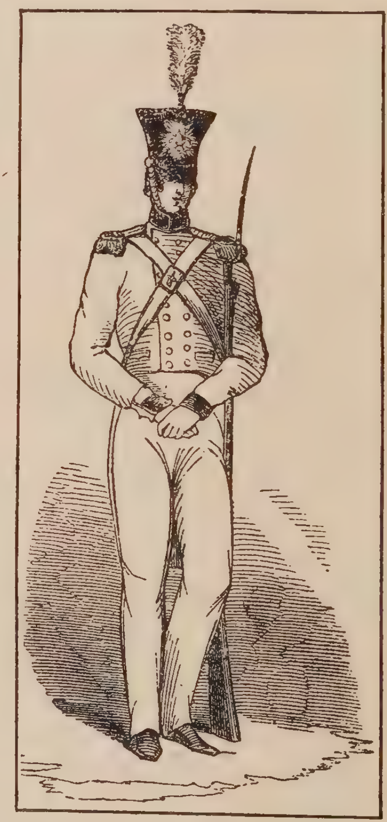
In April, 1843, the Duke of Sussex died. The Artillery Division fired seventy minute guns at Headquarters on the day of his funeral, and the Court afterwards voted one hundred guineas to the fund for erecting a memorial to his memory. This ultimately took the form of a new wing to the Royal Free Hospital in Gray's Inn Lane.

His Royal Highness, from the time he first became a member as Colonel in 1817, had taken a very active part in the management of the Company. His was no nominal membership. He frequently presided at meetings of the Military Committee, which generally assembled at his quarters in Kensington Palace, and on several occasions he took the chair at Courts of Assistants. Though he had differed strenuously from the general feeling of the regiment on certain points, it is beyond doubt that he had the well-being and discipline of the Company always at heart, and it has been shown that he was always foremost in claiming and maintaining regimental rights and privileges.

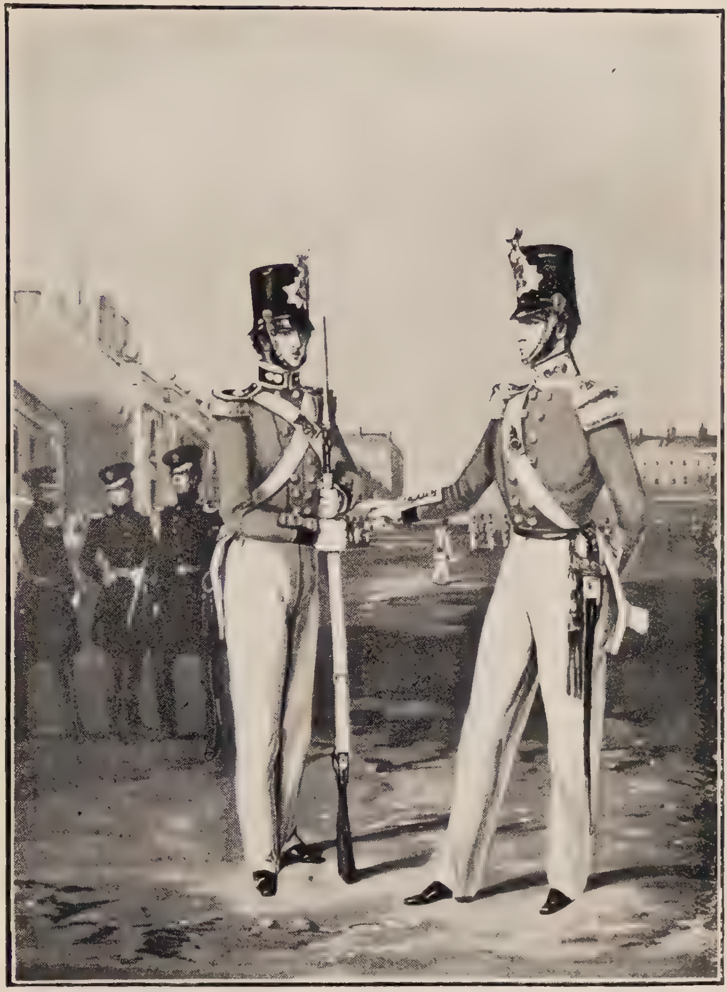
The Prince Consort now expressed his willingness to accept the vacant post, but as it appeared that all former Captains-General had been selected from members of the Company, the Home Secretary suggested that it might be desirable to admit His Royal Highness a member prior to his appointment. Prince Albert was therefore formally proposed and admitted, and a new Royal Warrant confirmed his rank as Captain-General and Colonel of the Company.



Officer of the H.A.C. 1843.



Private of the H.A.C. 1843.



OFFICER AND PRIVATE, H.A.C. INFANTRY, 1848

From a coloured Engraving by J. Harris after H. Martens, published by R. Ackermann.

NEEDHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

The first occasion on which the new Captain-General had the opportunity of seeing his regiment on parade was at the opening of the new Royal Exchange, when the Company provided a Royal Guard of Honour. His Royal Highness wrote from Windsor Castle that he had been impressed with the appearance of the Guard, and looked forward to seeing more of the Company than he was able to do on that occasion.

At this juncture both the Lieutenant-Colonel and the Major of the Company resigned from the active list after forty-six years' service in each case. Both received permission to continue to wear their uniform " on festive occasions and at Court." Under the new regulations their places were filled at the nomination of the Queen, but both officers attended and were admitted members of the Company on appointment.

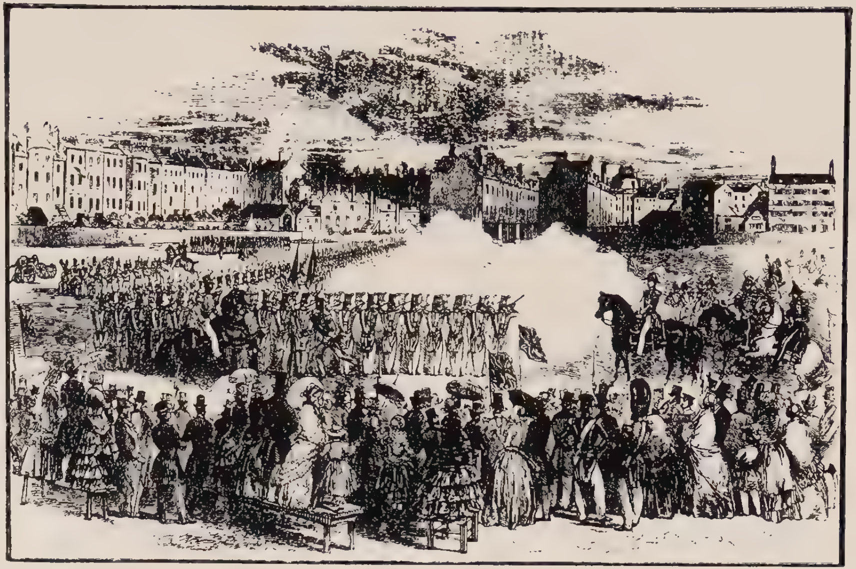
In 1846 the Company were successful in defeating a scheme of the Eastern Counties Railway for the formation of a railway terminus in the Artillery Ground.

The part assigned to the Company at the time of the Chartist Riots was to occupy the Guildhall and to defend Southwark Bridge, if necessary. It is a matter of history that the great Chartist meeting on Kennington Common came to nothing, but it was regarded with great anxiety at the time. The Company received orders to assemble and mustered in the Artillery Ground at 7 a.m. on April 10th, 1848. Only three members were absent from duty, one being seriously ill and the other two on the Continent. Every man was provided with forty rounds of ball-cartridge; and before leaving the ground Lieut.-Colonel FitzRoy addressed the men in a short, spirit-stirring speech, calling on them to be firm—to do their duty—to stand by one another, and to fire low, picking off the ringleaders. A hearty cheer was the response, and at nine o'clock they marched out, with colours flying, to the tune of the " British Grenadiers."

The streets were filled with a hooting, cursing mob, and matters for a time looked serious, especially when missiles began to fly. Exercising admirable forbearance, the Company eventually reached Guildhall, which they proceeded to prepare for defence by barricading doors and windows. The most alarming rumours arrived from time to time, but finally it was announced officially that the Chartists had dispersed without any disturbance, evidently awed by the preparations of the authorities. After that, the Company did ample justice to an excellent cold collation liberally provided by the City, and then marched back to Headquarters. There was again some hooting, but nothing like the disturbance of the morning. For their services the Company received votes of thanks from the Court of Aldermen and the Common Council.

In connection with these disturbances a most interesting correspondence took place between the Prince Consort and the Duke of Wellington. The Duke wrote on April 6th as follows:—

"The utmost anxiety is felt by those interested in the peace of the Town, in consequence of the position of the Guns to which this Company is attached in the Artillery Ground. They are liable to be seized by one of the Monster Mobs going about at any time. The Artillery Company could not be expected to protect them from being seized. He understands that they are ready with their ammunition and drag ropes to be moved at once. There are no Troops nearer to the Artillery Ground than the Tower. It has been suggested that the Guns belonging to the Company should be placed in the Tower. As the Constable of the Tower The Duke of Wellington certainly should object to the Artillery Company forming a part of its Garrison. The late Duke of Sussex referred to The Duke some questions respecting it's discipline, and sent Him Papers respecting the constitution of it's formation and existence, of which He does not exactly recollect the details. But as well as He recollects, it was established in the Reign of Charles 1st, during the Rebellion, and it's Officers and Men are appointed by the Corporation of the City of London, or the Officers by self-election confirmed by the Corporation. But whether in the one way or the other, the Corps is of the nature of a National Guard: the Men not Soldiers by profession, but Citizens; and Soldiers only when



THE PRINCE CONSORT REVIEWING THE COMPANY, 1848

under Arms. The Officers elected by themselves or by the Corporation of the City of London. This Corps must therefore be considered as a deliberative Military Body, liable to all the impressions of the population among which stationed, and whose existence is calculated to produce effects similar to those which the existence of the National Guard did at Paris, and will produce wherever a Corps formed on such principles will be established. —He therefore would represent the inconvenience attending the reception of the Officers and Men of the Artillery Company as part of the Garrison of the Tower.—They ought not to be allowed to accustom the Non-Commissioned Officers and Soldiers of the Guards, or other Troops which they might meet in that Garrison, to deliberate upon the Orders which they may receive. At the same time He apprehends that the Artillery Company will not consent to deposit their Guns and Ammunition in the Tower, and to resume their Station at the Artillery Ground; and indeed He doubts whether Your Royal Highness could order that such a disposition should be made of the Guns and Ammunition without the consent of the Corporation of the City of London.

"All which is submitted to Your Royal Highness by Your Royal Highness' devoted Servant,

"WELLINGTON."

Apart from its quaint literary style and the complete ignorance shown of the history and constitution of the Company, the above effusion throws an interesting light on the opinion of the peculiar constitution of the Company entertained by the higher military command at that time. Evidently the Duke had in mind the trouble of 1842, and it is not surprising that the "self-election" of officers should appear to him a dangerously democratic principle; but it is amazing that an official of high rank should have been so uninformed as to stigmatise the Company as a body of men likely to contaminate the discipline of the Guards or to emulate the disloyalty of the National Guard at the time of the French Revolution.

The reply of the Prince Consort to the Duke's letter is perhaps a little disappointing, as he entirely ignored the suggestions of possible disaffection in the Company. It runs as follows :—

"Buckm Palace,
"April 6, 1848.

"Prince Albert has had the Honor of receiving F.M. the Duke of Wellington's Letter of this date, and begs to state in answer to it that Lt.-Col. Bryce Pearse of the Honble Artillery Compy., not considering himself sufficiently experienced in military matters, has two days ago placed his resignation in the Prince's hands and that He has therefore recommended the Honble. Henry FitzRoy, who formerly served in Her Majesty's Army, to the Queen for the Lt. Colcy. of that Corps, who has been graciously pleased to appoint him by warrant from the Secretary of State for the Home Dept.

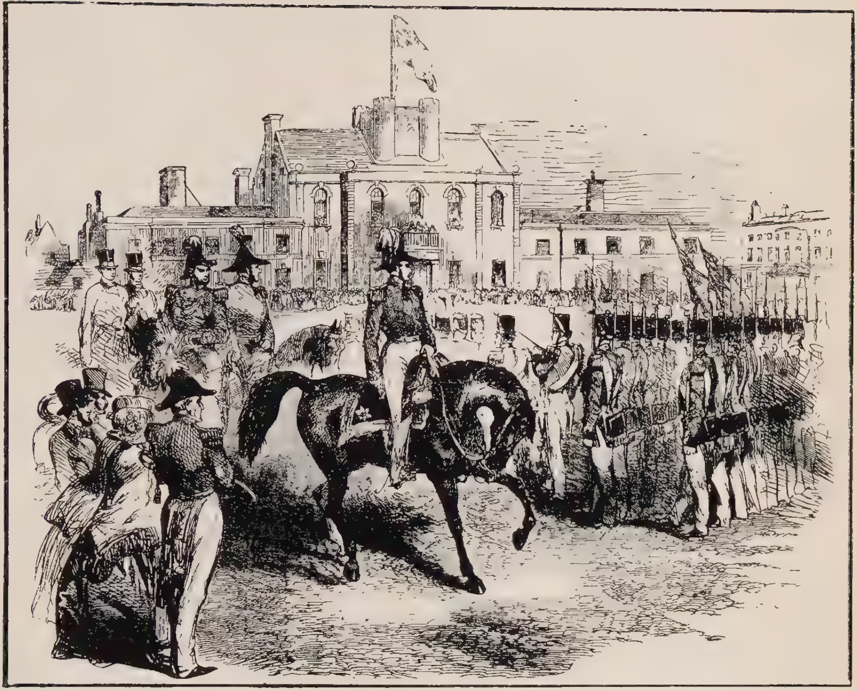
"The Artillery Company was chartered by King Henry VIII, manages its affairs by a Court of Assistants, composed of the Superior Officers and the Treasurer, and is entirely independent of the Authorities of the City of London, to the best belief of the Prince.

"If the D. of W. wishes it, the Prince will consider the communication which he has received, as an intimation of the desire upon the part of the Commdr. in Chief that the Guns belonging to the Honble. Artillery Company be desposited in the Tower of London for safety, and will desire the Lt. Col. to put himself in communication with the Duke, as Constable of the Tower, for that purpose.

"The Prince can see no reason why the Regt. should found upon this, a desire to be stationed in the Tower as part of the Garrison.

"ALBERT.
"Captn. Genl. & Col.
"Hon. Artillery Compy."

The Duke replied the same night, promising "to give orders to the Officer Commanding in the Tower quietly to make preparations for the reception and safe keeping of the guns in question in the Tower, which shall be of a Nature to render it convenient for the persons attached and their Officers and Artilly Men to visit them occasionally and keep them in order,



REVIEW OF THE HON. ARTILLERY COMPANY BY HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS PRINCE ALBERT, CAPTAIN-GENERAL AND COLONEL, 1852

[illegible] PUBLIC LIBRARY

whenever it may prove not otherwise than convenient to admit these Men into the Fortress."

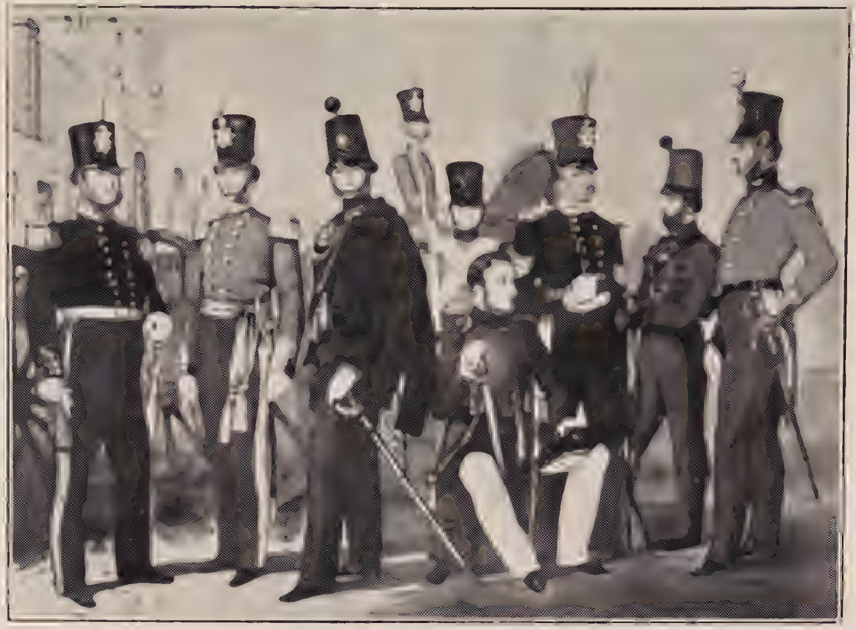
Later in the year the Prince Consort inspected his Regiment for the first time. We are told by a contemporary weekly that the Company paraded 300 strong, with four well-mounted pieces of ordnance and ten rounds of ammunition per man. After the general salute "the line walked and marched past in slow and quick time" and subsequently "fired in line and in square with much precision and accuracy." The same paper goes on to refer to a musketry practice which took place later in the same week. "The illustrious Prince having issued orders to the hon. company to proceed to Charlton for a series of ball practice, they on Thursday morning again assembled on their parade ground, commanded by their colonel, the Hon. Henry FitzRoy, M.P., and marched to the Eastern Counties Railway, *en route* to Charlton. There was a capital muster on the occasion. Headed by their fine band, they passed through the various streets and created abundance of astonishment; many being the surmises as to where they could be going. Arrived at Charlton, they marched to the ground at the back of the White Horse, halted, and again formed into companies, and commenced firing individually from right to left, and then in sections, at targets, the distance being from eighty to one hundred yards. Each man fired six rounds, and it is the unanimous opinion that they acquitted themselves with most admirable precision. Officers and non-commissioned officers also fired, and told nearly every time, till at length the bull's-eye was completely riddled. The company again formed with that 'good digestion' which 'waits on appetite,' and marched for the White Horse, and made a very severe attack upon a cold collation that had been prepared for the occasion; after which they returned to town by the same route. It ought to be stated that all are *gentlemen* who belong to the Honourable Artillery Company."

In consequence of a considerable increase of membership during this year, the number of companies was increased from six to eight. Chacos were also provided, and red piping was worn on the seam of the trousers for the first time. It is also on record that a private was severely reprimanded by the Court and fined ten guineas for leaving the ground without leave when on parade at an inspection by Prince Albert. The fine was paid.

On the 4th of June, 1849, the formation of a Masonic Lodge for members only was sanctioned. This organisation survives as the FitzRoy Lodge, having derived its title from the Lieut.-Colonel of that name.

A change of great importance in the history of the Company took place in 1849, the appointment of all officers being reserved to the Crown by a special Royal Warrant. It seems that this alteration was due to the opinion of the Government of the day that the existing Rules and Orders, particularly those which laid down that officers should be elected by vote of the members, were inconsistent with the preservation of military discipline. The announcement of this order gave great dissatisfaction to the Court of Assistants and to a considerable body of members, who looked upon it as an infringement of their ancient privileges. A requisition signed by 68 members was presented to the Court, proposing that the Court should be the supreme authority in all cases, civil and military, and that no officer should sit upon the Court who had not been elected by ballot. These proposals, which would have practically deprived officers appointed by the Crown of any real authority, were carried at a General Court, though by very small majorities, and a new Court was elected, which included all the leaders of the malcontents. This new Court drew up a petition to the Queen, praying for the restoration of the ancient privilege of the election of officers, or, in other words, the annulment of the late Warrant.

The Company was thus divided into two contending parties, the one ready to recognise and receive the new Warrant as an honour and mark of Royal favour, the other striving to retain the elections in their own hands. Several of the latter, however, were afterwards offered, and gladly accepted, commissions from the Queen. Each party drew up an Address on the subject to Prince Albert—the one signed by 126, and the other by 190;



UNIFORMS OF THE COMPANY, 1853-55

From a Lithograph by John King.

From left to right:—Captain, Artillery Division; Captain, Battalion; Captain, Rifle Company; Driver, Artillery Division; Private, Battalion(Drill Dress); Lieutenant, Light Infantry Company; Sergeant, Artillery Division; Corporal, Rifle Company; Private, Battalion (Full Dress, off duty).

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY

the two parties being thenceforward known as "The Hundred and Twenty-six" and "The Hundred and Ninety."

The Captain-General replied to the 126 Malcontents with a threat of resignation, and a stern warning that, if they persisted in their opposition, it would become a question for Her Majesty's Government "to consider how far their duty to the Country would justify them in permitting the existence, in the heart of London, of an Armed Military Body entirely free from those established and fixed rules of discipline, and power of enforcing it, without which the Constitution of this country does not sanction the maintenance of an armed force, even by the Sovereign."

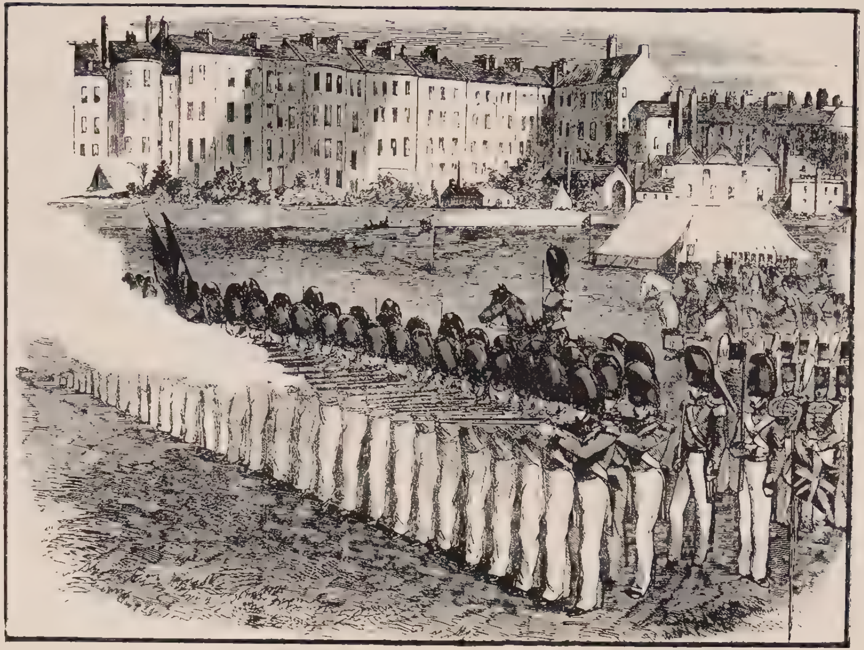
To the 190 Prince Albert expressed his pleasure at their willingness to obey the provisions of the Queen's Warrant.

The two Addresses, with the Captain-General's replies thereto, were laid before the Home Secretary, and Lieut.-Col. FitzRoy shortly afterwards reported to the Court the opinion of that official, namely:—"That the effect of the resolution passed by the Court appeared to be to render null the authority of the officers to be appointed by the Crown, and replace them exclusively under the jurisdiction of the privates. That if these resolutions were persevered in, indicating as they did a disposition to resist the Royal authority under which alone the Company could have any existence as a Military body, he should feel it his duty to advise the dissolution of the Company."

Having regard to the Address signed by the 190 contented members, the Home Secretary promised to delay his report to the Crown in order to enable the Court to reconsider the position. Thus far it is remarkable how closely the dispute followed on the lines of the previous trouble of 1841. This time, however, the Court were not disposed to accept defeat. They presented a memorial to the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen, invoking their assistance in obtaining from Her Majesty the restoration of their privilege of electing officers. This was followed by a counter-petition from the contrary party. After considerable discussion and a division, the Court of Aldermen carried a proposition regretting the dissensions in the Company, which they feared might lead to a suspension of their military functions, "thus depriving the citizens of London of a useful and effective defence," and recommending that a deputation wait on the Secretary of State to urge that the right of electing their own officers might be restored to the Company. The deputation, consisting of the Lord Mayor, the Town Clerk, the Remembrancer and the Recorder, stated their case, concluding with an earnest request on behalf of the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, that the services of so constitutional and effective a body for the protection of the peace and property of the City should not be lost to the citizens of London.

The Home Secretary, in reply, stated that he could not hold out any hope of alteration being made in the last Warrant.

This decision should have ended the matter, and it certainly led to the Rules and Orders being amended by a General Court in accordance with the requirements of the Home Secretary. Unfortunately, a small body of "die-hards" continued to make trouble, while the members of the Court do not appear to have accepted their defeat with a good grace. They sent yet another deputation to the Home Secretary, with no result, and then indulged in a series of petty attacks on Lieut.-Col. FitzRoy, an officer whose methods appear to have roused great antagonism. Finally, a serious and most discreditable disturbance took place at the annual dinner in celebration of the Prince Consort's birthday. The Court, obviously with malice aforethought, had departed from the invariable custom on these occasions that only those who had previously appeared under arms should attend the dinner, and had ordered that the dinner should be open to all members and that uniform should not be worn. Consequently many members attended parade and then dined elsewhere. On returning to Headquarters, still in uniform, some of them passed through the Long Room and were hooted and hissed by the diners. Missiles were thrown, and an attempt to eject some of the members in uniform resulted in a scuffle, in which swords were drawn.



REVIEW OF THE HON. ARTILLERY COMPANY ON HER MAJESTY'S BIRTHDAY

REVIEW OF THE COMPANY ON THE QUEEN'S BIRTHDAY, 1855

With the feelings of the opposing parties at such a pitch, it speaks very highly for the tact and conciliatory powers of the Prince Consort that he was able eventually to put an end to this unfortunate state of affairs. By his personal intervention he succeeded finally in restoring harmony, and at a General Court in December, 1850, all the most active in the recent contest against the military authorities were rejected, and a new Court was elected containing only nine of the old Court, whose term of office had led to such deplorable occurrences.

Making all allowances for the feelings of those who felt that a long-cherished privilege was being reft from the regiment, it is difficult to find excuse for the fatuous policy of the Court of Assistants, which, for the second time in ten years, brought the old Company to the brink of destruction. The conduct of the opponents of the Royal Warrant provides only too sound an argument for the urgent necessity for discipline and control other than that vested in officers elected by their fellow members.

On the other hand it must be admitted that Lieut.-Col. FitzRoy had acted throughout in a somewhat high-handed manner, and had on several occasions treated the Court and its decisions with studied contempt. No doubt there were faults on both sides, and it would have been pleasanter to have ignored the whole sorry business. This would certainly have been done, but for the necessity for a complete and impartial account of the history of the regiment.

The Artillery Division had worn scarlet coats on ceremonial occasions ever since William IV. had changed the old uniform of the Company to one similar to the Grenadier Guards. They had, however, continued to wear their blue uniforms for drill and undress purposes. It was now ordered, in 1851, that they should be allowed to wear blue on parade when the Commanding Officer should so direct.

In 1852 a covered shooting gallery, 110 yards long and 17 feet wide, was constructed at the back of Armoury House, with the consent of the Corporation, at a cost of £350. This range was allotted to Companies on certain nights of the week, and a set of rules was drawn up to regulate its use. Among other things it was directed that no smoking or refreshments would be permitted while firing.

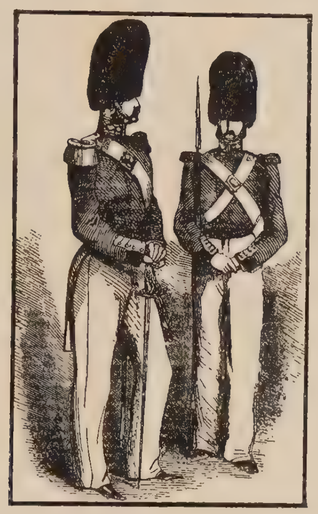
Uniform greatcoats were worn by the Company for the first time this year. They were of the same pattern as those of the Foot Guards, but with bronze buttons and without the blue facings then worn. Officers wore blue cloaks instead of great-coats. The broad red stripes on the trousers of Infantry Officers and all ranks of the Artillery Division also made their appearance in this year.

The year 1853 was chiefly notable for a presentation by the Prince Consort of new carriages and limbers for the two six-pounder guns. This date marks the origin of the old Field Battery, which still survives as "B" Battery, H.A.C. Up till that time the Artillery Division had consisted entirely of Foot Artillery, the guns being moved with drag-ropes, except on special occasions, when horses were provided for a "march-out." Lieut. W. H. Tatham, a member of the Veteran Company with fifty-six years' service, now offered to write a History of the Company in continuation of Highmore's work of 1804. For some unexplained reason the Court declined the offer. Only a few years later several petitions signed by large numbers of members were presented to the Court asking that a succinct history of the Company should be written and placed on sale, but at the time no one was found willing to undertake the work. About the same time the Court prohibited card-playing in Armoury House, it being considered highly detrimental to the best interests of the Company.

The Grenadier Company of the Regiment, which had been in continuous existence since 1686, was abolished in 1854. Its fate was shared by the Yager or Rifle Company, the Infantry being reduced to six Battalion Companies and a Light Infantry Company armed with rifles. At the same time a new rule was passed requiring all members to perform at least twelve drills a year. This regulation appears to have been very necessary, as some members had done no drills at all for several years. Some months later seventeen of these gentlemen were expelled for non-attendance.

The Court of Assistants, though shorn of much of its former power, still meted out justice to delinquents for purely civil offences. They fined a Sergeant £5 for assaulting a boy by throwing him downstairs, and ordered the sentence to be posted in the Sutling Room. In December, 1854, they voted one hundred guineas to the Royal Patriotic Fund for the alleviation of the sufferings of the troops in the Crimea.

Bearskin caps were first worn by the Infantry in 1855, when they took the place of the old chacos. Almost the first occasion on which the Company paraded in the new headdress was at a Royal Guard of Honour at the Crystal Palace, when the Queen was accompanied by the Emperor and Empress of the French. The Emperor, says *The Times*, "could not fail to be struck with the imposing air of this celebrated Corps."



H.A.C. INFANTRY, 1855.

The lease from the Lieutenancy of the eastern half of the Ground was renewed for another term of ninety-nine years as from June, 1855, on payment of a fine of £3,000, and the surrender of the plot of ground now occupied by the yard of Finsbury Barracks.

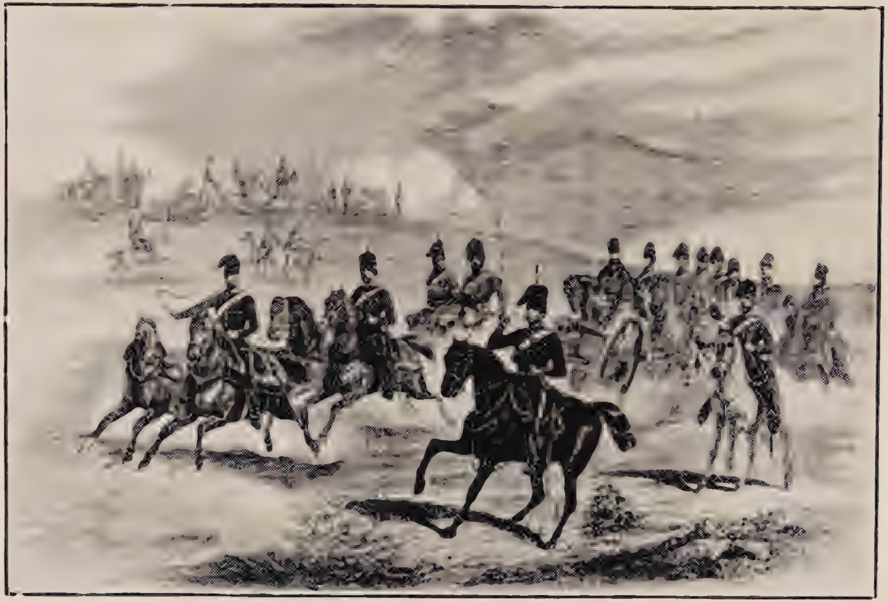
The average age of members at this period must have been somewhat advanced. Only a few years before, the age at which gentlemen might be admitted members was raised from 35 to 40. Captain Bossy resigned after 52 years' service, during 17 of which he had held the office of Adjutant; and when Captain Samuel Barnard retired into the Veteran Company in 1856, he had already served 53 years on the active list, having been admitted in 1803.

At the outbreak of the Indian Mutiny the Court caused recruiting advertisements to be inserted in the papers setting forth the advantages of a practical military training such as would fit recruits for service in the Regular Army or Militia. It was stated that during the Crimean War between thirty and forty members of the regiment had obtained commissions in the Militia and many of them were subsequently transferred to Line Regiments.

The first occasion on which a detachment of the Company left London for training was in August, 1858, when the Light Infantry Company went to Seaford for a week. It is recorded that the duties of guard-mounting, company and light infantry drill, though it was especially heavy work for the latter over the hills, proved the men to be possessed of great endurance, and truly fit for active service anywhere. Great praise, the account adds, is due to the men for their quiet and orderly conduct. From that year onwards camps were an annual fixture for a detachment of the Company, if not for the whole body. The Horse Artillery Troop encamped at Seaford for ball practice in 1863, and it is recorded that they were successful in sending through the target 14 out of 30 shots at 700 yards. The weapons used were 6-pounder smooth-bore guns.

The white fatigue jacket and forage cap came into use in this year.

Two hundred Enfield rifles were supplied by Government in 1859 with the object of encouraging long-range shooting. It therefore became necessary to find a suitable range, and, after some difficulty, arrangements were made for the use of a range at Hornsey Wood.



HORSE ARTILLERY, H.A.C. 1860

Known as "Jay's Troop." Formed in 1860, abolished in 1869

Early in 1860 Lord Colville of Culross was appointed Lieutenant Colonel on the death of Lieut.-Col FitzRoy. A very considerable increase in the membership of the Company took place at this time, so much so that it became necessary to enlarge the Armoury by the addition of the present drill hall. The Battalion Companies were increased from six to eight, and a "spirited attendance at drill" on the part of members is reported. It was also found feasible to raise a troop of Horse Artillery.

The Company was now transferred from the jurisdiction of the Home Office to that of the Secretary for War. It appears that the officials of the War Office, noting that the Regiment was referred to in all its Royal Warrants under the old title of "The Artillery Company," thought fit to omit the time-honoured prefix of "Honourable" from the name of the Company in the Army List. However, the Prince Consort brought the matter to the notice of the Queen, who was graciously pleased to command that, as the Artillery Company of London had always been known under the name of the Honourable Artillery Company, that title should be officially borne by the Regiment.

The officers' privilege of wearing gold sashes, which had been conferred upon the Company by William IV, was now withdrawn. The Captain-General issued an order to this effect, stating that the gold sash was reserved as a distinctive dress for the Brigade of Guards and military members of the Queen's Household. Ten years later H.R.H. Prince Albert Edward authorised the wearing of a crimson and silver sash, similar to those used by the Foot Guards, but substituting silver for gold.

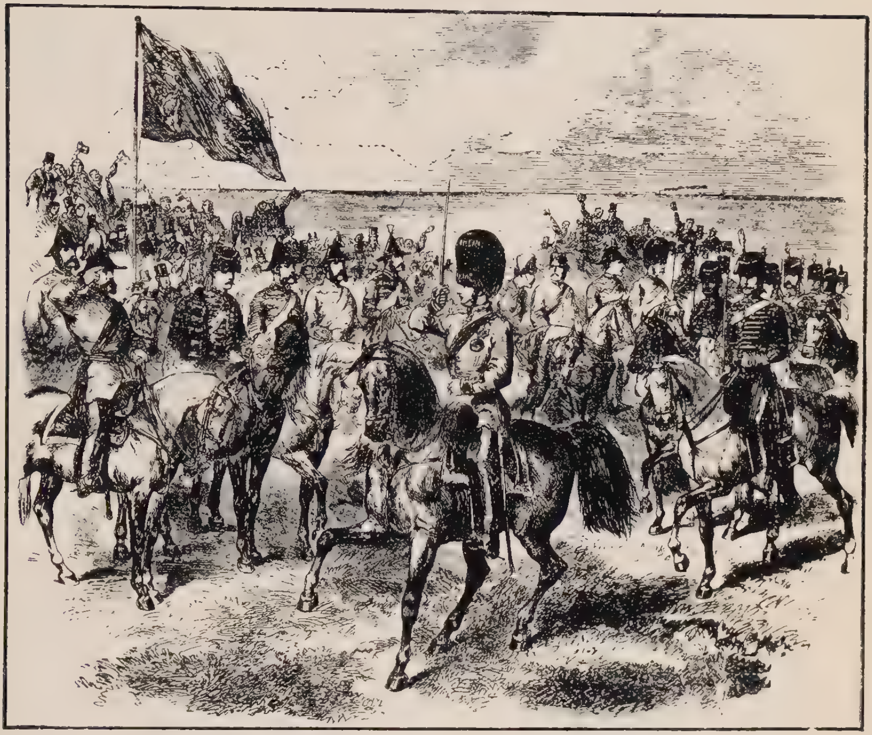
In view of the still increasing strength of the Company, it was decided, in April, 1861, to add a squadron of Light Cavalry to the establishment. At the same time two additional Companies were added to the Battalion, and the distinctive title of the Light Infantry Company was abolished, being no longer in use in the Army. There was a suggestion to raise two Engineer Companies, but the proposal was negatived at a General Court. The Light Cavalry wore a magnificent uniform of blue faced with scarlet and heavily adorned with silver lace. For some years the squadron appeared at Guards of Honour, Reviews and other functions, until in 1891 it was transformed into a Battery of Horse Artillery, taking precedence of the Field Battery as "A" Battery, H.A.C.

The Prince Consort died in December, 1861, and the Company lost a fine commanding officer and a good friend. On the day of his funeral, the Artillery Division fired forty-three guns in the Ground, and a service was held at Headquarters, the new drill hall being used for the first time. The Court subscribed £100 to a memorial, and decided that the drill hall should be known henceforth as the Albert Room.

At the entry into London of Her Royal Highness Princess Alexandra in March, 1861, the Company was allotted a prominent part. The Infantry Battalion formed a Guard of Honour at the end of London Bridge; but the Light Cavalry, with the Horse and Field Artillery were drawn up at the statue in King William Street, the total number on parade being nearly 600.

The Queen now signified her intention to appoint the Prince of Wales Captain-General and Colonel of the Company, this being one of the very few instances in which Her Majesty consented to fill a vacancy caused by the death of the Prince Consort. The Prince was formally proposed for membership and admitted to the Company, his attendance at the Court of Assistants being dispensed with, after which a Royal Warrant was issued confirming his appointment. From the first His Royal Highness took the keenest personal interest in the Regiment. He led the Company past the Commander-in-Chief at the Hyde Park Review of 1864; he was present when the Princess of Wales presented new Colours in the same year; and he commanded the Company at the Brighton Review in the following year. In addition to these military activities, the Prince for many years took a leading part in the social activities of the corps.

In consequence of Fenian outrages in London, night guards were maintained at Headquarters for several months in 1867. The records of this period include a succession of Reviews



REVIEW OF VOLUNTEERS AT BRIGHTON, 1866

The Prince of Wales passing the saluting point at the head of the Hon. Artillery Company

LIBRARY

and Royal Guards of Honour which it would be tedious to enumerate; but the strength of the Company was gradually declining, and in 1869 the number of Companies was reduced from ten to six and the troop of Horse Artillery was disbanded.

Some of the City Volunteer Regiments, not altogether unnaturally, cast envious eyes upon the Company's exercise ground, with the result that a communication was received in 1871 from the Lieutenancy of London asking if the Company would agree to an arrangement under which certain regiments would be permitted to make use of the ground for drill, in such a way as not to interfere with the Company. The Court replied that, having regard to the future welfare and prosperity of the Company, they were of opinion that the ground should be maintained for the uses to which it was dedicated. The Lieutenancy then decided not to proceed further with the matter, but a Member of Parliament gave notice of a motion to introduce into a Bill a clause giving the City Volunteers the rights and privileges enjoyed by the ancient Trained Bands, which would have given them the right to use the Ground. This motion was never brought forward; but in 1873 the Court resolved, of its own initiative, to consider terms upon which the Company might invite the City Volunteers to use the ground for military purposes, providing the leaseholders would give the necessary consent. Their deliberations were cut short by the receipt of a letter, signed by the Commanding Officers of four City Volunteer Regiments, who, claiming to be the successors of the London Trained Bands, demanded an appointment "with a view to arrange for the use of the Ground and Premises at Finsbury, now occupied by the Honourable Artillery Company," by their respective regiments. The Court declined to receive this letter, in consequence of the most offensive and unwarrantable terms in which it was written; the resolution of the previous Court in favour of considering the admission of the City Volunteers was rescinded; and it was decided to defer any further consideration of the subject until the letter referred to was withdrawn. At the same time the Commanding Officers of five City Regiments had petitioned the Court of Aldermen for assistance in obtaining for their regiments the use of the Artillery Ground. However, after some correspondence, the officers concerned apologised, and made a full and complete withdrawal of any legal claim to the use of the Ground.

One more attempt was made on their behalf. The same Member of Parliament brought forward a resolution requesting the Government to take such steps as were necessary to obtain the use of the Artillery Ground for the City Volunteers; but the Government declined to be a party to any invasion of the rights of property, and the motion was withdrawn. The Company had already taken the advice of the Attorney General and another eminent counsel on the question as to whether the City Volunteers had any right whatever to use the Ground. The answer was an unqualified negative.

The Prince of Wales now put forward a suggestion that the uniform of the Company should be changed entirely from red to blue. In this he was backed by the opinion of the Commander-in-Chief. The Court of Assistants considered the question, and replied thanking His Royal Highness for the interest he had ever taken in the Company, but pointing out that the suggested change would involve the members in very considerable expense and would probably cause a number of resignations on that account. At the same time they submitted that the Infantry of the Company felt a sincere attachment for the colour of the uniform they had the honour to wear. Nothing further was heard of the suggestion.

Captain G. A. Raikes, Instructor of Musketry to the H.A.C., published in 1879 "The History of the Honourable Artillery Company," in two volumes, a compendious work which will long remain the standard book of reference on the Company's history. The amount of research involved in this production must have been enormous, and the result is an immense mass of facts relating to the Regiment tabulated in the form of a yearly diary, somewhat difficult of assimilation, but invaluable as raw material for a more discursive narrative.

CHAPTER XII

1880–1926

LIEUT.-COL. R. J. LOYD-LINDSAY, V.C., M.P. (afterwards Lord Wantage) had commanded the Company since 1867. He now retired and was succeeded by the Duke of Portland, then a young Guards officer, who was duly admitted a member of the Company before being gazetted to the command. This formal concession to the ancient right of the Company to choose its officers from among its members has always been observed. In the same year objections were raised to the appointment of Lord Headley to command the Light Cavalry troop on the ground that he had not been a member for six months before promotion. However, the technical breach of Rules and Orders appears to have been passed over in this case.

It was the custom at this period to summon before the Court every member who did not succeed in making himself militarily efficient for the year. Their explanations were heard and they were excused, censured, fined, asked to resign, or expelled, according to the merits of each individual case.

After many protracted debates it was now decided that the qualification for membership of the Veteran Company should be ten years' efficient service in the ranks, or five years' service in commissioned or non-commissioned rank. Some years later this was reduced to eight years' efficient service in any rank, a qualification which still holds good for service in time of peace.

The centenary of Vincent Lunardi's balloon ascent was celebrated on September 15th, 1884, under the auspices of the Balloon Society of Great Britain. Three large balloons ascended from the Artillery Ground in the presence of a large concourse of spectators.

In November the Company presented a lifeboat to Walton-on-the-Naze. This boat, which had been purchased with funds raised by the regimental Dramatic Society, was christened "The Hon. Artillery Company" and launched in the presence of a Guard of Honour of the Regiment. A stone tablet with a suitable inscription was afterwards erected to commemorate the gift. The general finances of the Company were not at this time in a flourishing condition, the Regiment being £4,000 in debt.

The question of the precedence of the Company arose at a Review in 1887, when the Royal Naval Artillery Volunteers (a corps long since extinct) claimed the right of the line by virtue of their connection with the senior service. The point was decided at the time in favour of the Company, but the decision was questioned in Parliament. The answer was to the effect that the Honourable Artillery Company, in consideration of its antiquity, was given precedence immediately after the regular forces and before the Militia and Yeomanry by a general order of 1883. The right of the Royal Navy to take the right of the line over all land forces was not disputed, but, as the Militia and Yeomanry were senior to all Volunteers and the Royal Naval Artillery Volunteers came under the latter category, it followed that the H.A.C. took precedence over that body.

As representatives of the only military unit which has survived since the days of Queen Elizabeth, a detachment of the Company was present at the Tercentenary Commemoration of the defeat of the Spanish Armada, which took place at Plymouth in 1888. Two years later the Armada Memorial on Plymouth Hoe was unveiled. The heraldic emblems on this monument include a shield bearing the arms of the Company, in recognition of the fact that the predecessors of the Regiment served at Tilbury Camp in 1588. Detachments of all arms of the Company attended the opening ceremony.

In the following year a remarkable and unprecedented position in the affairs of the Company arose with little warning, and rapidly developed into a situation of extreme anxiety. For some years past the state of affairs at Armoury House had not been entirely satisfactory. In the first place it had been discovered that the one sure road to promotion to non-commissioned rank was by way of a suitable gratuity to the Regimental Sergeant Major, who, with his subordinate Drill Sergeants, was paid by the Company. The same official was also found to be making a profit on the sale of equipment, uniforms, etc., and both matters were dealt with. The salary of the Adjutant (Colonel Borton, a retired Army officer) was also paid from the civil funds of the Regiment, voted by the Court of Assistants and subject to revision by the general body of members. The defects of this arrangement are obvious, as an officer largely responsible for the discipline of the unit was thus virtually in the pay of the privates. This might have led to no evil results but for the fact that the Duke of Portland took little interest in the regiment, leaving the command almost entirely to his Adjutant, to the exclusion of the Field Officers. Colonel Borton appears to have been somewhat inactive and decidedly unpopular. Rightly or wrongly, he was alleged to have shown favouritism in the selection of officers, choice of whom was left practically entirely in his hands. With matters in this unsatisfactory condition a proposition was made at a General Court to reduce his salary. The motion appears to have been the outcome of a private feud, and it was defeated; but the incident undoubtedly and not unnaturally rankled in the mind of the Adjutant, and was not calculated to improve an already strained relationship. His opponents argued with some point that they had recently raised Col. Borton's salary, without reference to any higher authority, and therefore had a right to reduce it; but the incident doubtless formed one of the charges to be preferred against the discipline of the Company.

At this time the Prince of Wales was endeavouring to induce the Company to place itself under the provisions of the Volunteer Act, and at a Special General Court held in November, 1888, this was unanimously agreed to, the members accepting His Royal Highness's assurance that he would do all in his power to ensure the retention by the Company of its old precedence and the control of its property. It was also agreed that an annual fixed sum should be placed at the disposal of the Commanding Officer for military purposes.

Then came the crisis. At a General Court held on December 6th, 1888, a vote of £500 to the Commanding Officer for military expenses, which apparently included the Adjutant's salary, was not passed, but an amendment "that, as the vote of a fixed sum to be paid to the Commanding Officer to cover military expenses forms part of the new and incompleted arrangements suggested by H.R.H. the Captain-General and Colonel, the consideration of this Resolution do stand over until the proposed alterations in the constitution of the Company have been submitted to the members," was carried by thirteen votes.

To the impartial observer this resolution may appear vexatious, but it does not strike one as amounting to rank insubordination or mutiny. However, the Duke of Portland, who was not present at the meeting but presumably acted on the advice of the Adjutant and without further enquiry, promptly reported to the Captain-General that the Company was "in a most unsatisfactory state as regards discipline." Representations were then made to the Secretary of State for War, and an order was issued for the withdrawal of the Company's arms. At the same time the resignations of the Prince of Wales, the Duke of Portland, and Colonel Borton were officially announced. To say that the members of the Company were staggered by the sudden and drastic nature of the blow that had fallen upon them would not understate the case. For a certain hesitation in passing a vote for £500 out of the Company's private funds, they had been punished with a severity, not to say ignominy, which would have been adequate for a mutinous and thoroughly disloyal regiment. It was felt that the sentence was not only unnecessarily harsh, but actually unjust, and immediate steps were taken to put this view before the proper authorities. In the meantime the guns had been delivered to Woolwich and the rifles and ammunition removed, so the Company continued to drill without arms.

The situation caused extraordinary interest throughout the country. The Press took sides—the majority supporting the Company—and the matter was discussed with considerable fervour, in some cases amounting to virulence. Caricatures, some of them not particularly respectful to eminent personages, appeared in many periodicals; correspondence columns flourished amazingly on the subject; even the Continental Press had its comments to make. Some individuals with private axes to grind hailed the supposed break-up of the old Company with delight, and many were the suggestions put forward as to the disposal of the Company's property.

It transpired that the Prince had been informed that the mention of his name had been received with jeers at that eventful General Court. This incident was alleged to have occurred during a heated discussion on a motion to repudiate the suggestion of a spirit of insubordination in the Regiment, a charge which had been made by an officer of the Company in an abridged version of Raikes' History recently published by him. The Court of Assistants took prompt steps indignantly to deny this abominable slander, and to assure their Captain-General of their unswerving loyalty. It is beyond doubt that there had been either misunderstanding or deliberate misrepresentation on this point. There had obviously been moments of excitement during the debate, and some members had given vent to their disapproval of certain statements; but that any mention of His Royal Highness's name was the cause of such expressions of feeling was simply not in accordance with fact. The discipline of the Regiment may have been, nay, undoubtedly was, of a type peculiar to itself; but of the complete loyalty and devotion of its members to the Throne and to their Captain-General there was never the faintest shadow of doubt. The indignation of the members at this assertion knew no bounds, but the mischief had been done, for it was probably on this statement, rather than on the withholding of the supplies, that the charge of insubordination and indiscipline had been based. It is a matter for the greatest regret that the Commanding Officer failed to handle the matter with greater tact. Had he instituted a court of enquiry before reporting to the Captain-General, the whole unfortunate occurrence of the resignations and disarming would never have taken place. Even as things happened, it is impossible for the unbiassed historian to fail to compare the hasty procedure on this occasion with the tact and judgment displayed by the Prince Consort in very similar circumstances forty years before.

Meanwhile deputations waited on the Secretary for War; questions were asked in Parliament; a petition was presented to the Queen; and every possible step was taken to ensure the continuance of the Company, which once again seemed to be threatened with annihilation as a military unit. Finally the whole matter was brought to a close by the issue of a new Royal Warrant, dated 12th March, 1889, which cancelled the previous warrant of 1863. Under the new Warrant the appointment, not only of officers but of Sergeant Instructors, was reserved to the Crown; the Regimental Sergeant Major was to be selected by the Captain-General; and all non-commissioned officers, except the Sergeant Instructors, were to be chosen by the Commanding Officer from the members of the Company. The numbers of the Company were limited to two thousand, and authority was given for the discharge of any member for neglect of duty or misconduct. Furthermore, it was laid down that the Company might be called out for service in Great Britain by Royal Proclamation; and the Secretary of State for War was given authority to issue such further regulations as might be necessary for the better government, discipline and efficiency of the Company as a military body. At the same time the civil rights of the Company were adequately safeguarded.

Viscount de Vesci, a former officer of the Coldstream Guards, was then appointed Lieutenant Colonel and Captain Labalmondière, of the Royal Artillery, was gazetted Adjutant. Shortly afterwards a new Regimental Sergeant Major and three permanent Drill Instructors were appointed, all of whom were paid by Government. In the following year the Secretary for

War, by virtue of his powers under the new Warrant, ordered the Light Cavalry Troop to be converted into a Battery of Horse Artillery.

Although the Company had accepted the new Royal Warrant without demur, the Prince of Wales did not immediately withdraw his resignation. For several years the Regiment was without a Captain-General, until, early in 1893, a petition was drawn up and signed by the Civil Chiefs, the Court of Assistants and all the Officers of the active list, assuring the Prince of their continued loyalty and requesting him to accept the ancient and distinguished post of Captain-General and Colonel. His Royal Highness was graciously pleased to accede to this request, and on June 10th, 1893, the Prince of Wales was again appointed to the chief command of the Company. Lord de Vesci, on taking command, at once began the task of reorganising the Regiment as a useful military body, which it certainly was not in those days. The Field Battery had never done any gun practice and the newly formed Horse Artillery for several years could only turn out two guns. The infantry could do drill of a kind and there were some individuals good at musketry, but that was all.

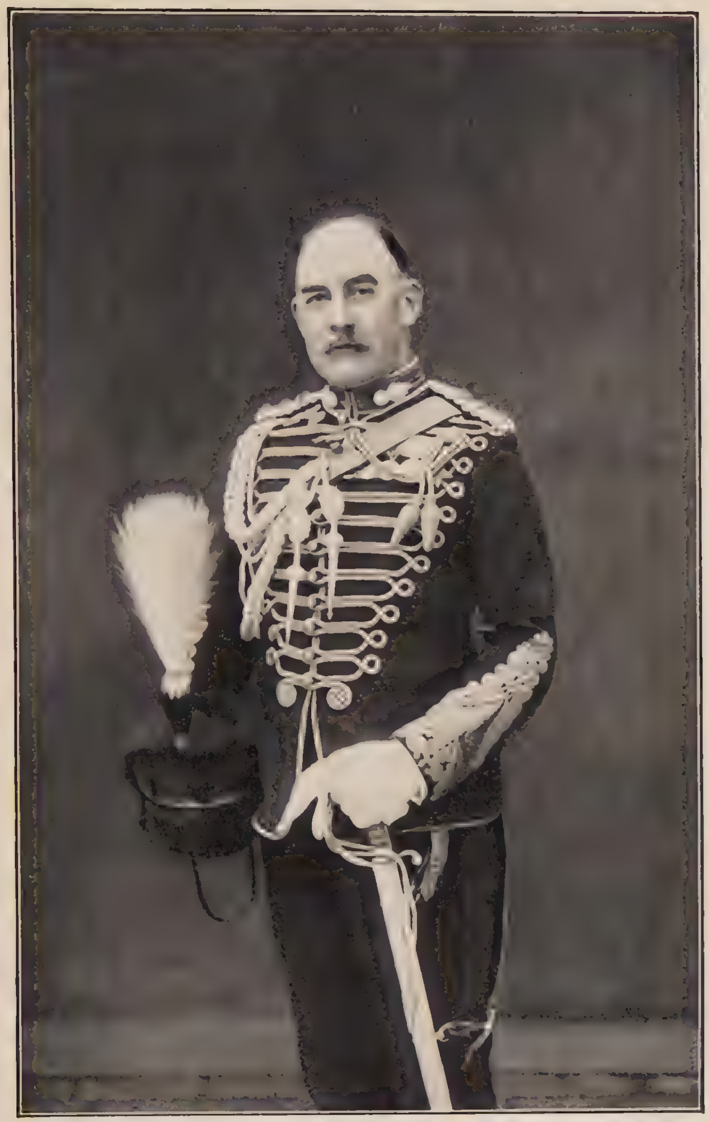
Lord de Vesci, with his home in Ireland, found it impossible to give sufficient time, and in 1893 the Earl of Denbigh and Desmond, who had five years previously retired as a Captain from the R.H.A. and R.F.A., in which he had served ten years and seen service in the Egyptian Tel el Kebir Campaign of 1882, was offered the command and, having been admitted as a member, was gazetted as Lieutenant-Colonel commanding. He at once took an active part in trying to make the Regiment militarily efficient and very soon represented strongly to the War Office the utter futility of trying to improve the artillery with its ridiculous and obsolete armament of 9-pounder muzzle-loading guns. It was not till 1898 that it was possible to obtain 15-pounder B.L. guns, with which the Regular Army had been re-armed.

The old question of the precedence of the Company cropped up again in 1892. At a field day at Chatham the Officer Commanding the H.A.C. Field Battery found his claim to lead the way in the march past contested by the officers of two troops of Yeomanry on the ground that theirs was a senior service to the Volunteers and that cavalry always took precedence of field batteries. It was pointed out that by ancient custom, confirmed by Royal Charter, the Honourable Artillery Company took precedence after the regular army and before all militia, yeomanry or volunteers. The General Officer Commanding recognised the Company's claim, and the Field Battery took the place of honour at the head of the column.

During this period, up to the outbreak of the Boer war, the corps was rapidly improving in military efficiency and military spirit. Officers were very carefully selected and no commission was given to anybody who had not made himself thoroughly competent as a N.C.O. Captain (now Brigadier-General) J. C. Wray, R.H.A., succeeded Captain Labalmondière as Adjutant in 1894 and has created a great name for himself in the Regiment by the work he carried out. He was succeeded in 1899 by Captain C. Budworth, who was destined in the Great War to rise to high rank as a most brilliant artillery officer and whose death in India in 1921 was lamented by the whole army.

Major G. McMicking, late R.H.A., had joined as Commander of the Horse Artillery Battery in 1895, and very soon greatly improved it. In 1899 the Field Battery was made into Horse Artillery, and the two Batteries then became known as "A" and "B." The Regiment was still sadly under strength at the outbreak of war in South Africa.

Little more of interest falls to be recorded concerning the Company's activities in the early nineties. The Regiment held its annual camps, sometimes as a complete unit; at other times the Horse and Field Batteries proceeded to separate training grounds. Reviews were frequent; Guards of Honour were provided as occasion required; and the Company was invariably well to the fore in shooting competitions. The ceremony of trooping the colour was held every year at Head-



COLONEL-COMMANDANT THE EARL OF DENBIGH AND DESMOND, C.V.O., A.D.C., T.D.

In the uniform of the Artillery Division of the Company, 1914.

[illegible] PUBLIC LIBRARY

quarters, and was usually attended by a member of the Royal Family.

The outbreak of the South African War in October, 1899, had no immediate effect on recruiting as far as the Company was concerned. Only fifteen new members joined during that month, twenty-three in the following month, and fifteen in December. The rush came in January, after Volunteers had been called for to take their places in the fighting line. In that month one hundred and eighty-two members were admitted, and for some time afterwards an average of sixty to seventy recruits a month was maintained. The apparent slackness in the early days was probably due to the misplaced optimism which looked upon the war as a sort of punitive expedition, a state of mind encouraged by the first reports of minor successes.

Then followed those dark days in December, 1899, when the country learned with amazement and dismay of three successive defeats suffered by the three principal British Armies,—Stormberg, Magersfontein and Colenso. All notions of an easy, triumphal march to Pretoria vanished; the Press-begotten ideas of an ignoble, cowardly enemy gave place to a realisation that our armies had to face a stubborn foe,—a nation in arms, consisting of well-mounted marksmen, provided with up-to-date munitions of war and operating in a vast country admirably adapted for defensive tactics. Foolish optimism vanished, and the country settled down to its task.

It was at once clearly realised that our regular forces were not sufficiently numerous for the successful prosecution of the war, and there was a call for volunteers, both at home and in the Colonies. The Honourable Artillery Company had already offered to provide a battery of artillery and a company of infantry, but the former was declined on the ground that there was a sufficiency of regular artillery. As regards the infantry, it was proposed that the Company should send their quota of forty men towards the Infantry and Mounted Infantry of the City Imperial Volunteers, the formation of which had just been announced. Within a day or two the required number was selected from the numerous volunteers, and two officers, one surgeon, and forty-one other ranks of the Company were sworn in as C.I.V.

Only a few days later Lord Denbigh read that a battery offered by the Elswick works had been accepted and at once went to the War Office and inquired if the previous decision had been altered. He saw Lord Wolseley, who laughingly remarked, " We progress here," and said they would accept a four-gun field battery from the H.A.C. Lord Lansdowne, who was Secretary of State for War, next day sent for Lord Denbigh and handed him a cheque for £17,000, and told him to go ahead and buy what was necessary. Committees were forthwith formed for purchase of horses, harness, transport and equipment, and War Office consent was obtained for acceptance of an offer by the City to provide a four-gun complete equipment of four q.f. 12-pounder guns, which Messrs. Vickers had just made. These were taken and were the first quick-firers with " fixed ammunition " used by a British force in the field. Major McMicking went in command of this battery, with Captain Budworth, the Adjutant, as his Captain. Following this welcome decision came a proposal to incorporate the Battery in the C.I.V. The offer was accepted, and the Battery, though the Company remained responsible for its personnel and equipment, became technically a branch of the C.I.V., enjoying the privileges of that corps and sharing in the funds subscribed for it. The Artillery Division of the Company at that time numbered 180 men, a majority of whom, with a considerable number from the Battalion, at once volunteered for service. Eighty-four of these were selected. From this number all the combatant officers, sergeants and corporals of the new Battery were chosen, while the remaining personnel were recruited by selection from various corps of Volunteer Artillery, with a sprinkling of old regular soldiers.

The final contribution of the Company to the City Imperial Volunteers, including drafts, was 154 men. Of these 26 served in the Infantry Battalion, 30 in the Mounted Infantry, and 98 in the Field Battery. The latter may be regarded henceforth as an H.A.C. unit, having been created and organised by the Company, which also supplied all the officers and two-thirds of the personnel. It may here be noted that the cost of equipping the Battery was borne partly by Government, partly by the Lord Mayor's C.I.V. Fund—to which the Company had officially subscribed £1,000, and members of the Company, by private subscription, another £1,500—while certain articles of equipment were provided by the generosity of individual members of the Regiment.

After only three weeks' preliminary training, the Battery sailed for South Africa, landing at Cape Town on February 28th, 1900. After serving a spell on the lines of communication, it was sent to the front, and fired its first shots in the operations for the relief of Lindley, after which it formed part of a force which followed up De Wet and compelled him to evacuate the town of Bethlehem. Several small but spirited actions were fought during this advance and in the subsequent operations against Prinsloo, which resulted in the surrender of that General, with 4,000 Boers, at Fouriesburg. The Regiment still treasures a Boer Flag, presented to the Battery by General Paget in recognition of its services at the taking of Bethlehem. The remainder of the Battery's service was spent in guerilla warfare in the Northern Transvaal.

The C.I.V. Mounted Infantry, of which the Company provided No. 1 Section of No. 1 Company, landed on January 29th, 1900, at Cape Town, where they were equipped, and were sent to the front in time to take part in the general advance under Lord Roberts. The H.A.C. detachment received their baptism of fire at Jacobsdal and were present at the surrender of Cronje's force at Paardeburg. They had a share in numerous small actions during the advance on Bloemfontein and were among the first troops to enter Johannesburg. After the capture of Pretoria, the C.I.V.M.I. took part in the great concerted movement which led to Prinsloo's surrender.

The Infantry Battalion of the C.I.V. landed in South Africa in February, 1900. After service on the lines of communication, they joined in the advance to Pretoria and behaved with gallantry in the spirited action of Doornkop. Hard and continuous marching was the lot of the infantry soldier in South Africa, and that the C.I.V. did their share is evidenced by the fact that at one period they covered no less than 523 miles in 40 marching days. In addition to desultory fighting, convoys and garrison duty, the Battalion served with distinction at the considerable battle of Diamond Hill.

The return of the C.I.V. to London ranks as a landmark in the history of the metropolis. The enthusiasm was unprecedented, the returning troops being acclaimed, fêted and honoured in a way that is probably unique in military annals. There was some excuse for this ebullition of feeling. After forty years of discouragement and derision Volunteer soldiers had proved themselves willing to undertake active service and worthy of taking their places in the fighting forces of the country. They came of a generation unaccustomed to war, to whom every soldier was a hero in time of war; they had volunteered for active service, and they had undoubtedly acquitted themselves with credit. Again—and this was possibly the most potent factor—they had a very good "Press." Hence the immense crowds, the fervid acclamations, and the almost fulsome leading articles, which, to the present war-hardened generation, seem almost out of proportion to their services, and were certainly somewhat galling to the regular soldier, who had borne the brunt of the war and was to receive no such reception on his long-delayed return home.

The feelings of the men themselves can best be conveyed by a quotation of the closing passage of a book—"In the Ranks of the C.I.V."—written by that ill-fated member of the Company, Erskine Childers:—

"The interminable day of waiting; the landing on the quay, with its cheering crowds; that wonderful journey to London, with its growing tumult of feelings, as station after station, with their ribboned and shouting throngs, flashed by; the meeting at Paddington with our comrades of the Honourable Artillery Company, bringing us their guns and horses; the mounting of a glossy, smartly-equipped steed, which made me laughingly recall my shaggy old pair, with their dusty, travel-worn harness; all this I see clearly enough. The rest seems a dream; a dream of miles of upturned faces, of dancing colours, of roaring voices, of a sudden dim hush in the great Cathedral, of more miles of faces under gaslight, of a voice in a packed hall saying 'London is proud of her——,' of disconnected confidences with policemen, work-people, street-arabs, and finally of the entry once more through the old grey gateway of the Armoury House. I expect the feelings of all of us were much the same; some honest pride in having helped to earn such a welcome; a sort of stunned bewilderment at its touching and passionate intensity; a deep wave of affection for our countrymen; and a thought in the background all the time of a dusty khaki figure still plodding the distant veldt—our friend and comrade, Atkins, who has done more and bloodier work then we, and who is not at the end of it yet."

In addition to those who served with the C.I.V., some sixty members saw active service with other units. Fully a third of these had originally been members of the C.I.V. and, on the return home of that unit, had transferred to other corps. Others joined up individually or in small groups, mostly in the Imperial Yeomanry, and served till the end of the war, many of them ultimately receiving commissions. During the war 33 members of the Company held commissions on active service, of whom 8 were promoted from the ranks for service in the field. About the same number were given regular commissions.

In all 193 members served in South Africa, of whom 4 were killed or died of wounds, 2 died of disease and 30 were wounded or invalided home. The honours and distinctions awarded to members included 1 C.M.G., 1 D.S.O., 3 D.C.M.'s, and 18 mentions in despatches.

For their part in the South African War the Company received the Battle Honours, "South Africa, 1900–02."

This employment of the H.A.C. on service gave a great fillip to the Corps. As one result the Batteries were soon provided with their own artificers in the shape of farriers, shoeing smiths, saddlers and wheelers, and ever since members have been keen to attend the necessary courses for obtaining the required knowledge and practice. Prior to the South African war it had been the custom to borrow artificers from the regulars when going to camp, but it was soon made apparent to the Corps by the Commanding Officer that no mounted units can take the field unless provided with efficient artificers. This was a great advance in military efficiency, which from now onwards steadily progressed at each successive annual camp, commanded always in person by Lord Denbigh, who, at the outbreak of the Great War, after commanding twenty-one consecutive trainings, was able to show that a fine military force, thoroughly efficient and animated with a splendid esprit de corps, had been gradually evolved as the result of persistent work and the splendid support given by all ranks of officers and men.

On the approach of the Coronation of their Captain-General in 1902 the Company claimed their ancient privilege of attending the ceremony in full strength and of being posted next to the Guards. This right was conceded though subsequent events necessitated a reduction of the numbers to 200. The Battalion was posted between Parliament Street and the entrance to the House of Commons, the Batteries being drawn up on the Horse Guards Parade.

For some two hundred years no communications appear to have been established between the Company and its offshoot, the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts. Very probably each had forgotten the existence of the other. It was not until 1857 that a correspondence was opened between the two corps which developed into a regular interchange of courtesies. Copies of historical records were exchanged, and the Prince Consort, Captain-General and Colonel of the H.A.C., was elected an honorary member of the A. & H.A.C., the same compliment being extended to the Prince of Wales on his succession to the command of this Company. Then occasional visits of individual members on both sides began to pave the way to more extensive fraternisations, until, in 1887, a party of eleven members of the Boston Company assisted to celebrate the 350th anniversary of the incorporation of the parent body. In the following year a detachment of twenty-one members of the London Company returned the visit, and were present at the celebration of the 250th anniversary of the American corps.

These preliminary visits were productive of such mutual goodwill that the A. & H.A.C. decided to visit England in a body, whereupon the Company seized the opportunity to arrange a suitable reception for the first American military organisation that had ever set foot in the Old Country. The visit took place in 1896 and was most happily timed. The Venezuelan crisis had been acute in the previous year; feeling between the two countries—or rather between the Politicians and Press of the two countries—was somewhat strained; and the visit accordingly assumed an international significance of some importance. The Ancients, as they were called, wished to land as an armed force in uniform and march through the streets with their swords drawn. This request had to be forwarded through the British Ambassador at Washington and it came before the Cabinet. Having regard to the friction of the year before, the Prime Minister (Lord Salisbury), thought that the arrival of the American force would be a good opportunity for a display of official friendship and welcome, and he informed Lord Denbigh that the Government would make the visit an official function and take over most of the entertaining of the visitors. The A. & H.A.C. arrived, 170 strong, and were warmly welcomed and suitably entertained by the Regiment. This was only as it should be, but a far more extended programme had been arranged. The American unit was reviewed by Queen Victoria at Windsor and by the Prince and Princess of Wales at Marlborough House; a sham fight and review of British troops at Aldershot was specially arranged for their benefit; and they were entertained at the Royal Artillery Mess at Woolwich. But quite apart from these official courtesies, the reception accorded to the Americans by the public at large and the publicity it evoked in the Press of both countries could hardly have failed to exercise a most beneficial effect on the sorely frayed international relationship.

So impressed were our Boston friends by the warmth of their reception that they lost little time in issuing an invitation to our whole regiment to visit Boston in 1900. This invitation was accepted, but the South African War intervened, rendering postponement unavoidable. Finally, on September 23rd, 1903, a detachment of the Company, 163 strong, under Colonel The Earl of Denbigh, left Liverpool on a liner re-christened the "Mayflower" for Boston, where they were accorded a wonderful reception and were the recipients of almost overwhelming hospitality. Our members were escorted through five miles of the decorated streets of Boston by an imposing military force amid scenes of popular enthusiasm; they were feasted and fêted; receptions, church parades, banquets followed each other in rapid succession; and whenever the Company moved abroad its line of march was one triumphal progress. They then visited Providence (Rhode Island), where they were most hospitably entertained to a form of banquet called a "Clam-bake" by the First Light Infantry Regiment of Providence.

Special trains and steamboats had been chartered by their energetic hosts, and the Company, attended by an equal number of their comrades of Boston, were taken on a week's tour of 1,850 miles, during which they visited, among other places, New York, West Point, Niagara Falls, Toronto and Montreal. The visit to the Military College at West Point was most interesting. On landing, the H.A.C. marched past the cadets drawn up in front of the College and proceeded to the parade ground, where the Cadets then formed up and invited Lord Denbigh to inspect them and take the salute as they marched past. They afterwards gave a wonderful exhibition of their marvellous perfection and precision of drill. At New York the Company were escorted to their hotel by the Old Guard of New York and representatives of other military bodies, including The Governor's Foot Guard of New Haven (Conn.), The Newport (Rhode Island) Artillery Company, The First Regiment Minute Men of Washington (D.C.), The Bristol (Rhode Island) Train of Artillery, The State Fencibles of Philadelphia, The Amoskeag Veterans of Manchester (N.H.), The Governor's Foot Guard of Hartford (Conn.), The Richmond Blues, from Virginia, and the Cleveland Grays, from Ohio. That night the Companies feasted royally as the guests of the Old Guard, a corps whose hospitality is a byword in the States.

The next landmark in the tour was a visit to Washington, where the detachment was received and entertained at the White House by President Roosevelt, who also affixed his signature to the list of famous names in the Vellum Book. Returning by a different route to Boston, the Company was accorded still another magnificent reception. There were more banquets. The Company entertained their hosts and the British residents of Boston entertained the Company. Then came the leave-taking. The members of the Company said farewell to their kind hosts, and, to the accompaniment of cheers and counter-cheers, embarked for the return journey. The docks and shipping were black with people; the Union Jack waved beside the Stars and Stripes from the Bunker Hill Monument; bands played; factory whistles and ships' syrens sounded a farewell; and the tens of thousands of spectators took up the cadence of the "regimental fire,"—that ninefold shout peculiar to the Company and of which the origin has been forgotten.

And so ended a most remarkable experience for all who were privileged to take part in it. The American Visit may justly be claimed to have been an event of historical importance; it certainly provided a fair example of what may be done by such intercourse towards the promotion of good fellowship and understanding between communities so closely allied by blood and traditions as are the two great branches of the English-speaking race.

Lord Colville of Culross, a member of the Company since 1859, who had served in succession as Lieutenant-Colonel, Vice-President and President, died in 1903. Shortly after his death the King issued a Royal Warrant expressing his will and pleasure that in future the office of President should be combined with that of Commanding Officer. Lord Denbigh thereupon assumed the dual office, which he still holds.

It is not generally known outside the Regiment that King Edward bestowed on the Company the distinction of a special ribbon to the Volunteer Decoration and Volunteer Long Service Medal, which extends to the same medals under their Territorial designations. This ribbon, consisting of red and blue, edged with a narrow yellow stripe—King Edward's private colours—has been a cause of mystification to many regular officers who have noticed it displayed on the breasts of members of the Regiment.

By the passing of the Territorial and Reserve Forces Act, 1907, the old Volunteers were reorganised as Territorials and the H.A.C., who had occupied an independent position in the Volunteer Force, were now invited to join the new Territorial Force. A general meeting of the Company was convened and it was unanimously decided to join the Territorial Force if the Government would pass a special Act of Parliament excluding the property of the regiment from the provisions of the Territorial Act and confirming the civil rights of the Company. A special Bill for safeguarding the property and ancient civil rights and privileges of the Company was therefore passed in the following year under the title of "The Honourable Artillery Company Act, 1908." Shortly after this Bill received the Royal Assent, a notice appeared in the Gazette to the effect that His Majesty the King would continue to remain at the head of the Honourable Artillery Company of the Territorial Force, as its Captain-General, on its transfer thereto and conversion from the Honourable Artillery Company of London.

The immediate result of the transfer of the Company to the Territorial Force was a considerable influx of recruits, 553 new members being admitted in the following year, whereas the yearly average of admissions had been about 70. The strength

KING GEORGE V. WITH THE ANCIENT AND HONORABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY OF MASSACHUSETTS, AT BUCKINGHAM PALACE, 1912

[illegible] PUBLIC LIBRARY

f the active list in 1909 was 1,066 all ranks, 97·6 per cent. of vhom were returned as efficient for the year.

King Edward died in May, 1910. Throughout the thirty-even years of his connection with the Regiment his interest had ever failed. Before his accession to the Throne he had been frequent visitor to Armoury House, attending parades, balls nd smoking concerts with equal impartiality. In later years e had on several occasions held personal inspections of the ompany, the last review of this kind having taken place in uckingham Palace Gardens the year before his death. The ompany, who were in camp at Bulford, journeyed back to own for the funeral of their Captain-General. Three officers nd fifty other ranks of the Battalion formed part of the escort, hile the remaining 650 lined the side of the Mall. Later in the ear His Majesty King George V. signified his willingness to ssume the title of Captain-General and Colonel, and was formally dmitted a member of the Company for that purpose.

When the preparations for the Coronation of Their Majesties ame under consideration, representations were made for the ompany to be allotted its traditional position next to the rigade of Guards, but it was decided that the Corps did not njoy the prescriptive right to a position other than that con-erred by precedence in the Army List. The Regiment was hus deprived of its time-honoured position in Parliament treet and placed between Whitehall and the Admiralty Arch n the day of the actual Coronation. On the following day, eing the occasion of Their Majesties' procession through ondon, the Infantry were placed between two Battalions of uards in Trafalgar Square.

A detachment of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery ompany of Massachusetts visited London in 1912 at the vitation of the Company. The celebrations in their honour cluded a Trooping of the Colour at Armoury House and a sit to Windsor, where a memorial tablet was placed on the d house of Robert Keayne, the founder of the American branch. inally, both Regiments were inspected by His Majesty King

George V. at Buckingham Palace. The Ancients were commanded on this occasion by the late Colonel Sidney M. Hedges, who had done more, perhaps, than any other man to bring about these fraternisations between the two ancient Companies.

In August, 1914, came the great test, and the Honourable Artillery Company rose to the occasion. The Batteries and Battalion were mobilised at once; old members flocked to rejoin the active list; and Armoury House was besieged by thousands of young men eager to join so famous a corps. How many hundreds were turned away after the existing units had been brought up to strength will never be known, but after some delay permission was obtained to recruit two second-line Batteries and a second Battalion. As the war went on, so the Company continued to expand, until eventually it comprised four Horse Artillery Batteries, a Siege Battery and two Battalions overseas in the fighting line, with two Reserve Batteries, a Reserve Battalion and a Depôt at home. In all, some 14,000 men passed through its ranks; every one of whom was admitted through the Court of Assistants in the time-honoured manner.

The story of the Company's part in the Great War is told elsewhere and cannot be more than touched upon in these pages.

The original Battalion, commanded by Colonel E. Treffry, who had been many years a member and had seen service in South Africa, after a farewell inspection by His Majesty the King at Armoury House, sailed for France on September 18th, 1914, and served with the 3rd Division in the trenches of Flanders throughout the first winter. In a minor attack in the Hooge sector on June 16th, 1915, it added greatly to an already established reputation and sustained over 200 casualties. After further good work in the dreaded Salient, the Battalion was sent back for rest and training to G.H.Q., where it provided guards, trained its reinforcements and sent scores of its members to other units for commissions. In 1916 the Battalion was attached to the 63rd Royal Naval Division, and distinguished itself by capturing the village of

Beaucourt during the Beaumont Hamel fighting. The spring of 1917 saw the Battalion in action north of Arras, where two of its members, Lieuts. R. L. Haine and A. O. Pollard, won the Victoria Cross for conspicuous gallantry during the attack on Gavrelle, in which the Company encountered and defeated the Prussian Guard. From April until July the Battalion continued in the line, and was then withdrawn to G.H.Q., where they underwent a spell of intensive training. As a result of this, the Company was selected to furnish specially trained platoons which were used, both in England and France, to demonstrate to the British and American Armies the latest developments in the use of the platoon as a complete fighting unit. During this period the Battalion was organised as an Officers' Training Corps, several hundreds of its members being passed through special courses prior to receiving commissions in other units. In September 1918 the Battalion was attached to the 4th Guards Brigade and formed part of a special mobile column provided with motor lorries and detailed to act under the direct orders of the Cavalry Corps, the intention being that this formation should be thrust into any gap made by the cavalry in the enemy's line. After following on the heels of the retreating Germans as far as Le Cateau, the Brigade was withdrawn into reserve. Later the Battalion was sent to Cologne as part of the Army of Occupation.

The two Horse Artillery Batteries, with the Notts and Berks R.H.A., formed the Artillery force of the 2nd Mounted Division under the command of Lord Denbigh as C.R.A. After some months of training in England, where for four months the Division took over thirty miles of the Norfolk coast-line defence, it sailed for Egypt, where some of the Yeomanry and all the Batteries formed part of the force defending the Suez Canal. In July, 1915, " B " Battery was sent to Aden to assist in repelling a Turkish advance; there they experienced some desert fighting and marching, and much discomfort and disease. " A " Battery in December formed part of the Western Frontier Force which checked the Senussi raids on the exposed flank of Egyptian territory. Owing to its brigades being widely dispersed, the 2nd Mounted Division was abolished as a Divisional organisation in January, 1916. Lord Denbigh's Command consequently ceased, and he later returned to England and was employed till the end of the war training 2nd-line Batteries for France and on lecturing duties. Eventually both Batteries marched with the Palestine Expeditionary Force across the Sinai Desert and took part in the unsuccessful first attack on Gaza. Throughout 1917 and 1918 they were in constant touch with the enemy on the Palestine front, where, in addition to frequent desert raids and reconnaissances, they were in action at the second Battle of Gaza, the fighting at El Mughar, the capture of Jerusalem, and the battles of the Jordan, Megiddo and Sharon. Finally both units took part in that final magnificent dash of the cavalry divisions which swept the whole length of Palestine and only ended with the capture of Damascus and the complete rout of the Turkish armies.

The 2nd Battalion was formed in 1914 of raw recruits with a stiffening of experienced officers, non-commissioned officers and men. During part of its period of training in England the Battalion formed the garrison of the Tower of London, so that, after a lapse of over a century, the Company again provided the Guard for the Bank of England. From the first this Battalion was subjected to a repeated drain on its personnel. Drafts of officers and men left at frequent intervals to fill the depleted ranks of the 1st Battalion; while there was also a constant stream of members leaving to take commissions in other units. On the other hand, their ranks were recruited by sick and wounded officers and other ranks from overseas.

The Battalion landed in France in October, 1916, and was attached to the famous 7th Division, with which it served to the end of the War. After a probationary period of trench warfare at Ploegsteerte, the Battalion accompanied the Division to the Somme Battlefield and saw heavy fighting under the worst possible conditions at Beaumont Hamel. After further service in winter warfare on the Somme front, the 2nd H.A.C. followed up the German strategic retreat of January, 1917, and suffered very heavily in action at Bullecourt. The autumn of that year saw them again in action on the Passchendaele Ridge, where the Battalion captured the village of Reutel. Every officer who took part in this attack was either killed or wounded, but the objectives were carried and held. In November the Battalion moved with the Division to Italy and experienced a taste of mountain warfare. In the final attack which broke the enemy front and brought about the complete defeat of Austria, the 2nd H.A.C. took a leading part. Crossing the swiftly flowing River Piave in small boats, the Battalion captured the Island of Papodopoli, the key of the position, and so secured the crossing of the river for the British and Italian armies, thereby leading to the final defeat of Austria.

The H.A.C. Siege Battery was formed in November, 1916, when the need for heavy artillery on the Western Front had been fully realised. It went to France in April, 1917, in time to take part in the battle of Messines and the bitter fighting of the third battle of Ypres. Here the Battery was continuously in action up to the time of the capture of Passchendaele. The spring of 1918 found the Siege Gunners in the Somme area, where they became involved in the retreat of the Fifth Army. In the fighting of the ensuing summer the Battery added to the Company's list of Battle Honours the names of "Somme, 1918"; "Amiens,"; "Albert, 1918," "Bapaume, 1918," "Épéhy," "Cambrai, 1918," and "Selle." During its comparatively short experience of active service the Siege Battery was almost continuously in action, and lost 32 killed and 70 wounded out of a total personnel of 140.

The second-line Batteries, "2/A" and "2/B," were formed as reserve units in September, 1914. For nearly three years they served on the east coast of England, training their men, sending out drafts for the first-line Batteries on the Eastern Front, and providing many candidates for commissions in the Royal Artillery. It was not until June, 1917, that, armed with Field Artillery equipment, they proceeded to France as part of the 126th Army Field Brigade and served through the whole of the long-drawn-out struggle of Ypres-Passchendaele until December, 1917, when they were withdrawn for re-equipment. After a short stay at Arras, the Brigade was stationed in reserve behind the Portuguese Army. At the commencement of the great German offensive of 1918 both Batteries moved into the line near Loos and were constantly in action during the heavy fighting of April, this sector being the only part of the British front attacked which did not concede an inch of ground to the enemy. Both units suffered heavy casualties; on one occasion the whole of the gun-line personnel of "2/A" was put out of action by a concentration of gas shells lasting three days and nights, and the guns had to be taken over by another unit pending the arrival of reinforcements. In May the Brigade moved to the Arras sector, eventually taking part in the final advance, both Batteries being continually in action until the day of the Armistice, when they marched into Mons with the Canadian Division.

In addition to the services enumerated above, over four thousand members of the Company were given commissions in various units of the great British Army. In every quarter of the globe where there was fighting, H.A.C. members were to be found.

When the question of regimental Battle Honours for the Great War came to be considered, the Company found itself in an unique position. It is well known that the Royal Artillery carries no Battle Honours, its service in every theatre of war for two hundred years being covered by the word "Ubique." But here were five Batteries of Artillery not wearing the "Ubique" badge and not units of the Royal Regiment, but very definitely part and parcel of a much older corps, the Honourable Artillery Company. It was therefore suggested that these Batteries should be considered eligible for the award of Battle Honours, to be borne, with those gained by the Infantry, on Colours which, it was submitted, were those of the Company, not merely of the Infantry Battalion. The War Office, aghast at such an unprecedented request, boggled for a time, and suggested, as an alternative, that the Batteries of the Company should be allowed to wear the "Ubique." This honour was declined; and eventually the Company carried its point, and its Batteries now possess the distinction, unique in this country, of eligibility to win and bear distinctive Battle Honours.

The Honours awarded to the Company for the Great War were as follows:—

THE GREAT WAR—3 Infantry Battalions and 7 Batteries of Artillery.

"Ypres, 1915, '17," "Somme, 1916, '18," "Ancre Heights," **"Ancre, 1916," "Arras, 1917 '18,"** "Scarpe, 1917, '18," "Arleux," **"Bullecourt,"** "Pilckem," "Polygon Wood," "Broodseinde," "Poelcappelle," **"Passchendaele,"** "Amiens," "Albert, 1918," "Bapaume, 1918," "Drocourt-Quéant," "Hindenburg Line," "Épéhy," "St. Quentin Canal," "Cambrai, 1918," "Selle," "Sambre," **"France and Flanders, 1914–18."** "Piave," **"Vittorio Veneto,"** "Italy, 1917–18." "Rafah," "Egypt, 1915–17." **"Gaza,"** "El Mughar," **"Jerusalem,"** "Jordan," "Megiddo," "Sharon," "Damascus," "Palestine, 1917–18." "Aden."

[*The Battle Honours which have been selected to be borne on Colours or Appointments are printed in dark type.*]

During the Labour troubles of 1920 Lord Denbigh suggested to the Authorities the formation of an H.A.C. Division of Special Constabulary Reserve. About 150 members joined and soon won the particular praise of the Police authorities for their smartness and efficiency. They proved a most useful nucleus at the time of the recent general strike and their numbers were rapidly expanded. At the close of the strike there was a compact and formidable force of some 600 Specials available in barracks, whilst many more members of the Corps rendered valuable aid in maintaining the public services of the community.

And so, through eighteen reigns, extending over a period of nearly four centuries, we have traced the history of this amazing survival of an ancient band of citizen archers. We have seen the Guild of Saint George become the Society of the Artillery Garden and the chief military training school in the kingdom; we have shown how the various pompous designations of early days gave way to the popular title of The Artillery Company; and we have followed the story of the Company down through the centuries. We have seen it survive civil war, revolution, political faction and internal dissension, alternately rising high in power and importance or sinking to comparative obscurity.

What of the future? At present the old Company, with its unique traditions wedded to a wonderful record of war service, is perhaps at the zenith of its fame. The majority of the Officers and N.C.O.'s are seasoned soldiers; the Public Schools and Universities are providing a steady stream of recruits to fill the ranks; and behind them is a reserve, over a thousand strong, of disciplined veterans, the majority of whom have served as officers on active service. Thus, at a moment's notice the Regiment could produce not only two Batteries and a Battalion brimming with first class material for commissions, but some six or seven hundred officers with experience in various arms of the service. Also, should the need arise, there is little doubt that the scenes of 1914 would be repeated, and the gates of Armoury House would again be besieged by hordes of would-be recruits and ex-members clamorous to rejoin.

And let it be noted that the declaration made by members on admission enjoins on them the duty, in case of necessity, of aiding the civil power in maintaining tranquillity and suppressing riot. May occasion for the exercise of these duties never again arise in England. Should it do so, the Artillery Company will be ready.

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

APPENDIX A

ROLL OF HONOUR OF THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY, 1914—1919

Abbott, Joseph Octavius.
Abbott, Phillips Montagu Edwin.
Abbott, Reginald Frederick William.
Abbott, William Tunnage.
Aberdein, Louis Frederick.
Adams, Joseph.
Adams, Robert Leonard Powys.
Adamson, Charles John Henry.
Adkin, Arthur Wellesley.
Adney, George Henry.
Aherne, David Joseph.
Aldersley, Eustace.
Allan, Leslie Davy.
Allan, Stuart Davy.
Allaway, Stanley Newton.
Allen, Thomas Gresham.
Allin, William Edgar.
Allsop, Edward Samuel.
Alsford, John Francis Walter.
Alston, Frank Harry.
Allum, Francis Gerard Henry.
Amor, Frank Parry.
Amsden, Brian Llennell.
Anderson, James Norton.
Andrews, Leslie Ernest.
Ansell, Rupert.
Applin, Geoffrey Walter Henry.
Archard, Frank.
Armitage, Edward Stoney.
Armstrong, Arthur.
Armstrong, Arthur Sutcliffe.
Armstrong, Jack.
Arnold, Albert Edward.
Artaud, Gerald Frank Daveniere.
Ash, John Luxton.
Ashford, Ralph Herbert.
Ashman, Cyril Arthur.
Aste, Norman Henry.
Atkinson, Harold Cecil.
Austin, Reginald Guy Arnott.
Austin, Stephen.
Aylett, Alfred Arthur.
Ayling, Thomas Leslie.

Bailey, Leonard Waters.
Baker, Ralph George.
Baker, Waldemar John.
Balchin, John Richard Aubrey.
Balding, Reginald Norman.
Bales, James Montague.
Ball, John Edwin.
Ballard, Roger Hardwicke.
Balme, Edward Nettleton.
Baly, Percy Randolph.
Banks, Charles Hunter Donaldson.
Bannister, Edward Percy.
Barfield, John Claud Horsey.
Barker, Bernard Whittingbury.
Barker, Hubert Joseph.
Barker, Richard John.
Barkham, Herbert Thomas Clifford.
Barnard, Sidney Herbert.
Barnes, Francis William.
Barnes, George Ernest.
Barnes, Herbert George.
Barnes, Hugh Cyril.
Barnes, Oswald James.
Barnes, Walter James.
Barnett, Frank Gerald.
Barney, Joseph Gilbert.
Barrett, Edwin John.
Barrett, Eric.
Barrett, Walter Herbert.
Bartlett, Arthur Reuben Robert.
Bartlett, Edgar John.
Barton, Ernest August.

APPENDIX A

Bateman, Frederick Miller.
Batson, Henry Thomas.
Battersby, Edgar.
Battersby, Ernest Joseph.
Baxter, Cecil Hubert.
Baxter, Frederick John.
Baxter, Leonard Arthur.
Baylis, Alfred Keppel.
Bazin, Geoffrey Martin.
Beach, Alec.
Beach, Edgar Hazard.
Beale, Alfred Percy Gordon.
Beaumont, Henry Arnold.
Beavis, Robert Drake.
Beck, Aubrey Moore.
Beckton, Harry.
Bedford, Seaton Hall.
Beer, Henry.
Beer, Wilfrid John.
Beggin, James Arthur.
Behar, Albert Moise.
Belas, George.
Bell, Jack Whateley.
Bendry, William James.
Benham, Leonard John Fulwood.
Bennett, Claude Henry.
Bennett, Douglas Henry.
Bennett, Frank Worman.
Bennett, George William.
Bennett, Harold Thomas.
Bennett, Victor Cyril Wentworth.
Berridge, George Arthur Oswald.
Bevan, Harding Thomas.
Bex, Phillip Frank.
Beyfus, Cecil Solomon.
Bill, Frank Keen.
Binns, George Alfred.
Bishop, Frank Duvall.
Bishop, Horace Reginald George.
Bishop, John Byran.
Blackford, Frank Harold.
Blackwell, Charles.
Blackwell, William Gordon.
Blades, William Henry.
Blake, Frederick William.
Bland, John George.
Blatchly, Walker John Atherton.
Blaxall, Harold Gurney.
Blissett, Percy Cecil.
Bloor, Percy Horace.
Bloxham, George Edward.
Blue, James.
Bluemel, Ernest Neville.
Bobby, Sidney Fitzgerald.
Bockett, Harold Arthur Palmer.
Boiteux, Leslie William.
Bonham, Denis Pierpoint.
Bonner, Paul.
Booth, Cyril Talbot.
Borst, Charles Louis.
Boswell, John Irvine Corrie.
Boully, Frederick Courtnay.
Bower, Herbert.
Bowman, Ephraim George.
Bowyer, George Henry.
Boyd, Kenneth Seymour.
Boyle, Ernest Charles Patrick.
Boyle, Lionel Richard Cavendish.
Boyton, Bertram Alfred.
Braddick, Lionel Frank.
Bradley, Alfred William.
Bradley, Wilfred.
Brandon, John Walter.
Brass, Ewart Stanley.
Brayfield, Arthur James.
Breden, William.
Brettell, Sidney Walter.
Brewerton, Augustine.
Brice-Halley, Clifford Richard.
Bridgman, William Louis.
Briggs, Harley Knowlys.
Brighten, Ralph Dalton Jarvis.
Bristowe, Stanley.
Britton, Bertie Horace.
Brock, Douglas Elliott.
Brocklesby, Horace Markham.
Brodie, Colin James.
Brookes, Frederick William.
Brooks, James William.
Brooks, William Charles.
Brotherton, Lawrence.
Brown, Arthur William.
Brown, Edwin Charley.
Brown, Frederick John.
Brown, George Easter.
Brown, Guy Frank.
Brown, Norwood Alfred Edmond.
Brown, Patrick Kirkwood.
Brown, Ronald Charles.
Browne, John Corbet.

Brunton, Douglas.
Bruster, John.
Bryan, Sherry James.
Buck, William Bentley.
Buckeridge, Ernest George.
Buckingham, Louis John.
Buckney, Ernest.
Budgen, Sidney Norman.
Bull, Wilfred John Franklin.
Bullock, William Acton.
Bungard, Eric George.
Bungey, Gerald Edward.
Bunnett, William George.
Burley, Cyril Percy.
Burnett, Fassett Arbonin.
Burningham, Ernest.
Burrell, Clive.
Burrell, Percy Edmund.
Burton, Frank.
Bush, Clifford Melton.
Butchard, Robert Archibald.
Butler, Edward.
Butler, Ernest.
Butler, Harry.
Button, Charles Augustus.
Byron, Clement John.

Cairns, Stanley Ernest.
Calder, Kenneth William.
Calder, Montague William.
Caley, Albert Sidney.
Cann, Alfred.
Capel, George Herbert.
Cardnell, Stanley George.
Carlton, Claude Gray.
Carlton, Roy Septimus.
Carpenter, Cecil Henry.
Carpenter, Herbert Montague Soames.
Carr, Victor Francis.
Carroll, James Charles.
Carter, Alfred Gordon Andrews.
Carter, Cyril Frederick Ward.
Carter, Ernest.
Caslon, Thomas White.
Cass, John Ernest Thomas.
Cassini, Harry Leonard John.
Castle, Howarth Ambrose.
Catley, James Hatcher.
Catling, Bernard.
Caton, Norman Newton.
Caudle, Cedric.
Cautherley, Charles Stewart.
Cawley, Frederick.
Chaffey, Henry Perceval.
Chaland, Claudius Ernest.
Chamberlain, John Harold.
Chambers, Cleveland Hugh.
Chandler, Walter George.
Chapman, Sydney Victor.
Chappell, Francis Harold.
Chappell, Sydney Edward.
Charles, Lancelot Philip.
Charrington, Arthur Leslie.
Chattey, Stanley Fitch.
Chauntler, Arthur Fordham.
Chaventré, Alfred.
Cheney, Leslie Turley.
Cherry, Frederick Cosier.
Childe, Ernest Sidney.
Chilwell, Eric Robert.
Chittick, William Henry.
Christie, Murray Inglis.
Christmas, Harold Laws.
Churchill, Penrhyn Stanley.
Clackett, Arthur Charles.
Clapp, Ernest.
Clare, Denis John.
Clark, Frank Esmond.
Clark, Hugh Alexander.
Clark, James Fenwick.
Clarke, Charles Basil.
Clarke, Donald.
Clarke, Robert George.
Claxton, Samuel Henry.
Clemishaw, William.
Clemmetson, Stanley.
Clubb, Reginald Edward.
Coates, Percy.
Coates, Roy Glendenning.
Coath, Leonard Charles.
Cockle, Clarence Tapscott.
Cockman, Charles Burton Blenheim.
Cohen, Albert.
Colberry, Albert Edward.
Cole, Richard Harry.
Cole, Percy.
Cole, Walter Arthur.
Coles, Norman Knight.
Colley, John.

Collings, Sidney Clements.
Collins, Charles William.
Collinson, Arthur Amery.
Collinson, William Holmes.
Commings, Frank Gregory.
Compton, William Horace Gordon.
Cook, Robert Guy.
Cooke, Edward Ralph.
Cooke, Leslie Frederick.
Coombe, Leslie Clarence.
Coomber, Harold Edwin.
Cooper, Benjamin Stephens.
Cooper, William Duncan Cecil.
Copinger, John Patrick.
Copley, Allan.
Copps, Harry Douglas.
Corin, Harold Edward.
Corkran, Reginald Seymour.
Cornell, Samuel.
Cornford, Herbert Reginald.
Cornford, Ross.
Cornford, William Day.
Cornish, James Edward.
Corry, Roland Longman.
Costello, Archibald Gordon.
Couling, Frank Herbert.
Coulson, William.
Coulthurst, Temple.
Court, Ernest.
Courtice, Reginald Leyster.
Cowan, Donald.
Cowans, John Robert.
Cox, Frederick Thomas.
Coxe, Eric Noel.
Coyne, John Joseph Aloysius.
Cracknell, Charles George Raphael.
Cramp, Stanley Frederick.
Cranefield, Reginald Thomas.
Crawford, Alexander Loudoun.
Crawford, Cecil James.
Crawford, Reginald Hugh.
Crawford, Wilfred Gordon.
Creasey, Francis Symons.
Creasey, Herbert Granville.
Cresswell, John Lancashire.
Cresswell, Ronald Arthur.
Cripps, Spencer Henry.
Criswick, Jack Victor.
Crompton, Charles Shufflebotham.
Crosby, John Metcalfe.
Crow, Norman Howard.
Cruse, Harry Leonard.
Cryer, Cecil Arthur.
Cummings, Vincent Early.
Cundall, John Ernest.
Cunnington, Henry King.
Curry, William Allan.
Curties, Dudley Thomas Lees.
Curtis, Robert Henry.
Cushen, Aylett Cameron.
Cuss, Cyril.
Cutting, Charles Henry.

Dale, John Cecil.
Dalgoutte, George Cork.
Daniels, Edwin Ambrose.
Darvill, William Daniel.
Davey, Harold.
Davidson, Lindsey.
Davidson, William Hart.
Davies, Albert Lewis.
Davies, Charles Hugh.
Davies, Clifford Thomas.
Davies, David Henry.
Davies, Gilbert Laurence.
Davies, Herbert Henry.
Davis, Douglas Stalman.
Davis, Eden Humphrey.
Davis, Frederick George.
Davis, Ralph Lethbridge.
Davidson, Claude Earnest William.
Davy, Howard Samuel.
Daw, William Gilbert.
Dawkins, Frederick Clifton.
Dawson, Harold.
Deane, Arthur Harold.
De Boeck, Arthur Holland.
Dennis, Kenneth George.
Dennison, Harry Glanville.
Denny, William John Edward.
Derry, Francis Thomas.
Desborough, Laurence Vernon.
Devis, Francis.
Dew, William Charles.
De Weck, Louis Ignatius Albert.
Dickson, Malcolm Charles Burnett.
Dillon, Charles Edward Maxwell.
Dilworth, Richard Oswald.
Dix, Stanley Herbert.
Dodds, Douglas George.

Dodgshon, John Hampson.
Dodwell, Oscar Wilfred.
Don, David Fairweather.
Dolwin, Charles Joseph.
Donovan, Richard John.
Dothie, Elvery Ashton.
Dothie, John Howard.
Double, Harold.
Doughty, Cyril Leonard.
Dow, Thomas Mitchell.
Dowden, John Duncan.
Dowdeswell, Arthur.
Dowley, Cyril John.
Downes, Frederick William.
Dowsett, Thomas William.
Doyle, Thomas Henry James.
Drinkwater, John Clifford.
Druitt, Everard Joseph.
Drury, Follett McNeill.
Drysdale, Adrian Castlelaw.
Dudley, Eric Whittington.
Dunford, Harold James.
Dungey, Francis Herbert.
Dunn, Arthur Mare.
Dunn, John Hubert Malcolmson.
Dyall, Alexander Percy.
Dyer, Charles Nettleton.
Dyer, Frederick Hobson.

Eagleton, John Ronaldson.
Earley, Clifford Henry.
Earnshaw, Arthur Francis.
East, Cecil Roy.
East, Frederick Archibald.
East, Sydney Clarke.
Eastment, Ernest Samuel.
Ebben, Douglas Norman.
Ebsworth, Harold Ernest.
Eccles, John Vivian William.
Eddie, George Richard.
Edmondson, Joseph Stanley.
Edwards, Arthur Edward.
Edwards, Guy Percy.
Edwards, Leo.
Edwards, Thomas Richard.
Edwards, Wilfred William.
Eggleton, Frank.
Eglington, Freeman John.
Elders, John Francis.
Eldrid, John Leslie.
Eley, James Julius.
Ellis, Charles Evelyn.
Ellis, Cyril Brooks.
Ellis, Edward Miller.
Ellis, Frederick Henry Phillips.
Ellis, Percival Clement.
Elmslie, John Leslie.
Elphick, Christopher Douglas.
Elton, John Hugh.
Emes, Ernest Alfred.
Eminton, Frederick Arthur.
Ennever, John Dominie Joseph.
Errington, John Birkett.
Essex, Frederick George.
Estall, Arthur Cecil.
Evans, Ernest Victor.
Evans, Leonard Austin.
Evans, Richard Lloyd.
Evans, Rupert Amrum.
Evans, Stanley John.

Fabian, Arthur Stanley.
Fabian, Sidney James.
Fairweather, John Henry.
Fairweather, Leslie John Edgar Cuthbert.
Fanshawe, Leighton Dalrymple.
Farmiloe, George Frederick.
Farrow, Edmund George Barnham.
Farrow, Percy Robert.
Fawley, Francis Henry Buckley.
Fearn, Charles Frederick Langham.
Feaviour, William Ceacy.
Fedden, Raymond Henshaw.
Fergusson, Albert.
Ffrancon-Davies, Geoffrey.
Field, John Martin.
File, Harold William.
Fillmore, Frederick Arthur.
Finch, Harold Wilfred.
Finney, Edwin Newland.
Fisenden, Francis Hereward.
Fish, John Leslie.
Fish, William Raymond.
Fishbourne, George William.
Fisher, Edwin Arthur.
Fisher, Frank.
Fisher, John Joseph.
Fiske, Dudley.
Fitch, Peter.

Fitness, Harold Edgar.
Fletcher, Victor William.
Flood, Dundas Charles.
Flory, Robert James.
Fogden, Geoffrey Louis Adames.
Follit, Reginald William.
Foord-Kelcey, John Mordaunt.
Foot, Victor Edward.
Forbes, Douglas Tulloch.
Ford, Alfred Herbert.
Ford, Francis William.
Foreman, George Arthur.
Forfar, Sidney James.
Forrest, Ernest John.
Forrester, Frank Oliver.
Fowler, Charles Elias.
Fowler, Christopher Richard.
Fowler, Douglas Asquith.
Fowler, Theodore Humphrey.
Fowles, John Henry Jobson.
Fowles, Reginald Lawrence.
Fox, Charles James.
Francis, Cyril Denny.
Franklin, Cyril Henry.
Franklin, Hollister Clare.
Franklin, Leslie Nansen.
Franks, Harold Cooper.
Fraser, George Allem.
Fraser, Thomas Andrew.
Free, Ernest Robert.
Freedman, Percy.
Freeman, Alfred Dyson.
Frend, John Arthur Edward.
Friend, Edward Thomas.
Frith, Charles Victor.
Frost, Alec.
Fryer, Eric Hamilton.
Fryer, Stanley Phillips.
Fryman, Gustave Albert.
Fuchsbalg, Maurice Marcel.
Fullalove, George Young.
Funston, Edward Frank.
Fussell, John William Hugo.

Gadson, Frank Bannatyne.
Gale, Jocelyn Alfred James.
Gander-Dower, Leonard Francis.
Gard, Stephen Alfred.
Gardiner, Ernest Frederick.
Gardner, Urban Robert Coen.
Gardom, John Charles.
Garnett, George Joseph.
Garnham, Clifford Edwards.
Garrad, Alec Hugh.
Garrad, Herbert Bingham.
Garrett, Arthur Daniel.
Garrud, Owen Henry.
Gaskain, Cecil Stanley.
Gaskell, David Lyndsay Stranack.
Gatward, William James.
Geldard, Percy Blackburn.
Gent, George.
Gentle, Harold Ernest.
Gentry, Frank Graham.
George, Percy.
George, William Jacob.
Gibson, John.
Gifford, John Leslie Patrick.
Giles, Walter Hereward.
Gilham, Charles.
Gill, Arthur Salisbury.
Gill, Colin.
Gillespie, Francis Sydney.
Gillman, Ralph.
Ginn, Harold Etridge.
Gliddon, Maurice.
Glover, John Bertram.
Gluning, Leslie Samuel.
Godby, Howell Ashbridge.
Goddard, Ralph Garnett.
Goddard, Reginald Stanley.
Godfree, Reginald Barber.
Godfree, Tom Hatcher.
Godfrey, Herbert Arthur.
Gold, Charles Rene.
Goldspink, Edward Newall.
Goldstein, Samuel William.
Gomme, Everard Henry Stephen.
Goode, Thomas Lord.
Gooderham, John Walter.
Goodman, George.
Goodwin, Ernest Josiah.
Goodyear, Frederick George.
Gordon, John George.
Gosden, Dudley Walter.
Gotch, Geoffrey William.
Gough, Stanley James Henry.
Goulding, John Alfred William.
Gover, Samuel Leslie Liddle.
Gradwell, Clarence William,

Grahame, John Gordon.
Grant, Noel.
Grant, Robert James.
Grantham, Frederick Ernest.
Gravatt, Arthur Edward.
Gravatt, Hubert Charles Alfred.
Gray, Albert Frank.
Gray, Frederick Hodskinson, Junr.
Greaves, Howard Francis Linford.
Green, Ernest Unsworth, Junr.
Green, Francis Charles Parish.
Green, Frank Reginald.
Green, Herbert Thomas Samuel.
Green, Leslie Alan.
Green, Lionel Green.
Green, Maxwell.
Green, Reginald Unsworth.
Green, Thomas Henry.
Greenaway, Harry Lewis.
Greenwood, Leslie William.
Gregory, Henry.
Greig, Roderick Malcolm John.
Grellier, Gordon Harley.
Greville, Giles Austin.
Grieve, Archibald Douglas.
Griffin, Hedley Saunders.
Griffin, Leslie Stewart.
Griffiths, Edwin Arthur.
Grimshaw, Harold Shrieves.
Grinstead, James.
Grix, Sidney Lionel.
Grocott, Frederick.
Grogan, Gerald Forman.
Ground, John Kingston.
Grundy, Cecil Boyce.
Grundy, Geoffrey Stewart.
Grundy, Ronald Edwin.
Gulden, Henry Frederick.
Gunn, Albert Edwin.
Gunn, Arthur.
Gutmann, Walter.

Haddy, Stephen Edgar.
Hadrill, Arthur William.
Haigh, Ernest.
Haime, Leonard Holmes.
Hale, Percy John.
Haley, Robert Craven.
Halford, William Stanley.
Hall, George Sydney.
Hall, Joseph.
Hall, William Seymour.
Hame, Arthur William.
Hammond, Ernest William Frost.
Hammond, George Rathbone.
Handford, Reginald Stuart.
Handyside, Arthur Cruikshanks.
Hanford, Arthur John.
Hanley, Ferdinand Vincent.
Hannah, Edward Meale.
Hardingham, Frederick Frank.
Hardwick, William West.
Hargreaves, James Harold.
Harker, Robert Percy.
Harland, Ernest John.
Harris, Clause Leslie.
Harris, Douglas Vaughan.
Harris, Lancelot Graham.
Harris, Leslie Edwin.
Harrison, Edward Donald.
Harrison, Frank Talbot.
Harrison, Sydney Charles.
Harrison, William Ewart.
Harsant, Frank.
Hart, Bertram Ernest.
Hart, Robert David.
Hartley, William Guest.
Harvey, Arthur.
Harvey, John Albert.
Harwood, Gerald.
Haselgrove, Bertram Thorpe.
Hatton, Henry Hatton.
Hawkins, Reginald Huntley.
Hawkins, Stanley.
Haworth, Thomas Eldred Curwen.
Hayden, William Clarence.
Heagerty, Richard Browne.
Heagerty, William Thomas.
Heale, Arthur Hemstock.
Heasman, John Valentine.
Heath, Geoffrey Malcolm.
Heath, John Oswald.
Heathcote, Frank Percy.
Hedderwick, James Alexander.
Hedderwick, Ronald Young.
Hedgecock, John Mozart.
Heely, Herbert Francis.
Heggie, Frederick William.
Helliwell, Norman John Webster.
Henderson, Victor William.

Henman, Herbert Cecil.
Henry, Cyril Lloyd.
Henzell, Eric Charles.
Heryet, Cyril Nicholas.
Hewens, Frederick Armitage.
Hewitt, Hubert Noel.
Heyman, John Henry.
Heywood, Gerald Garnett.
Hicking, Francis Joseph.
Hicklenton, Donald Stuart.
Hickman, Terence.
Hickman, Wilfred Vailes.
Hicks, Wilfred Noel.
Hicks, William.
Hiland, Hector.
Hill, Alexander Ebenezer Erskine.
Hill, Arthur Justus.
Hill, Benjamin Godlonton.
Hill, Cedric Lloyd Graham.
Hill, Michael.
Hill, Ralph Grenfell.
Hill, Richard Henry Ernest.
Hill, William Oswyn.
Hillier, Wallace Leigh.
Hine, Claude Annesley.
Hinton, James Marshall.
Hitchcock, Leonard Alfred.
Hitchcock, Sydney Robert.
Hitchings, Richard Gordon.
Hoare, William George.
Hoare, William Ernest.
Hockey, Frederick Hinton.
Hodge, Harvey Lionel.
Hodge, John Robert.
Hodge, Leslie Richard.
Hodgkinson, Geoffrey Hill.
Hodson, John Albert.
Holden, Isaac Guy.
Holland, Lawrence Swatridge.
Holland, Reginald.
Holland, William Herbert.
Hollands, William Charles George.
Hollick, Percy Hood.
Holman, Donald.
Holman, Paul.
Holmes, Roland Oliver Arthur.
Holton, George James Paul.
Hone, Gilbert Bentoit.
Hooker, Percy Leslie.
Hooper, Henry Edgar.
Hope, Herbert Alfred.
Hopkins, Arthur William.
Hopkins, Lewis.
Hopkinson, Roy Geoffrey.
Horbury, George Squire.
Hore, William Edward.
Horn, David James.
Horncastle, Leonard Henry.
Horner, William Jackson.
Hort, Horatio Brunt.
Horton, Eric.
Hoskins, George Chandos.
Houghton, Eric Frank Gerald.
How, Henry Arthur.
Howard, Leslie Rayner.
Howard, Michael.
Howkins, James Frederick.
Howkins, Maurice.
Howse, Basil Thomas.
Hoyle, Edgar.
Hoyle, Wilfred.
Hubbard, Alfred.
Hubbard, Charles Henry.
Hubbard, Malcolm Linton.
Huggins, Leslie Lovering.
Hulbert, Egbert Wilfred Leslie.
Hull, Arthur William.
Hulme, Thomas Ernest.
Hulse, Norman Bright.
Humble-Crofts, Cyril Mitford.
Humble-Crofts, Woolaston Gouville Barhead.
Humphrey, Albert George.
Humphreys, Rhys Roberts.
Humphrys, Leslie Palmer.
Hunt, Herbert Clifford.
Hunt, Reginald Arthur James.
Hurst, Eric Barton.
Hussey, Charles Henry.
Hutchinson, Samuel Francis.
Hutton, John Thornton.
Hyland, Sidney George.

Inns, Frederick Howard.
Inskipp, Leslie.
Ireland, Robert Clifford.
Irving, Alexander.
Isaacson, John Leslie.

Jackson, Horace.

Jackson, Leonard.
Jackson, Stanley Walker.
Jackson, Wilfred Henry.
Jacobs, John.
Jallings, William.
James, Charles Andon.
Jameson, Maurice Gurney.
Jarvis, Frederick Charles.
Jarvis, George Frederick Jervaulx.
Jeaffreson, Ronald Percy.
Jeffree, Johnson Vivian.
Jefferies, Philip.
Jenkin, Percy Spencer.
Jenkins, Edgar Vernon.
Jenkins, George.
Jenkins, Sidney Stuart.
Jenner, Alfred Laurence.
Jennings, Alexander.
Jobling, Joseph Cecil.
Johnson, Arthur Cecil.
Johnson, Eric Russell.
Johnson, Rowland.
Johnson, Samuel.
Johnson, Wilfred.
Johnston, Arthur Annan.
Johnstone, Alexander.
Johnstone, John Cunliffe.
Joint, Robert James.
Jones, Eric Arthur Owen.
Jones, Geoffrey Brian.
Jones, Albert Victor.
Jones, Alfred Hampden.
Jones, Arthur Hackworth.
Jones, Arthur William.
Jones, Eric Arthur Munro.
Jones, Evan Thomas.
Jones, Harry Dukenfield.
Jones, Herbert Owen.
Jones, Isaac Price.
Jones, Leslie Edward.
Jones, Leslie Price.
Jones, Stanley Fox Gore.
Jones, Sydney.
Jones, William Rice.
Jopling, James William.
Jordan, Hugh Stewart Latimer.
Joseph, Maurice Percy.
Jukes, Austin William.

Kahn, Edgar.
Kates, Ernest Albert.
Keelan, Claude Charles.
Keep, Walter Fischer.
Kelly, Percy Patrick.
Kelynack, Richard Henry.
Kemp, Arthur.
Kemp, Percy Arnold.
Kendrick, Harry Charles.
Kennedy, Joseph Frank.
Kent, James Walter Haraden.
Kent, Reginald Frederick.
Keogh, Frank Charles.
Kershaw, Willie.
Key, Edward Cecil Brice.
Kimber, Frederick William.
King, Caleb William.
King, Clifford Eaton.
King, Ernest George.
King, Frank Walter.
King, Ralph Deards.
King, Stacey Bates.
King, Walter George.
Kingston, Robert Creaser.
Kipling, Norman Everard.
Kitson, George Bredin.
Klean, Michael Graham.
Knatchbull, Richard Leonard.
Knight, Ernest James.
Knight, Philip Clifford.
Knight, William Torrence.
Krauss, Dinis.
Kray, Clement Henry.

Lamb, Francis James Ongley.
Lake, Osmond.
Lakeman, Reginald Noel.
Laming, William Thomas.
Lampard, Paul Scheltema.
Lane, Frederick William.
Lane, Joseph.
Lane, Walter George Cambridge.
Langdale, Harold Carthew.
Langridge, John Edward.
Lansley, Norman.
Larder, Herbert Craft.
Large, Eustace Ernest.
Larkin, Frederick Joseph.
Larsson-Nils, Carl.
Lashmore, Frank.
Last, Harold Haile.

Last, Leonard Walter.
Last, Leslie Sydney.
Lavers, Victor Alfred.
Lawrence, David.
Lawrence, Herbert Ewart.
Layton, Edward Jeffrey.
Lazarus, Arthur.
Lea, Arthur Henry Ormond.
Leach, Fred.
Leaver, Harry Leonard.
Lee, Henry Duncan.
Lee, Thomas George.
Lee, William Frederick.
Leech, Walter.
Leeds, John Stanley.
Legg, Horace Norman.
Le Gros, Claud Douglas.
Le Guet, Albert John.
Leigh, Egerton Branning.
Lemmon, Montague Hague.
Lennon, Lionel Stuart.
Lenton, Frank Donald.
Lenton, Gerald.
Lepper, Leslie.
Levy, Levy Howard.
Levy, Philip Sidney.
Levy, Reginald Arthur.
Lewis, Archibald Ernest.
Lewis, Cuthbert Preston.
Lewis, Herbert James.
Lewis, Joseph.
Lewis, Lance Will.
Lewis, Osmond Henry.
Lewis, Percy Edward.
Lewis, Walter Harding.
Liddell, Arthur John.
Lifetree, Ernest Henry.
Limon, Henry.
Lindeman, Eric Hugh.
Lindley, Albert Victor.
Lindsey, Sidney Charles.
Linford, Ivor Hutchinson.
Link, Horace Arthur.
Littlewood, Arthur Francis Bewicke.
Levett, Alan Edgar.
Lloyd, Mostyn William.
Lockerbie, Andrew Thomas.
Long, Albert Edward.
Long, Cyril Edward Arnold.
Long, Frederick Joseph.
Longman, Valentine Sandford.
Longcroft, Charles Alfred.
Longhurst, Henry Joseph.
Lonnen, Leslie Edwin John.
Love, Harold Charles.
Lovell, Cyril Thomas.
Lovell, Vernon Shaw.
Low, Reginald Gordon.
Lowe, Arthur Charles.
Lowden, Eric.
Lowther, George Arthur.
Lucas-Tooth, Sir Archibald Leonard, Bart.
Lucie-Smith, Euan.
Lufkin, Charles Arthur Henry.
Luke, John Vyvian.
Lupton, Joseph Brooks.
Lupton, Robert Charles.

Macauley, Horace.
Machin, Percy Charles Bertram.
Maconochie, Arthur Deland.
Maddison, Frank.
Mager, Frederick Samuel.
Maggs, Eric William Bristowe.
Mahr, Augustin Harry.
Maisey, William John Maitland.
Malyn, Reginald.
Male, Arthur Ernest.
Manger, Eric.
Mann, Albert.
Mann, James Emil Hubert.
Mann, Joseph Leopold.
Mansell, Leslie Wyndham.
Mansfield, Gerald.
Manson, John Cochrane.
Margetts, Hector Charles.
Marples, William Henry Noel.
Marrs, Edward Stanley.
Martin, Alfred.
Martin, Charles Henry.
Martin, George Arthur.
Martin, Walter Percival.
Mascord, George Augustus.
Masham, Frederick Henry.
Mathew, Stanley.
Matthews, Alfred Truscott.
Matthews, Leonard Mansfield.
Maylam, Alfred Thomas.
McArthur, Lawrence William.

McGeorge, Charles James Bertram.
McIntyre, Donald William.
McPherson, Hugh Bannerman.
Meakins, Robert William Speneam.
Medhurst, Ernest Harold.
Medlock, John Henry.
Meech, Ernest George.
Mein, William Edwin Gordon.
Meldrum, Ronald.
Menzies, John Caithness.
Merriman, William Robert Hill.
Merrington, William John Mayfield.
Methvin, Donald.
Mill, John.
Millar, Patrick Charles.
Millard, John Walter Marr.
Millburne, Joseph.
Miller, Charles Leonard.
Milne, Francis Joseph.
Mitchell, Frank Clough.
Mitchell, Reginald.
Mitchenson, John Supple.
Moffatt, William Macgregor.
Moir, Gartley.
Monahan, Frank Percival.
Mondy, Neville Colin.
Money, Sidney Aubrey Kyrle.
Monroe, Arthur Stuart.
Moorat, Bernard Joseph.
Moore, Ernest Edward.
Moore, John Ross.
Moore, Raymond Cecil Devereux.
Moore, William Webb.
Morey, John Lawrence.
Morfey, Kenneth.
Morgan, Arthur Conway Osborne.
Morgan, Harry.
Morgan, William Ephraim.
Morin, Frank Whitehorne.
Morland, Kenneth Irvine Thomson.
Morrell, William Sidney.
Morris, Ernest Walter.
Morris, William Joseph.
Morris, William Percy.
Morsley, Robert Charles.
Mortleman, Wilfred Robert.
Morton, James William.
Morum, John Hugill.
Moseley, Herbert James Ritchie.
Moss, David George.
Moss, Leonard George.
Moysey, Lionel.
Moysey, Lionel John Sims.
Mummery, Victor Frederick.
Munt, Elliot Roy.
Murray, Ernest Frank Hume.
Murrin, Sydney Stanley.

Nancarron, William Thomas.
Nash, Norman Bruce.
Nathan, Robert Percy.
Neal, George Ivor.
Neame, Gerald Tassell.
Nesham, Charles Frederick.
Nevill, Cuthbert St. John.
Newall, Nigel.
Newman, Arthur James.
Newland, Arthur Kenyon.
Newland, Henry John.
Newsam, Arthur Fowler.
Newton, Frank John.
Newton, John.
Newton, William Savage.
Nicholls, George Arthur.
Nichols, Charles.
Nicholson, Geoffrey Wolstenholme
Nickels, Walter Tetley.
Nicklin, Herbert Tice.
Nicole, George Leslie.
Nops, George.
Norman, Isaac Thomas Victor.
Norman, Neil Tully.
Norris, Arthur James.
Norwood, Wilfred James.
Nowell, Joseph Kent.

O'Brien, Dermot.
O'Brien, Lucius James Francis.
O'Callaghan, John Charles.
Ogilvy, David Pearson.
Oldham, Robert Edward.
Oldham, Wilford.
Oldreive, Reginald Richard.
Olliffe, Ernest Percival.
Ommundsen, Harcourt.
Openshaw, Frederick Ambrose.
Orchard, Frank.
Orris, Howard Victor.
Osborne, Archibald Edward

Osman, Clifford Frederick.
Ostler, Walter Hollingsworth.
Oulsnam, Reginald.
Outram, John.
Oxley, Richard Stephen.

Page, Harry Thomas.
Page, Vernon.
Page, William Henry.
Pakeman, Philip Walther.
Parfitt, Thomas William.
Parkinson, Henry Thomas.
Parker, Walter Henry, Junr.
Parks, Albert Ernest.
Parriss, Walter Frederick.
Parry, Arthur Crosse.
Parry, Percy Frederick.
Parry, Wilfred Seaton Bagot.
Parry, William George.
Parsons, Albert.
Parsons, Herbert Harrahan.
Parsons, Joseph Frederick Leslie.
Pascall, Paul Mervyn.
Paterson, Henry Franklin.
Patterson, Aubrey Frederick Albert.
Patterson, Frederick William.
Paul, John Andrew Bowring.
Paull, Alan Drysdale.
Pavitt, Charles Frederick.
Payne, Harold George.
Payne, William George.
Peal, Archibald Thomas.
Pearce, Dudley George.
Pearman, Humphrey.
Pearse, Gerald Enrico.
Pearson, Geoffrey.
Pearson, Thomas Edward.
Pearson, Walter.
Peavot, Henry George Jesse.
Peel, Edward.
Peerless, Charles Stephen.
Peet, Frederick William.
Peniston-Bird, Lewis.
Pepperday, Leslie John Deacon.
Percival, William Arthur.
Percy, Henry Edward.
Perks, Wilfred Lewson.
Perren, Joseph Leonard.
Perrott, William Thorne.
Peters, Charles Maurice Sewell.
Peters, Cyril Aubrey.
Peters, Lionel Gordon.
Peters, Louis Alexander.
Peters, Thomas William.
Phillips, John Harold Montague.
Phillips, Norman Holt.
Phillips, Percy Charles.
Phillips, Philip Roy.
Phillips, William Marsden.
Philp, Edgar Charles.
Pickering, Robert Hackney.
Pigg, Bernard William.
Pilcher, Frederick George.
Pilgrim, Percy.
Pipe, William John.
Pitt, Vio Douglas Wallace.
Pitts, Harold Bertram.
Planner, Gordon Sydney.
Pointing, Leslie James.
Pollack, David Spender.
Pollard, James Frank.
Pollard, Lewis Allan.
Polson, John Johnston.
Pond, Cecil Edward.
Poole, Eric Skeffington.
Poole, William Sidney Francis.
Poolley, James Herbert.
Porter, Arthur Wilmot.
Porter, Hugh Gordon, Junr.
Porter, Norman Uloth.
Porter, Royden Spencer Bayspool.
Porterfield, Leonard Witherow.
Potter, Edmund Walter Jolit.
Poulain, Harold Rene.
Powell, Kennett.
Powell, Reginald Waller.
Powell, Walter Ernest.
Pracy, Harry Reginald.
Pragnell, George Frederick.
Prebble, Herbert Thomas.
Preeston, Ralph Septimus.
Prescott, Charles George.
Prestwich, Frank William.
Price, Norman James.
Priest, George Alfred.
Prior, Leslie Montague Sydney.
Pritchard, John Heriot.
Proverbs, Stuart Elwyn.
Pryce, Thomas Tannatt.
Pugh, George William.

Pullen, Charles Howson.
Pulleyn, Herbert Ernest.
Purser, Thomas Picton.
Pye, Cyril Altamont.
Pywell, William Jackson.

Quaife, Eric John.
Quinn, John Peter Campbell.

Rabbett, Leonard George.
Rainer, Walter Walford.
Ramsey, Harry Victor.
Raphael, Harry George.
Raphael, John Edward.
Ratcliffe, George William.
Rattenbury, Herbert William.
Rawlings, Charles Herrman.
Rawlins, Hugh Penrose Cardoys.
Raymond, John Brannan.
Rayner, Leonard Arthur.
Rayner, Leslie King.
Read, Cecil Edgar.
Redding, John Wills.
Redrup, Thomas Edward.
Reed, Cyril Courtenay.
Reed, Henry.
Reeve, John Stanley.
Reeves, Harry.
Reeves, John.
Reeves, Leslie Leonhardt.
Reid, John Blandford.
Reynolds, Frank Royston.
Ribstone, Henry Emile Rudolphe.
Rice, Gilbert Arthur.
Richards, Charles Andrew.
Richmond, Henry Sylvester.
Riddey, John.
Riddick, Stanley Charles.
Riddle, Henry Alfred.
Rigby, Charles Newton Beaumont.
Riggs, Henry John.
Roberson, Frank Hubert Langhorne.
Roberts, John Henry.
Roberts, Joseph.
Roberts, Leonard Herbert.
Robertson, Gordon Graham.
Robertson, Noel Sydney.
Robinson, George Shirley Maxwell.
Robinson, William Dean.
Robinson, William George.
Roderick, Philip.
Roe, Heriot Baker.
Roe, Robert Arnold.
Roe, Thomas Henry.
Roffey, Charles Alfred.
Rogers, Frederick George.
Rooke, William Albert.
Rosbrook, Bernard.
Rose, Charles Henry.
Rose, Eric Dudley.
Ross, Edward.
Rowe, Henry Copeland.
Rowse, Melville.
Rudledge, Thomas William.
Ruff, Herbert Buckland.
Russell, Even Hartley.
Russell, Norman Peter.
Russell, Walter Oswald.
Ryan, John Stanley.

Sadd, Robert Douglas.
St. Quintin, Clifford Jack.
Salmon, Vernon Edgar Thomas.
Salter, Harold Arthur.
Samuel, Felix Leopold.
Samworth, John Alfred.
Sanders, John Harry.
Sanderson, Thomas Edward.
Sanderson, Walter Ker.
Sandford, Walter Henry.
Sandle, Henry John.
Sansom, Gordon Ralph.
Satchwell, Frank Henry.
Savidge, Jack Douglas.
Saville, Walter Stanley.
Savours, Arthur William.
Sawdon, Arthur Tindale.
Scandrett, William Frederick.
Scannell, Michael Henry.
Scarf, Albert William.
Schall, Henry Frederick.
Schiff, Martin Noel.
Scholey, Percy Gerald.
Scoggin, Harry Cumming.
Scott, Alan Dale Wyndham.
Scott, Frederick Arthur.
Scott, Ronald Mayne Stevenson.
Scott, Walter Elvin.
Scott, William David.
Scougall, Alan Muir.

Seager, Arthur William.
Seale, Rodney Gordon.
Seamark, Harry Reginald.
Seater, Percival John.
Seear, Dudley Francis.
Segnitz, Hermann Ferdinand.
Selby, Donovan Frederick Gordon.
Senior, Thomas Hugh Sandford.
Seymour, Charles.
Seymour, William Percy.
Shalders, Alfred Owen.
Sharp, Arthur.
Sharpe, Albert William.
Sharpin, Frank Lloyd.
Shattock, Stanley John.
Shaw, Bernard Hudson.
Shears, Arthur Cecil.
Shears, Edmund George.
Shepard, Bernard Anthony.
Shepard, Norbert Gerald.
Shepherd, Harold Ernest.
Sheppard, Duncan George Charles.
Sheppard, Gordon.
Sherrard, Bertram.
Sherrington, Sidney Francis.
Shipton, Cyril Herbert.
Shirley, Alan Edgar Belgrave.
Shurmur, Harold Thomas.
Shurrock, Christopher William.
Simpkin, Travers.
Simpson, Victor Leslie.
Sims, Albert Charles Harry.
Sims, Donald Palmer.
Sims, Ewart Stephen.
Sinclair, John Norman.
Skelton, Samuel Leslie.
Skinner, Arthur Leslie.
Skoulding, Alfred Cecil.
Slight, William Herbert.
Smallman, Arthur Frederick Strong.
Smallman, Charles Strong.
Smart, Claude.
Smart, Nevil.
Smethurst, Cyril Valentine.
Smith, Alan Langdale.
Smith, Alexander Thomas.
Smith, Arthur Alfred.
Smith, Benjamin.
Smith, Charles Edward.
Smith, Clifford Thomas.
Smith, Edward Frank.
Smith, Eric St. Clare.
Smith, Frederick Reginald.
Smith, Gordon Keith.
Smith, Harold William.
Smith, Harry Edmund.
Smith, Herbert George.
Smith, Joseph Charles.
Smith, Lionel Guy.
Smith, Norman Spiers.
Smith, Percy.
Smith, Randolph William Henry.
Smith, Stanley Fenton.
Smith, Sydney Clement.
Smith, William Albert.
Smith, William Frank.
Smyley, George Ebrington.
Snow, Eric John.
Soddy, James.
Sogno, George Frank.
Soper, Lionel.
Southall, Henry Leslie.
Southgate, Charles Edward.
Southwell, Wilfred Alan Glanville.
Southwick, Thomas Edward David.
Spanton, Arthur Pechey.
Sparks, Clive.
Spear, Robert Laurence.
Spears, Eric.
Spelman, Wilfred Cubitt.
Spence, Bertram.
Spencer, Thomas Charlton.
Speyer, Cecil Arthur.
Springate, Arthur Cecil.
Springfield, Arthur Lincoln.
Sprinfield, Roland William.
Sprunt, Edward Lawrence.
Squires, Charles Arthur.
Squires, Charles Thomas.
Stacey, Bertram Anthony.
Stacey, Edgar Victor.
Stackhouse, Bernard.
Stanborough, James Vernon.
Stansfield-Smith, Lyulph.
Stapleton, Harold Frederick.
Stapley, Reginald Townsend.
Starkey, Donald Horace.
Starkie, John Charles.
Starr, Alfred.
Statton, Percival Graham.

Steed, Claude Percy.
Steel, Arthur George.
Steer, Bertram.
Stembridge, Oscar Samuel.
Stephens, George Albert.
Stephens, John Hay.
Stephenson, Denys George.
Stephenson, Harold Archibald.
Stevens, Percy.
Stiles, Arthur James.
Stiliman, Frederick William Cheere.
Still, Ernest Knight.
Stimson, Montague Adolph.
Stirling, George Edward.
Stock, Charles Herbert.
Stone, Edward Albert Fraser.
Stone, Percy Charles.
Straw, Lacy Hipwood.
Strickland, John Edward French.
Stringer, John.
Stroud, Harold Charles.
Stroud, Lewis Frank.
Stroud, Sydney Hill.
Strutt, Francis William.
Sturt, Clayton.
Sullens, James Charles Oliver.
Summers, Robert Rendel.
Sumner, Herbert.
Sutton, Vivian Charles Woolfe.
Swallow, Leonard.
Swann, Hugh Beauchamp.
Swannell, Ralph.
Sworder, Charles Frederick.
Sworder, John Leslie.
Symmons, Frederick Samuel.
Symons, Silas Edward.

Talbot, Norman Hale.
Tarrant, Arthur Ralph.
Tate, Robert Somers.
Tatham, Cautley.
Tatton, Joseph Mark.
Tautz, Charles Edward.
Tayler, Arthur Edwin.
Taylor, Arthur George.
Taylor, Frederick Edward.
Taylor, Henry.
Taylor, James Wood Colin.
Taylor, Leonard Twyford.
Taylor, Percy.
Taylor, Richard Mill.
Taylor, Robert.
Taylor, Wilfred John.
Taylor, William.
Tebbitt, Charles Vernon.
Tebbitt, Hugh Edgar.
Thayre, Frederick James Harry.
Thew, Frank Atkinson.
Thicke, Frank Vincent.
Thomas, Albert Edward.,
Thomas, Harold Sylvanus.
Thomas, Henry John.
Thomas, Laurence Clement.
Thomas, Leslie.
Thomas, Martyn.
Thomas, William Henry.
Thomas, William Joseph.
Thompson, Albert.
Thompson, Alfred William.
Thompson, John.
Thompson, Sidney James.
Thorn, Harold Lewis.
Thorne-Worth, William Harry.
Thornton, Stanley.
Thorpe, Cyril Frank.
Thorpe, George Robert.
Tibbs, James Albert Percival.
Tice, Ernest Wilfred.
Tilleard, Edwin Barland.
Timms, Wilfred.
Tindall, Hugh.
Tolley, Walter Albert.
Tombs, Henry Ernest.
Tongue, Andrew Leslie.
Torrie, Leslie Howard Somerville.
Tortoishell, George Henry.
Tosetti, Douglas.
Tout, Frederick Charles.
Townend, Pelham Cecil.
Townsend, Joseph Leslie.
Treharne, Spencer Morris.
Trenow, Geoffrey Foveaux.
Trevers, Clarence Edward.
Trewhitt, Eric Gerald.
Trimmer, William Charles.
Trinder, Henry Charles.
Tripp, Cyril Clause.
Tristram, James Henry Bertram.
Trotter, Henry Baron.
Trubshawe, Charles Howard.

Tucker, Herbert George.
Tucker, Louis Egbert.
Turnbull, Thomas Lancelot Gervain.
Turner, George Herbert.
Turner, Thomas Alfred.
Turnnill, Hugh Victor.
Tweddell, John Harold Frederick.
Tye, Arthur Guthrie.
Tyrrell, William Alfred.

Underwood, Thomas Tyers.
Unthank, Guy Desmond.
Unwin, John Lees.
Upsdale, David Robert.
Ullmann, Douglas Maurice.

Vaile, Edward Ernest.
Vaile, Philip Amyas.
Valentine, Henry Edgar.
Van Der Bergh, Louis Lacy.
Vaughan, Leslie Howell.
Verrells, Harry Norman.
Vertue, Alan Francis.
Vieweg, Douglas Frederick.
Vincent, Norman Pine.
Viner, Rollo Lee.
Vizer, William Frederick.
Von Treuenfels, Carl Otto.
Vowler, Edward Maxwell.

Wade, Stanley Leach.
Wagstaff, Robert Arthur.
Waldridge, Sidney William.
Waldron, Edwin Henry.
Walker, Denham.
Walker, Lionel Arthur.
Walker, Maurice.
Walker, Thomas Bernard.
Wallace, Harold Edward.
Waller, Theodore Edmund Fitzgerald.
Wallis, Alleyne Westoby.
Walton, William Guest.
Ward, Charles Cecil Brooks.
Ward, Charles George.
Ward, Charles George Sedgwick.
Ward, Clinton Granville.
Warner, Arthur Stanley.
Waterman, Frank.
Waterman, Harold Wouson.
Watkins, Cecil Frank.
Watkins, Glyn Merfyn.
Watkins, Griffith William.
Watson, Thomas Tosh.
Way, Henry Leslie.
Wearing, Vernon Viking.
Webb, Charles.
Webb, Noel William Ward.
Webster, Colin Ailesbury.
Webster, Hugh Maxwell.
Wedlake, Edward Ralph.
Welsford, Arthur Hadden.
West, Edwin Arthur.
West, Harold.
Westaway, Leslie Thomas.
Westlake, Geoffrey Arthur.
Wetherall, Edwin Walter.
Whatling, Harold Wilfred.
Whear, Ralph Morton.
Wheeler, Arthur Leslie Doble.
Whitby, Harry.
White, Charles William Henry.
White, Cyril Arthur.
White, Frank Shackleton.
White, George Leonard.
White, Gilbert Victor.
White, John Leslie.
White, Stanley John.
White, Walter Alfred.
Whitehead, George Stanley.
Whitehead, Sydney Norman Cooper Keats.
Whitehead, Walter Henry.
Whiting, Edward Albert.
Whittard, Harold Alfred.
Whitty, Thomas.
Wicks, Arthur Gifford.
Widdowson, Tom.
Wigg, Arthur Harry.
Wild, Fred.
Wiles, Sidney.
Wilkinson, Arthur Benjamin.
Will, John George.
Williams, Edward Reginald.
Williams, Henry Roland.
Williams, Henry Francis Stanley.
Williams, John Beevor.
Williams, John Percival.
Williamson, Albert Henry.

ROLL OF HONOUR, 1914—1919

Williamson, Christopher.
Willis, Francis William.
Willis, Richard.
Wills, Oliver Byerly Walters.
Wilson, Albert George.
Wilson, Cecil Fred.
Wilson, Charles James.
Wilson, John William.
Wilson, Maurice.
Wilson, Robert Victor.
Winch, Gordon Bluett.
Winn, William Lloyd.
Winterbourne, Allan John.
Winterbourne, Percy George.
Wise, Colin Walter.
Wise, Harold Colin.
Withers, Edmund Roy.
Witt, Leonard Stanley.
Wood, Cecil Evelyn.
Wood, Cyril Augustus.
Wood, Reginald Nixon.
Woodgate, Arthur Horace.
Woodger, Noel Edward.
Woodhouse, Julian Ashley Hall.
Woodman, Veere Molyneux.
Woods, Leslie.
Woodward, Samuel Herbert.
Woollard, Charles John.
Wooldridge, John William.
Woolston, Alfred Norton.
Wootton, Percy Albert.
Worssam, Leslie Henry.
Wright, Benjamin Joseph.
Wright, Cyril Paul.
Wright, John Major Stanley.
Wright, Lewis.
Wright, Reginald John.
Wright, Robert William.
Wuensch, Edward Harfield.

Yardley, Eric Barnes.
Yeo, Frederick George.
Young, Frederick William.
Young, Harry.

Zealley, John Kennelm Sharland.

Note.—The above list is complete as far as known, but may not include all the names of members who fell after obtaining commissions in other units.

BALHAM PUBLIC LIBRARY

APPENDIX B

ROLL OF THE VICTORIA CROSS

REGINALD LEONARD HAINE. (1st Battalion, Honourable Artillery Company.)

"Reginald Leonard Haine, Second Lieut., Honourable Artillery Company. For most conspicuous bravery and determination when our troops, occupying a pronounced salient, were repeatedly counter-attacked. There was an ever-present danger that, if the enemy attack succeeded, the garrison of the salient would be surrounded. Second Lieut. Haine organised and led with the utmost gallantry six bombing attacks against a strong point which dangerously threatened our communications, capturing the position, together with fifty prisoners and two machine guns. The enemy then counter-attacked with a battalion of the Guard, succeeded in regaining his position, and the situation appeared critical. Second Lieut. Haine at once formed a block in his trench, and for the whole of the following night maintained his position against determined attacks. Reorganising his men on the following morning, he again attacked and captured the strong point, pressing the enemy back for several hundred yards, and thus relieving the situation. Throughout these operations this officer's superb courage, quick decision, and sound judgment were beyond praise, and it was his splendid personal example which inspired his men to continue their efforts during more than thirty hours of continuous fighting." (*London Gazette*, 8th June, 1917.)

ALFRED OLIVER POLLARD (1st Battalion, Honourable Artillery Company.)

"Alfred Oliver Pollard, M.C., Second Lieut., Honourable Artillery Company. For most conspicuous bravery and determination. The troops of various units on the left of this officer's battalion had become disorganised owing to the heavy casualties from shell fire; and a subsequent determined enemy attack with very strong forces caused further confusion and retirement, closely pressed by hostile forces. Second Lieut. Pollard at once realised the seriousness of the situation and dashed up to stop the retirement. With only four men he started a counter-attack with bombs and pressed it home till he had broken the enemy attack and regained all that had been lost and much ground in addition. The enemy retired in disorder, sustaining many casualties. By his force of will, dash and splendid example, coupled with an utter contempt of danger, this officer, who has already won the D.C.M. and M.C., infused courage into every man who saw him." (*London Gazette*, 8th June, 1917.)

THOMAS TANNATT PRYCE. (Grenadier Guards, late 1st Battalion, Honourable Artillery Company.)

"Thomas Tannatt Pryce, Lieut. (Acting Capt.), M.C., 4th Battalion Grenadier Guards. For most conspicuous bravery, devotion to duty and self-sacrifice, when in command of a flank on the left of the Grenadier Guards. Having been ordered to attack a village, he personally led forward his platoons, working from house to house, killing some thirty of the enemy, seven of whom he killed himself. The next day he was occupying a position with some thirty to forty men, the remainder of his company having become casualties. As early as 8.15 a.m. his left flank was surrounded and the enemy was enfilading him. He was attacked no less than four times during the day, and each time beat off the hostile attack, killing many of the enemy. Meanwhile the enemy brought up three field guns to within 300 yards of his line, and were firing over open sights and knocking his trench in. At 6.15 p.m. the enemy had worked to within sixty yards of his trench. He then called on his men, telling them to cheer and charge the enemy and fight to the last. Led by Captain Pryce, they left their trench and drove back the enemy with the bayonet some 100 yards. Half an hour later the enemy had again approached in stronger force. By this time Captain Pryce had only seventeen men left and every round of ammunition had been fired. Determined that there should be no surrender, he once again led his men in a bayonet charge, and was last seen engaged in a fierce hand-to-hand struggle with overwhelming numbers of the enemy. With some forty men he had held back at least one enemy battalion for over ten hours. His company undoubtedly stopped the advance through the British line, and this had great influence on the battle." (*London Gazette*, 23rd May, 1918.)

INDEX

Abern Chase, skirmish at, 55
Aden, 269, 273
Albert (Somme), 271, 273
Alexandra, Queen, 246, 263
Allington, Lord, 82, 95
Amiens, 205, 271, 273
Amoskeag Veterans of Manchester (N.H.), 265
Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts, 41–45, 262–265, 267, 268
Ancre Heights, 273
Andrews, Sir Matthew, 105
Angell, Robert (expelled), 80
Anglesey, Earl of, 82
Anne, Queen, 108, 109, 113, 118
Arleux, 273
Armada, the Spanish, 16, 18, 20, 62, 250
Armourers' Hall, 26
Arras, 269, 272, 273
Artillery Division formed, 181, 182
Artillery, Royal, 181, 208, 220, 254, 255, 263, 271, 272
Arundel, Earl of, 82, 96
Ashurst, Sir William, 106

Balloon ascents from Artillery Ground, 193, 194, 195, 249
Balmes (Baums or Bawms), 80, 97, 111, 112, 113, 138, 141, 169, 170, 171, 172, 196, 197
Bapaume, 271, 273
Bariffe, William, 24, 25, 35, 46
Barnet, battle of, 10
Barwick, Humphrey, 14
Basing House, siege of, 88
Baynard's Castle, 63, 88
Bayonets, first used by Company, 116,
Beaucourt, 269
Beaufort, Duke of, 82
Beaumont Hamel, 269, 270
Berkeley, Lord, 82, 93
Bethlehem (S.A.), capture of, 259
Billers, Sir William, 131
Bingham, Captain John, 24, 28, 29, 30, 215
Blackwell, Captain John, 7, 62, 101, 110, 111, 118, 122, 124, 126, 133, 134, 215
Blakeney, Lord, 154
Bloemfontein, 259
Bond, Captain Martin, 20
Borton, Col. C. J., 251, 252
Boston (Mass.), 41–45, 263–265
Boulogne, 13, 209
Breda, siege of, 51
Bristol, Artillery Garden at, 41
Bristol, Trained Bands embark at, 22
Bristol (R.I.), Train of Artillery, 265
Broodseinde, 273
Brown, Major-Gen. Sir Robert, 77, 79
Buckingham, Duke of, 21, 81, 82
Budworth, Captain C. E., 256, 258
Buffs, The, 159
Bullecourt, 271, 273
Bury St. Edmunds, Artillery Garden at, 41

Cadiz, 21, 44
Calais, 5, 13, 14, 79
Cambrai, 271, 273
Cambridge, Duke of, 211
Camperdown, battle of, 200
Canadian Division, 272
Catherine of Braganza, 191
Cecil, Sir Robert, 21
Charles I, 26, 28, 34, 39, 49, 51, 166, 216, 217, 234
Charles II, 49, 61, 76, 77, 94, 160
Charlton, musketry at, 237
Charter of 1537, 1–7, 15, 41, 217, 221, 256
Chartist Riots, 233, 234
Chester, Artillery Garden at, 41
Childers, Erskine, 260
Chinnerton, Sir Robert, 73
Churchill, John (Duke of Marlborough), 82
City Imperial Volunteers, 257–261
Civil War, 21, 25, 32, 50, 60, 61, 62, 88, 126, 133, 190
Clarendon, Earl of, 58, 59
Clarke, Thomas (A. and H.A.C.), 45
Cleveland Grays, 265
Colchester, Artillery Garden at, 41
Colman, Francis (expelled), 80
Cologne, 269
Colours, Regimental, 75, 98, 158
Colville of Culross, Lord, 245, 265
Consort, the Prince, 226, 232–242, 245, 246, 254, 262
Conway, General, 183
Cork, siege of, 22
Cornwallis, Earl, 152
Cox, Lieut.-Col. Charles, 220, 225, 226
Craven, Lord, 81
Cricket played in Ground, 145–148
Crimean War, 243, 244

Cromwell, Oliver, 44, 52, 60, 61, 74, 77
Cromwell, Richard, 36
Cronje's surrender, 259
Culloden, battle of, 151
Currey, John (expelled), 80
Curtis, Colonel William, 213, 214
Curtis, Sir William, 205

Damascus, 270, 273
Defoe, Daniel, 85
Delafontaine, Major Noah, 128
Denbigh, Earl of, 82, 255, 258, 262–264, 266, 269, 270, 273
Denham, Mr., 186
Denmark, King of, 158
De Vesci, Viscount, 254, 255
De Wet, 259
Diamond Hill, battle of, 260
Dodson, Sir William, 96
Doornkop, action at, 260
Dragoon Guards, Prince of Wales's (3rd), 176
Dragoon Guards, 7th, 220
Drocourt-Quéant, 273
Duels, 183, 184
Dulwich, field day at, 180
Duncan, Nathaniel (A. and H.A.C.), 42, 43

Edward I, 9
Edward II, 8
Edward III, 9, 10
Edward IV, 10
Edward VI, 8, 14, 17
Edward VII (Captain-General and Colonel), 245, 246, 248, 251–253, 255, 262, 263, 266, 267
Effingham, Earl of, 191
Egypt, 269, 270, 273
Elector of Palatine, 49
Elizabeth, Queen, 15, 17, 20, 159, 250
El Mughar, 270, 273
Elton, George, 24, 35
Epéhy, 271, 273
Esdale, Sir John, 167
Essex, Earl of, 22, 50–56

Falkland, Lord, 82, 96
Fenian outrages, 246
Feversham, Earl of, 82, 92
Finchley Common, review on, 150
Finsbury Archers, 86, 87, 135, 190
Fire of London, 85, 88
First Light Infantry Regiment of Providence (R.I.), 264
First Regiment Minute Men of Washington, 265
Fishmongers' Hall, 165
FitzRoy, Lieut.-Col. Henry, 233, 236, 237, 239–241, 245
Fleet, Sir John, 105
Fontenoy, battle of, 150
Foot Guards, 137, 159, 161, 175, 176, 184, 188, 214, 220, 225, 235, 241, 242, 254, 267, 269
Foster, Sergeant Henry, 54–56
Freind, Colonel, 99
Freshfield, Major James W., 226
Fusiliers, Royal, 159

Gavrelle, 269
Gaza, 270, 273
George I, 118, 120, 126, 127, 130, 135, 137
George II (Captain-General), 121, 137, 157
George III, 157, 214
George IV (Captain-General), 157, 181, 194, 203, 211, 214
George V (Captain-General and Colonel), 267, 268
George, Prince of Denmark (Captain-General), 109
Gittins, John, 145
Gloucester, 50, 51, 53–55
Godfrey, Michael, 107
Gordon, Lord George, 175
Gordon Riots, 175–177
Governor's Footguard of Hartford (Conn.), 265
Governor's Footguard of New Haven, 265
Gower, Colonel Robert, 118
Grenades, first use of, 100
Guild of Saint George, 1–7, 12–15, 17, 22, 23, 79, 221, 274
Guns presented by City of London, 180, 181
Guns presented by Sir William Curtis, 205

Haine, Lieut. R. L., 𝔙.ℭ., M.C., 269
Hammersley, Sir Hugh, 30, 33
Hampstead, musketry at, 212
Harrington, Earl of, 204, 205
Harvard College, 43
Hawley, Lord, 82
Headley, Lord, 249
Hedges, Colonel Sidney M. (A. and H.A.C.), 268
Henry II, 7
Henry III, 8
Henry VII, 10
Henry VIII, 1, 8, 11, 12, 166, 215–217, 220, 221, 236
Highmore, Anthony, 7, 62, 101, 142, 209, 242
Hindenburg Line, 273
Hogarth, drawings by, 125, 126, 129
Honourable, prefix of, 24, 98
Hooge, 268
Hornsey Wood, range at, 244
Hudson, Philip, 23, 26
Hunt, Captain (killed at Newbury), 58

Indian Mutiny, 244
Ipswich, Artillery Garden at, 41
Ireland, service in, 22
Ireton, Sir John, 63, 74
Ironmongers' Company, 29

Jacobe of Greenwich, 79
Jacobsdal, action at, 259
James I, 35, 49, 166, 215, 217
James, Duke of York (afterwards James II) (Captain-General), 49, 78, 93–96, 98–100
Jerusalem, 270, 273
Johannesburg, 259
Jordan, 270, 273
Juries, exemption from service on, 6, 220, 221

Keayne, Robert (A. and H.A.C.), 42, 43, 267
Kelk, Captain James, 100
Kennett, Brackley, 168, 175
Ket the tanner, 17
Kirke, Colonel Peircy, 83
Knevett, Anthony, 2, 13

Labalmondière, Captain J. A., 254, 256
Lansdowne, Lord, 258
Lant, Roll of Thomas, 17, 24
Leathersellers' Company, 59, 62, 151
Le Cateau, 269
Leicester, Earl of, 18, 19
Le Mesurier, Colonel Paul, 209, 210, 211
Lewes, battle of, 8
Lindley, relief of, 259
London Light Horse Volunteers, 183
London Military Foot Association, 165, 175–177, 180
Loos, 272
Louisburg, capture of, 150
Loyal Blue Fusiliers, 151
Lord Mayor of London, 8, 11, 21, 22, 28, 32, 33, 35, 47, 53, 60, 63, 73, 78, 79, 81, 86, 88, 92–96, 99, 100, 105, 106, 112, 116, 118, 148, 149, 152, 158, 160–163, 165, 167–169, 195, 198–200, 211, 220, 239, 240, 259
Loyd-Lindsay, Lieut.-Col. R. J., V.C., M.P., 249
Lumley, Lord, 82, 95
Lunardi, Vincent, 193–196, 249

Manby, Colonel William, 59, 61
Manchester, Earl of, 82
Marching through the City under arms, 158, 160
Marines, Royal, 159, 184
"Mars His Triumph," 46
Mary I, Queen, 14, 15
Mary II, Queen, 104
Massachusetts, 41, 42, 262–265, 267
Master Gunner of England, 15, 29, 33, 61
McMicking, Major G., 256, 258
Megiddo, 270, 273
Melbourne, Lord, 220
Merchant Taylors' Company, 32, 42, 46, 73, 96
Messines, 271
Mewtes, Sir Peter, 2, 13, 14, 79
Milton, John, 45
Minorca, loss of, 154
Monk, General George (Duke of Albemarle), 63, 76, 81, 96
Monmouth, Duke of, 81, 82, 101
Mons, 272
Montfort, Simon de, 8
Moore, Sir John, 206
Morres, Sir Christopher, 2, 12
Morris, Lieut. Richard (A. and H.A.C.), 45
Mortemain, Statute of, 4
Mosse, Captain George (killed at Newbury), 58
Mulgrave, Earl of, 82, 93

Namur, siege of, 107
Napoleon Buonaparte, 204, 209
Narborough, Sir John, 95
Naseby, battle of, 51
Naval Artillery Volunteers, Royal, 250
Naval Division, Royal, 268
Nead, William, 39
Nelson, Lord, 203, 211, 225
New Model Army, 52
Newbury, battle of, 51–53, 55–59
Newington Butts, 112, 181, 185
Newport, Lord, 82
Newport (R.I.) Artillery Company, 265
Niccols, Richard, 24, 27, 28
Nile, battle of the, 203
Norris, John, 18
Northumberland, Duke of, 162
Nottingham, Artillery Garden at, 41

Office of Ordnance, 103, 202, 212
Old Guard of New York, 264, 265
Old Saint Paul's, 73
Ormonde, Duke of, 73
Ossory, Earl of, 82, 92
Oxford, Earl of, 82, 96
Oxford, siege of, 51

Paardeburg, 259
Palestine, 270, 273
Panton, Captain Edward, 26, 28
Papadopoli, 271
Passchendaele, 271, 272, 273
Paston, Lord, 82, 95
Peake, Sir Robert, 88
Pepys, Samuel, 81, 91
Perkins, William (A. and H.A.C.), 45
Petowe, Henry, 30, 31, 32
Peyton, Sir R., 86
Piave, 271, 273
Pilckem, 273

INDEX

Pilgrimage of Grace, 12
Plague, the Great, 85
Player, Sir Thomas, 78
Ploegsteerte, 270
Plumstead, musketry at, 215
Poelcappelle, 273
Poictiers, battle of, 9
Pollard, Lieut. A. O., V.C., M.C., D.C.M., 269
Polygon Wood, 273
Portland, Duke of, 249, 252
Pretender, the Young, 149, 150
Pretoria, 259, 260
Prince of Orange, 51
Prinsloo's surrender, 259
Puckle's Machine, 136

Raikes, Colonel G. A., 87, 248, 253
Rebellion of 1745, 150, 151
Restoration, the, 76, 77, 88
Reutel, 271
Revolution of 1688, 101, 198
Reynolds, John, 33
Rhée, Isle of, 21
Rhodes, Cecil, 81
Richmond Blues, 265
Rifle Brigade, 206, 207
River Fencibles, 205
Roberts, Lord, 259
Robinson, Sir John, 79, 83, 85, 91
Rochester, Earl of, 83
Roosevelt, President, 265
Roses, Wars of the, 10, 11
Rules and Orders, 63–72, 123, 163, 249
Rupert, Prince, 52, 54, 59, 81

Sambre, 273
Sandwich, Earl of, 81
Scarpe, 273
Seaford, training at, 244
Sedgwick, Captain Robert (A. and H.A.C.), 42, 44
Selle, 271, 273
Senussi raids, 269
Seventh Division, 270
Sharon, 270, 273
Sheppard, Colonel, 63
Shrewsbury, Earl of, 82, 92
Sidney, Sir Philip, 17
Silk, Captain, 119
Sinai, 270
Skippon, Major-Gen. Philip, 51, 52, 60, 62
Smith, Sir George, 83
Somme, 270, 271, 273
South African War, 256–262
Southwark, Artillery Ground at, 41
Spencer, William (A. and H.A.C.), 42, 44
St. Paul's Cathedral, 198, 200, 203
St. Quentin Canal, 273
St. Sepulchre, 88
St. Vincent, battle of, 200
State Fencibles of Philadelphia, 265
Stow, John, 17, 18, 23, 24, 26, 32
Stow-on-the-Wold, skirmish at, 54
Suez Canal, 269
Sussex, Duke of (Captain-General and Colonel), 214, 218–220, 223, 224, 226, 228–231, 234

Tassel (or Teazel) Ground, 15, 61
Tel-el-Kebir, 255
Thanet, Earl of, 82, 95
Tichbourne, Sir Robert, 62, 74
Tilbury Camp, 18, 20
Titles of Artillery Company, 24
Toxophilite Society, 190, 191
Trafalgar, battle of, 211
Treffry, Colonel E., 268
Tucker, Colonel (killed at Newbury), 56
Turner, Major Sir Barnard, 177, 179, 185, 192–194
Turnham Green, 52, 53

Underhill, Captain John (A. and H.A.C.), 44

Vauban, 82
Vellum Book, 23, 73, 75, 82, 85, 91, 103, 109, 121, 219, 265
Victoria, Queen, 223, 224, 238, 243, 245, 246, 254, 263
Vittorio Veneto, 273

Walker, Captain Richard (A. and H.A.C.), 45
Waller, Sir William, 50
Walpole, Sir Robert, 142
Walton-on-the-Naze, 250
Wardell, Ensign, 142
Wellington, Duke of, 225, 234–236
West Point, 264
Westall, Lieut.-Col. Samuel, 131
Westminster, Artillery Ground at, 41
Whitmore, Sir George, 81, 112, 117
Wilkes, John, 161, 162
William II, 7
William III, Captain-General, 78, 101–104, 107, 108
William IV, Captain-General, 218, 219, 222, 223, 241, 245
Williamson, Lieut.-Gen. Adam, 148
Winchester, Statute of, 9, 10
Winthrop, Governor, 42
Woolwich, 14, 208, 215, 252, 263
Wolseley, Lord, 258
Worcester, Marquis of, 83, 93
Wray, Brig.-Gen. J. C., 256
Wren, Sir Christopher, 82

Yarmouth, Artillery Ground at, 41
Yeomanry, 256, 261, 269
York, Duke of, 202
Ypres, 268, 271–273

THE ESCAPING CLUB

By A. J. EVANS, M.C.

With 8 Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.* net

SEVENTH EDITION

"If there is ever another war and Mr. A. J. Evans, the well-known Hampshire, Kent, and Test Match cricketer, takes part in it, there will probably be strict instructions on the enemy side that in no circumstances is he to be taken prisoner. For he must be an awful nuisance to look after. Indeed, on reading his book, one feels almost sorry for the Germans and Turks who tried to hold him. No more absorbing story of personal experience in war time has ever been told than this cheery narrative."—*Daily Chronicle.*

"Every bit as exciting as a piece of fiction by Stevenson or Sir Rider Haggard." *Daily Telegraph.*

"Material enough for a dozen thrilling stories . . . an absorbing and enthralling narrative."—*Morning Post.*

"Short of a daily newspaper serial, I do not know an author who can provide so much incident to the line as Major Evans."—*Westminster Gazette.*

"It is highly probable that Major Evans' book will be as successful as "The Road to En-dor." The book is one which may be commended as a true story, as full of dramatic moments as Mr. Buchan's 'Greenmantle.'"—J. C. Squire in *The Observer.*

"Mr. Evans' book will take rank among the classics of 'escaping literature'—which is certainly among the most readable literature produced by the war. His prose is curt and vigorous—just the kind of prose that a county cricketer ought to write, but hardly ever does. He does not try to 'write'; he just talks, and talks admirably."—*Outlook.*

AN ESCAPER'S LOG

By DUNCAN GRINNELL-MILNE

M.C., D.F.C., late Captain R.A.F.

With 8 Illustrations and 3 Sketch Maps

Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.* net

THIRD EDITION

"A tale with a thrill in every page."—*Morning Post.*

"It contains enough excitement in every chapter to fill half a dozen adventure books."—*Outlook.*

"Full of the real stuff of adventure."—*Saturday Review.*

"By virtue of its modesty, its humour, and its thrills, this volume merits a place alongside 'The Escaping Club' and 'The Road to En-dor.'"—*Evening Standard.*

"A wonderful record. I have seldom read a more exciting narrative."—*Sphere.*

"This excellently written and most interesting volume."—*Sunday Times.*

"The author is blessed with a sense of humour, a lucid style, and a modesty quite overwhelming considering the doughty deeds he performed."—*Daily Chronicle.*

"Without the slightest attempt at window-dressing, the 'Log' contains a thrill in every page."—*Daily Sketch.*

"This splendid matter keeps us thrilled and the author tells the story in lively, vivid style."—*Star.*

"Here is a true story which fairly beggars all the imaginary exploits of Jack Sheppard and Baron Trenck."—*Referee.*

JOHN LANE THE BODLEY HEAD LTD., VIGO STREET, W. 1

THE ROAD TO EN-DOR

By E. H. JONES, Lt. I.A.R.O.

With Illustrations by C. W. Hill, Lt. R.A.F.

Thirteenth Edition. 8*s*. 6*d*. net

" It is easily the most surprising story of the escape of prisoners of war which has yet appeared. . . . No more effective exposure of the methods of the medium has ever been written. . . . This book is indeed an invaluable reduction to absurdity of claims of the spiritualist coterie."—*Morning Post.*

" Astounding. . . . of great value."—*Times.*

" This is one of the most realistic, grimmest, and at the same time most entertaining, books ever given to the public. . . . 'The Road to En-dor' is a book with a thrill on every page, is full of genuine adventure. . . . Everybody should read it."—*Daily Telegraph.*

" The reader who begins this book after dinner will probably be found at one o'clock in the morning still reading, with eyes goggling and mouth open, besides his cold grate."—*Spectator.*

" It is the most extraordinary war-tale which has come my way. The author is a sound craftsman with a considerable sense of style and construction. His record of adventures is really astounding."—*Punch.*

MY ESCAPE FROM DONINGTON HALL

By Kapitän-Leutnant GUNTHER PLÜSCHOW

Translated by Pauline de Chary

Illustrated. Crown 8vo. 6*s*. net

The record of the escape of a German officer from internment in England, his adventures in London in 1915, with a price on his head, and his eventual escape to his own country ; together with an account of the siege of Kiao-Chau in the early days of the war.

" A capital tale."—*Times Literary Supplement.*

" It is an amazing story."—*Outlook*

THE WHITE DEVIL OF THE BLACK SEA

By LEWIS STANTON PALEN

Collaborator with Dr. Ferdinand Ossendowski in " Beasts, Men and Gods," etc.

Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 7*s*. 6*d*. net

This amusing, almost incredible true story of adventure and hair-breadth escape in Revolutionary Russia was obtained directly from the "White Devil" himself, a Russian aristocrat who can fairly be described as a modern composite of Robin Hood, Don Quixote and Captain Kidd, and who is certainly one of the dramatic figures of our generation, and perhaps the only man who beat the Bolsheviks and made them admit it.

JOHN LANE THE BODLEY HEAD LTD., VIGO STREET, W. 1

KW-442-635